



**В.Л. КАУШАНСКАЯ**

**СБОРНИК  
УПРАЖНЕНИЙ  
ПО ГРАММАТИКЕ  
АНГЛИЙСКОГО ЯЗЫКА**



# Part I. ACCIDENTE

## THE NOUN

### Exercise 1. State the morphological composition of the following nouns.

Snow, sandstone, impossibility, widower, opinion, exclamation, passer-by, misunderstanding, inactivity, snowball, kingdom, anticyclone, mother-of-pearl, immobility, might, warmth, succession, ex-president, nurse, misdeed, wisdom, blackbird, attention, policeman, merry-go-round, girlhood, usefulness, fortune, friendship, statesman, brother-in-law, population, fellow-boarder, smelling-salt.

### Exercise 2. Point out the nouns and define the class each belongs to.

1. Don't forget, Pettinger, Europe is still the heart of the world, and Germany the heart of Europe. (*Heym*) 2. Pursuing his inquiries, Clennam found that the Gowan family were a very distant ramification of the Barnacles... (*Dickens*) 3. His face was sick with pain and rage. (*Maltz*) 4. He drank coffee, letting the warmth go through his cold, tired body. (*This is America*) 5. But there is only one place I met with the brotherhood of man, and it was in the Communist Party. (*This is America*) 6. The mysteries of storm and the rain and tide were revealed. (*Galsworthy*) 7. Having set the tea, she stood by the table and said slowly: "Tea's ready, Father. I'm going to London." (*Galsworthy*) 8. By this time, quite a small crowd had collected, and people were asking each other what was the matter. (*Jerome i. Jerome*) 9. There were several small losses: a spoon used for the baby's feeding, a pair of scissors. (*Lessing*) 10. He was professor of physics. (*London*) 11. A band of dark clouds lay across the sky, and underneath it was the last pale brilliance of the evening. (*Murdoch*) 12. "I have some luggage," he said, "at the Brumlehurst Station," and he asked her how he could have it. (*Wells*) 13. In the kitchen Bowen read the telegram aloud. (*Amis*) 14. The crowd laughed and moved, pushing every way and everybody. (*This is America*) 15. De Witt fished through his pockets, found his eyeglasses, carefully slipped them out of their case... (*Heylri*) 16. A stone caught her heel. (*Maltz*) 17. George suggested meat and fruit pies, cold meat, tomatoes, fruit and green stuff. (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 18. The silvercoloured carpet felt wonderfully soft beneath his feet, the furniture was of a golden wood. (*Galsworthy*) 19. The major seemed to be looking out at the sky... (*Heytn*) 20. Winslow spoke with his usual caustic courtesy. (*Snow*) 21. The bourgeoisie is cowardly. (*London*) 22. The moon was shining through the tree stems when they sax again side by side on the log seat. (*Galsworthy*) 23. "It's not Sunday, tomorrow," said Karg. (*Heytn*) 24. He looked down at his audience. (*Heyrri*) 25. His hair was grey and he was short and fat. (*Hemingway*)

### Exercise 3. Give the plural oi the following nouns.

Face, portfolio, swine, house, tomato, hearth, mother-in-law, basis, clergyman, ox, cry, key, fox, downfall, looker-on, rock, bush, enemy, leaf, roof, genius, hero, bunch, sheep, ship, criterion, youth, journey, penknife, man-of-war, loss, datum, goose, deer, pie, Englishwoman, wolf, mouse, formula, bath, volcano, possibility, forget-me-not, foot, handkerchief, thief, crisis, stepdaughter, birth, echo, finger-tip, court martial, joy, mischief-maker, extremity, spy, lie.

### Exercise 4. Use the appropriate form of the verb.

1. "There — money in my pocket," 1 said to the porter, (is, are) (*Hemingway*) 2. I know my hair \_\_\_ beautiful, everybody says so. (is, are) (*Hardy*) 3. The works \_\_\_ his country, his home, his reason for being, (was, were) (*Heym*) 4. These white swine — not live, (does, do) (*Sabatini*) 5. Means \_\_\_ easily found, (was, were) (*Thackeray*) 6....this watch \_\_\_ a special favourite with Mr. Pickwick, having been carried about... for a greater number of years than we feel called upon to state, at present, (was, were) (*Dickens*) 7. "Good," I said. "No one shall tell me again that fish — no sense with them." (has, have) (*Llewellyn*) 8. The deer \_\_\_ ravaging the man's fields, (was, were) (*Twain*) 9. Money \_\_\_ so scarce that it could fairly be said not to exist at all. (was, were) (*Dreiser*) 10. I was here before the gates

\_\_ opened, but I was afraid to come straight to you. (was, were) (*Dickens*) 11. The papers \_\_ dull, the news \_\_ local and stale, and the war news \_\_ all old. (was, were) (*Hemingway*) 12. At Capracotta, he had told me, there \_\_ trout in the stream below the town, (was, were) (*Hemingway*) 13. The sugartongs \_\_ too wide for one of her hands, and she had to use both in wielding them, (was, were) (*Ch. Bronte*) 14. Her hair \_\_ loose and half-falling, and she wore a nurse's dress, (was, were) (*Hemingway*) 15. And the baggage \_\_ apparatus and appliances, (contain, contains) (*Wells*) 16. The china \_\_ good, of a delicate pattern, (was, were) (*Dreiser*) 17. The nurse's wages.: \_\_ good... (was, were) (*Collins*)

### Exercise 5. Explain the use of the genitive case.

1. For four months, since in the canteen she saw Jon's tired smile, he had been one long thought in her mind. (*Galsworthy*) 2. Agnes was at her wit's-end. (*Lindsay*) 3. Since his illness, however, he had reluctantly abandoned this attempt to get twentyfour hours' work out of each day. (*Murdoch*) 4...the Radicals' real supporters were the urban classes. (*Galsworthy*) 5. To Elizabeth it seemed that the lines with which fear had falsely aged his face were smoothed away, and it was a boy's face which watched her with a boy's enthusiasm. (*Greene*) 6. For his honor's sake Torn has got to commit suicide. (*Saroyan*) 7. They were to leave the house without an instant's delay and go at once to the river's edge and go aboard a steamer that would be waiting there for them. (*Buck*) 8. And he lifted his strange lowering eyes to Derek's. (*Galsworthy*) 9. I was encouraged when, after Roger had proposed the guest of honor's health, Lufkin got up to reply. (*Snow*) 10. "Where are the children?" "I sent them to mother's." (*Cronin*) 11. Philip heard a man's voice talking quickly, but soothingly, over the phone. (*J. Shaw*) 12. Presently Rex was on his two miles' walk to Offendene. (*Eliot*) 13. That early morning he had already done a good two hours' work. (*Galsworthy*) 14. Bowen sat on the veranda of Buckmaster's house. (*Amis*) 15. Crime is the product of a country's social order. (*Cronin*) 16. I spotted the bride's father's uncle's silk hat on the seat of a straight chair across the room. (*Salinger*) 17. I spent Christmas at my aunt Emily's. (*Braine*) 18. We took some bread and cheese with us and got some goat's milk up there on the pasture. (*Voynich*) 19. He was still thinking of next morning's papers. (*Snow*) 20. Why, for God's sake, why must we go through all this hell? (*Saroyan*) 21. A man stepped out from a tobacconist's and waved to them, and the car slid to the kerb and stopped. (*Greene*) 22. A woman's love is not worth anything until it has been cleaned of all romanticism. (*Murdoch*) 23. Her skin was as dry as a child's with fever. (*Greene*)

### Exercise 6. Put the noun in the genitive case. Explain the use of the genitive case.

1. Well, I'd rather be married to a saint that never saw my good looks than to a sinner who saw every other \_\_. (woman) (*Buck*) 2. The breakfast table at \_\_ was usually a very pleasant one, and was always presided over by Bella. (Mr. Boffin) (*Dickens*) 3. "I think \_\_ friendships are much deeper than \_\_," Mrs. Thompson said, (men, women) (*Braine*) 4. That night he had chosen a basement bar a \_\_ throw from Scotland Yard... (stone) (*Hansford Johnson*) 5. As he passed through the \_\_ room he saw an evening paper spread out conspicuously on the desk of the \_\_ nephew. (clerks, director) (*Greene*) 6. But I suppose that need not prevent us from quarrelling to our \_\_ content in future, (heart) (*Voynich*) 7. With one cold glance could she send me back into childhood with all a lonely \_\_ terrors and shames, (child) (*Lindsay*) 8. I will even go farther, if you like, and admit, for \_\_ sake and for \_\_ sake, that the identity of Lady Glyde, as a living person, is a proved fact to Miss Halcombe "and yourself, (courtesy, argument) (*Collins*) 9. He stopped to dinner that evening and much to \_\_ satisfaction made a favorable impression on her father. (Ruth) (*London*) 10. He said to her: "Look at my brother \_\_ property." (James) (*Galsworthy*) 11. He had not been at \_\_ for nearly two years. (Timothy) (*Galsworthy*) 12. Benson... was listening among the \_\_ representatives cocking his head on one side, (workers) (*Lindsay*) 13. He had never thought that a mere \_\_ hand could be sweetly soft, (woman) (*London*) 14. But he was daunted the next moment by his own and \_\_ insignificance. (Milly) (*Greene*) 15. But by that time the bride was near the end of the first \_\_ journey towards Florence, (day) (*Dickens*) 16...he too

wished she had remained at home, as did most of the \_\_\_ families, (congressmen) (*Stone*) 17. You need a good \_\_\_ sleep, (night) (*Shaw*) 18. Haven't you noticed that other \_\_\_ bread-and-butter is always much nicer than your own? Robert is like that. He always prefers \_\_\_ fireside, (people, somebody else) (*Maugham*) 19. The \_\_\_ wives were more expensively dressed than the Civil \_\_\_, and in general more spectacular, (politicians, servants) (*Snow*) 20. One evening, on the way to the \_\_\_, I saw Irwing sitting on the steps of his house, (grocer) (*Saroyan*) 21. I cannot be blamed for all my \_\_\_ doings, (kin) (*Lindsay*)

**Exercise 7. Translate into English, using a noun in the genitive case where possible.**

1. Давид провел две недели в Ярмуте у мистера Пеготти. 2. Уезжая в Ярмут, мальчик ничего не знал о предполагаемом (intended) браке своей матери. 3. После путешествия, которое длилось несколько часов, Пеготти с Давидом прибыли в Ярмут. 4. Приближаясь к дому мистера Пеготти, Давид увидел детскую фигурку, стоящую на пороге. 5. Дядя Хэма и Эмили усыновил их, когда они были детьми. 6. Пеготти с гордостью говорила о доброте своего брата. 7. Двухнедельное пребывание в Ярмуте доставило Давиду большое удовольствие. 8. В присутствии мужа миссис Копперфильд боялась приласкать своего сына. 9. После минутной нерешительности Давид подошел к миссис Копперфильд и поцеловал ее. 10. После смерти жены мистер Мердстон послал Давида в Лондон, где мальчик должен был работать в торговом доме (warehouse) Мердстона и Гринби.

**THE USE OF ARTICLES**

**Exercise 1. Change the nouns into the plural. Use some (any) where necessary and make the other necessary changes.**

1. A kitten likes to play. 2. A violet does not smell so sweet as a lily of the valley. 3. Have you bought an apple for your child? 4. Here is a letter to be posted. 5. He ate a spoonful of broth and a sandwich. 6. I must buy a postcard. 7. She did not bring me a magazine, she brought me a newspaper. 8. She made a step towards him. 9. In the bedroom a candle was burning. 10. Did she ever lend you a book?

**Exercise 2. Insert articles where 'necessary. (Articles with class nouns.)**

1. Not \_\_\_ word was spoken in \_\_\_ parlour. (*Caldwell*) 2. \_\_\_ room itself was filling up, so was \_\_\_ staircase. (*Snow*) 3. I think that \_\_\_ man's life is worth saving, whoever it belongs to. (*Shaw*) 4. Though \_\_\_ earth was cold and wet, \_\_\_ sky was clear and \_\_\_ sun rose bright and beautiful. (*Dickens*) 5. He made them provide not one car, but half \_\_\_ dozen. (*Snow*) 6.. \_\_\_ compass was invented in ancient China. 7. Not \_\_\_ word was spoken, not \_\_\_ sound was made. (*Dickens*) 8. \_\_\_ sky outside \_\_\_ window was already dark, \_\_\_ secretaries had gone home, all was quiet. (*Snow*) 9. Edward remained \_\_\_ week at \_\_\_ cottage. (*Austen*) 10. I tell you, he's as brave as \_\_\_ man can reasonably be. (*Snow*) 11. After that they would meet, perhaps, two or three times \_\_\_ year. (*Galsworthy*) 12. Dinny looked up at \_\_\_ house; and suddenly saw \_\_\_ face in \_\_\_ window of \_\_\_ dining-room. (*Galsworthy*) 13. You know I never cared for \_\_\_ drama. 14. "It is not \_\_\_ large house," I said. "We don't want \_\_\_ large house." (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 15. He looks older than he is, as \_\_\_ dark men often do. (*Dickens*) 16. Roger looked at him and, without \_\_\_. word, took out his wallet and gave him \_\_\_ ten-shilling note. (*Snow*) 17. As \_\_\_ man sows, so shall he reap. 18. This morning \_\_\_ tobacconist was at his door. (*Bennett*) 19. It was Sunday afternoon, and \_\_\_ sun, which had been shining now for several hours, was beginning to warm \_\_\_ earth. (*Murdoch*) 20. I have \_\_\_ long story to tell you. Come and sit down on \_\_\_ sofa and let us have \_\_\_ comfortable chat. (*Marryat*) 21. \_\_\_ arm in \_\_\_ arm, they walked toward home. (*Shaw*) 22. It was \_\_\_ cottage built like \_\_\_ mansion, having \_\_\_ central hall with \_\_\_ wooden gallery running round it, and \_\_\_ rooms no bigger than \_\_\_ closets. (*Hardy*) 23. And what \_\_\_ beautiful moth there is over there on-----wall. (*Murdoch*) 24. She had \_\_\_ key of her own. (*Conan Doyle*) 25. He was \_\_\_ short, plump man with \_\_\_ very white face and \_\_\_ very white hands. It was rumoured in London that he powdered them like \_\_\_ woman. (*Greene*) 26. \_\_\_ old couldn't

help \_\_ young... (*Galsworthy*) 27. To him she would always be \_\_ loveliest woman in \_\_ world. (*Maugham*) 28. \_\_ strongest have their hours of depression. (*Dreiser*) 29. Her aunt, in \_\_ straw hat so broad that it covered her to \_\_ very edges of her shoulders, was standing below with two gardeners behind her. (*Galsworthy*) 30. I am afraid I addressed \_\_ wrong person. (*Collins*) 31. They must have had very fair notions of \_\_ artistic and \_\_ beautiful. (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 32. \_\_ rich think they can buy anything. (*Snow*) 33. \_\_ room has three doors; one on \_\_ same side as \_\_ fireplace, near — corner, leading to \_\_ best bedroom. (*Shaw*) 34. My thousand \_\_ year is not merely. \_\_. matter of dirty banknotes and jaundiced guineas... but, it may be, health to \_\_ drooping, strength to \_\_ weak, consolation to \_\_ sad. (*Ch. Bronte*) 35. Thank you, Stephen: I knew you would give me \_\_ right advice. (*Shaw*) 36. Sometimes... visitors rang \_\_ wrong bell. (*Bennett*) 37. My family came from hereabouts some generations back. I just wanted to have — look at \_\_ place, and ask you \_\_ question or two. (*Galsworthy*) 38. \_\_ woman will only be "the equal of \_\_ man when she earns her living in \_\_ same way that he does. (*Maugham*) 39. He arrived half \_\_ hour before dinner time, and went up to \_\_ schoolroom at \_\_ top of \_\_ house, to see \_\_ children. (*Galsworthy*) 40. You will see him \_\_ steady character yet. I am sure of it. There is something in. \_\_ very expression of his face that tells me so. (*Marryat*) 41. Far away in \_\_ little street there is \_\_ poor house. One of \_\_ windows is open and through it I can see \_\_ woman seated at \_\_ table. She is \_\_ seamstress. (*Wilde*) 42. \_ man who entered was short and broad. He had black hair, and was wearing \_\_ grey flannel trousers with \_\_ red woollen shirt, open at \_\_ neck, whose collar he carried outside \_\_ lapels of his dark tweed jacket. (*Clark*) 43. Believe me, when \_\_ woman really makes up her mind to marry \_\_ man nothing on God's earth can save him. (*Maugham*) 44. I stopped,, still uncertain of myself and whether I was saying. \_\_ right thing. (*Du Maurier*) 45. Then it was night and he was awake, standing in \_\_ street, looking up at \_\_ dark windows of \_\_ place where he lived. \_\_ front door was locked and there was no one in \_\_ house. (*Saroyan*) 46. I believe I can tell \_\_ very moment I began to love him. (*Galsworthy*) 47. We are told that \_\_ heart of \_\_ man is deceitful above all \_\_ things, and desperately wicked. (*Shaw*) 48. "I must do it," said Adam; "it's \_\_ right thing." (*Eliot*) 49. Mr. Boythorn lived in \_\_ pretty house with \_\_ lawn in front, \_\_ bright flower garden at \_\_ side and \_\_ kitchen-garden in \_\_ rear, enclosed with \_\_ wall. \_\_ house was \_\_ real old house. (*Dickens*) 50 \_\_ bartender was \_\_ pale little man in \_\_ vest and apron, with \_\_ pale, hairy arms and \_\_ long, nervous nose. (*. Shaw*) 51. \_\_ face to \_\_.face, he was as warm and easy-natured as he had ever been. (*Snow*) 52. I had not yet learnt how contradictory is human nature; I did not know how much pose there is in \_\_ sincere, how much baseness in \_ noble, or how much goodness in \_\_ reprobate. 10 (*Maugham*) 53. During \_\_ country house parties one day is very like another. \_\_ men put on \_\_ same kind of variegated tie, eat \_\_ same breakfast, tap \_\_ same barometer, smoke \_\_ same pipes and kill \_\_ same birds. (*Galsworthy*) 54. Almost at. very moment when r,he had returned Aileen had appeared. (*Dreiser*) 55. \_\_ old man quitted \_\_ house secretly at \_\_ same hour as before. (*Dickens*) 56. We are told that \_\_ wicked shall be punished. (*Shaw*) 57. \_\_ arm in \_\_ arm we walked on, sometimes stumbling over \_\_ hump of earth or catching our feet in \_\_ rabbit-holes. (*Hansford Johnson*) 58. Clare was \_\_ most vivid member of \_\_ family. She had dark fine shingled hair and \_\_ pale expressive face, of which \_\_ lips were slightly brightened. \_\_ eyes were brown, with \_\_ straight and eager glance, \_\_ brow low and very white. Her expression was old for \_\_ girl of twenty, being calm and yet adventurous. (*Galsworthy*) 59. When I was \_\_ child my mother used to make \_\_ cakes and send me out with them as \_\_ presents to \_\_ neighbours. And. \_\_ neighbours would give us \_\_ presents too, and not only at Christmas time. (*Murdoch*) 60. I wrote to \_\_ Managing Editor that this was \_\_ wrong moment to change their correspondent. (*Greene*)

### Exercise 3. Translate into English.

1. Приходил почтальон? 2. Это был высокий белый дом; он был окружен большим садом. 3. Дом построен два года назад. 4. Мое любимое дерево — дуб. 5.

Возле дома рос старый дуб. 6. Мы опоздали на поезд, и нам пришлось долго ждать на вокзале. 7. Попугай может подражать человеческой речи. 8. Мы вошли в маленькую комнату, в которой стоял стол, несколько стульев и кресло. 9. Я надеюсь, что завтра вы дадите мне ответ. 10. Телескоп нужен астрономам, а микроскоп — биологам. 11. Серебряная луна светила на небе. 12. Скрипка — струнный инструмент, флейта — духовой. 13. Шекспир и Сервантес умерли в одном и том же году. 14. Мы получили телеграмму в самый день нашего отъезда. 15. Вы мне дали не тот адрес. 16. Некоторые из гостей ушли рано. 17. Они живут на одной улице. 18. Он постучался не в ту дверь.

**Exercise 4. Insert articles where necessary. (Articles with nouns modified by attributes in post-position.)**

1. \_\_\_ man of whom I speak is \_\_\_ low pantomime actor. 2. Excuse me now, I have to see \_\_\_ man who's in trouble... (*Galsworthy*) 3 \_\_\_ people familiar with these moors often miss their road on such evenings. (*E. Bronte*) 4. He listened attentively to a great many stories she told him about \_\_\_ amiable and handsome daughter of hers, who was married to \_\_\_ amiable and handsome man and lived in the country. (*Dickens*) 5. I always think there's something rather cold and cheerless about \_\_\_ house that lacks \_\_\_ woman's touch. (*Maugham*) 6. He stood up and looked at \_\_\_ house where he had been born, grown up, and played, as if asking for \_\_\_ answer. (*Galsworthy*) 7. Her throat aches because of \_\_\_. tears locked in it. (*Lessing*) 8. I am persuaded that this will be \_\_\_ shock of which he will feel \_\_\_ effects all his life- (*Eliot*) 9. There were half \_\_\_ dozen pocket robberies \_\_\_ day in \_\_\_ trams of Brussels. (*Bennett*) 10. There we were in \_\_\_ country none of us knew anything about, amongst Indians and \_\_\_ people that were only half civilised. (*Galsworthy*) 11. At last they reached — door at which \_\_\_ servant knocked cautiously. (*Murdoch*) 12. We passed—set of chambers where I had worked as \_\_\_ young man. (*Snow*) 13. It is in \_\_\_ hour of trial that \_\_\_ man finds his true profession. (*Shaw*) 14. We dropped into \_\_\_ very pleasant nook under — great elm tree, to \_\_\_ spreading roots of which we fastened \_\_\_ boat. (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 15. It chanced that when this lonely young lady was about nineteen, she, being \_\_\_ fearless horsewoman, was riding, with only — young lad... in one of \_\_\_ woods near her uncle's house... and, in trotting along, her horse stumbled over \_\_\_ root of — felled tree. She slipped to \_\_\_ ground, not seriously hurt, and was assisted home by — gentleman who came in view at \_\_\_ moment of her mishap. It turned out that this gentleman... was on \_\_\_ visit at \_\_\_ house of \_\_\_ neighbouring landowner. (*Hardy*) 16. He was staring at \_\_\_ waves like \_\_\_ man cornered by \_\_\_ strange animal. (*Murdoch*) 17. You don't know \_ man you are married to. (*Shaw*) 18. He spoke with a very slow, distinct voice... and always looked over — shoulder of \_\_\_ person to whom he was talking. (*Wilde*) 19. There had been at — dining table \_\_\_ middle-aged man with \_\_\_ dark eye and — sunburnt face, who had attracted Martin's attention. (*Dickens*) 20. And he had tea sitting on \_\_\_ edge of \_\_\_.chair that did not look too firm, all gilt and spindly. (*Galsworthy*) 21. They walked \_\_\_ mile or more along \_\_\_ handsome street which \_\_\_ colonel said was called Broadway... Turning, at length, into one of — numerous streets which branched from this main thoroughfare, they stopped before \_\_\_ rather meanlooking house. (*Dickens*) 22. Colonel Mordaunt does not look like — man who would do \_\_\_ mean or dishonourable thing. (*Marryaf*) 23. She is \_\_\_ elderly matron who has worked hard and got nothing by it. (*Shaw*) 24. He was, in fact, \_\_\_ younger edition of his father. (*Galsworthy*) 25. As Dick took up his pipe, \_\_\_ man who had passed into \_\_\_ smoking car with him put down his newspaper and looked at him. For \_\_\_ moment Dick was puzzled. It was \_\_\_ face he knew, but he could not put \_\_\_ name to it. Where had he seen \_\_\_ man? (*Winter*) 26. During \_\_\_ twenty minutes Michael took to read \_\_\_ doem, there was not \_\_\_ sound, except from the sheets being turned. (*Galsworthy*) 27. Rosa then noticed with surprise that she was in \_\_\_ room in which \_\_\_ party had been held. (*Murdoch*)

**Exercise 5. Translate into English.**

1. Сегодня я, наконец, достал книгу, которую я уже давно хочу прочесть. 2.



Вот человек, с которым вы хотите поговорить. 3. Я не люблю людей, которые ко всем придираются. 4. Я знаю девушку, которая удивительно хорошо декламирует стихи. Вчера она прочла стихотворение, которое мне очень понравилось. 5. Улицы, по которым он проходил, были узкие и грязные. 6. Старик постучал в дверь небольшого домика, окна которого были ярко освещены. 7. Когда Ольга вернулась домой, она увидела, что ее сестра разговаривает с человеком, которого она никогда прежде не видела. 8. Я нашла гостиницу, где мы жили несколько лет назад. 9. Письмо, которое она получила утром, расстроило ее. 10. Утром она получила письмо, которое ее расстроило. 11. Молодая девушка долго думала об удивительном открытии, которое она сделала. 12. На дороге они увидели большой камень, которого там раньше не было. 13. Я знаю адрес человека, которому вы хотите написать. 14. Дверь открыла женщина; в ней он сразу узнал оригинал портрета, который ему показал его приятель. 15. Она поехала в город, где жила ее дочь.

**Exercise 6. (A) Insert articles or some where necessary. (Articles with nouns- of material.)**

1. We sipped \_\_ tea so weak that it tasted like \_\_ metal against the teeth. (*Snow*) 2. You will be wishing to have \_\_ tea after your journey, I'm thinking. (*Shaw*) 3. George said that we must take \_\_ rug, \_\_ lamp, \_\_ soap, \_\_ brush and \_\_ comb, \_\_ tooth-brush, \_\_ tooth-powder and \_\_ couple of big towels for bathing. (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 4. \_\_ children of his age seldom have natural pleasure in \_\_ soap and water. (*E. Bronte*) 5. He bought \_\_ cold beef, and \_\_ ham, and \_\_ French bread and butter, and came back with his pockets pretty heavily laden. (*Dickens*) 6. There were two bottles of \_\_ wine, \_\_ plate of \_\_ oranges... with \_\_ powdered sugar. (*Dickens*) 7. Here, have \_\_ champagne, I quite forgot to offer you any, or would you rather have \_\_ tea? (*Murdoch*) 8. She made \_\_ coffee. (*Murdoch*) 9. \_\_ coffee without \_\_ bread could never honestly serve as supper. (*Saroyan*) 10 \_\_ rest of us had finished eating, but Cave had cut himself another slice of \_\_ cheese. (*Snow*) 11. Mrs. Leek... frankly gave way to \_\_ soft tears while eating \_\_ bread-and-butter, (*Bennett*) 12. You've caught cold: I saw you shivering, and you must have \_\_ gruel to drive it out. (*E. Bronte*) 13. She did not answer, but her face was hard and pale as \_\_ stone. (*Galsworthy*)

**(b) Insert articles where necessary. (Articles with nouns of material.)**

1. She hurried in again and found \_\_ water almost boiled away. (*Lindsay*) 2.... \_\_ blood is thicker than \_\_ water. (*Galsworthy*) 3. She went about looking into \_\_ dining room, which... had been transformed into \_\_ kind of jewel box glowing with \_\_ flowers, \_\_ silver, \_\_ gold, \_\_ tinted glass. (*Dreiser*) 4. Rosa tasted \_\_ wine. It was harsh but refreshing. (*Murdoch*) 5. You drank \_\_ wine with breakfast, dinner and supper, and fifty people always drank it with you. (*J. Shaw*) 6. She looked with \_\_ eager, hungry eyes at \_\_ bread and \_\_ meat and \_\_ beer that \_\_ landlady brought her. (*Eliot*) 7....Willows replied that he had made friends with \_\_ sculptor in Pisa... and had commissioned this artist to make \_\_ bust of himself in \_\_ marble. (*Hardy*) 8. \_\_ coffee was better than Dinny had hoped and very hot. (*Galsworthy*) 9. Without giving her \_\_ opportunity to protest any more, he went to \_\_ telephone and ordered \_\_ coffee and several sandwiches. (*Caldwell*) 10. She wears \_\_ little sailor hat of \_\_ black straw that has long been exposed to \_\_ dust and soot of London. (*Shaw*) 11. The mother was yellow in colour and her skin resembled \_\_ leather. (*Murdoch*) 12. The maid brought in \_\_ pears, \_\_ cold chicken, \_\_ tongue, \_\_ cheese. (*Snow*) 13. My heart... felt as heavy as \_\_ lead. (*Du Maurier*) 14. Every meal was \_\_ bread and \_\_ coffee and \_\_ cigarettes, and now -he had no more bread. (*Saroyan*)

**Exercise 7. Translate into English.**

1. Портфель мал, но кожа хорошая. 2. Я люблю зеленый бархат. 3. Он не любил кофе. 4. Ему не понравился кофе. 5. Чай слишком крепкий; я не люблю крепкий чай. 6. Не забудьте дать кошке молока, у нее теперь котят! (*Чехов*) 7. Я ходил по аллее и думал о вишневом варенье. (*Чехов*)

### Exercise 8. Insert articles where necessary. (Articles with abstract nouns.)

1. We both appreciate \_\_\_ simplicity. (*Du Maurier*) 2. In less than \_\_\_ week Cowperwood knew \_\_\_ financial condition of Messrs. Waterman as well as they did, better, to \_\_\_ dollar. (*Dreiser*) 3. It is such \_\_\_ weary, weary work. (*Dickens*) 4. He [White] had \_\_\_ comfortable feeling of working alone in \_\_\_ large empty building, \_\_\_ feeling of \_\_\_ peace and \_\_\_ complete privacy. (*Wilson*) 5. I've reason to believe she [Fleur] has never properly got over \_\_\_ feeling she used to have. (*Galsworthy*) 6. I had seldom heard my friend speak with such \_\_\_ intensity of \_\_\_ feeling. (*Conan Doyle*) 7. His footsteps were now heard striking upon \_\_\_ stony road at \_\_\_ distance of about twenty yards. (*Hardy*) 8. We had \_\_\_ wonderful weather. (*Du Maurier*) 9. You must learn to face \_\_\_ life seriously, Stephen. (*Shaw*) 10. However, \_\_\_ life of such striking monotony does not seem to depress him. (*Durrell*) 11. May you be happy in — life you have chosen! (*Dickens*) 12. I love to think of \_\_\_ time that must come some day when \_\_\_ man will have conquered — nature, and \_\_\_ toilworn human race enter upon \_\_\_ era of — peace. (*Leacock*) 13. She was panting now, and in her face was \_\_\_ terror which was inexplicable. (*Maugham*) 14. His round blue eyes behind. \_\_\_ spectacles were ghastly with \_\_\_ terror. (*Maugham*) 15. I think in some curious way \_\_\_ horror which she felt for him was \_\_\_ transference of \_\_\_ horror which she felt for herself because he so strangely troubled her. (*Maugham*) 16. She was brilliantly familiar with- \_\_\_ literature, \_\_\_ tongues, \_\_\_ art, \_\_\_ history, \_\_\_ physics, \_\_\_ metaphysics, \_\_\_ philosophy, and — politics (in which I include \_\_\_ modern politics). (*Bennett*) 17. It was \_\_\_ cold, bleak, biting weather. (*Dickens*) 18. \_\_\_ weather was sunny and dry. (*Hardy*) 19.. \_\_\_ modern science is \_\_\_ wonderful thing. (*Shaw*) 20. He was \_\_\_ steady, uninspired researcher in \_\_\_ properties of \_\_\_ liquid state of \_\_\_ matter. (*Wilson*) 21. Their blue eyes became filled with \_\_\_ gaiety and \_\_\_ ferocity and \_\_\_ joy, and their mouths with \_\_\_ laughter. (*Murdoch*) 22. Jon laughed, and \_\_\_ sound of \_\_\_ laugh was hard. (*Galsworthy*) 23. Then she gave \_\_\_ crisp, ironic, almost cheerful laugh... (*Snow*) 24. On that fine day \_\_\_ poverty of \_\_\_ district she was entering seemed to her country-nurtured eyes intensely cheerless, (*Galsworthy*) 25. \_\_\_ reason is \_\_\_ greatest discovery ever made by \_\_\_ man. Yet it is \_\_\_ most disregarded and least used. (*Jones*) 26....what I offer is \_\_\_ security and \_\_\_ respect. That doesn't sound very exciting, but perhaps it's better than \_\_\_ passion. (*Greene*) 27. And \_\_\_ passion that held Strickland was \_\_\_ passion to create \_\_\_ beauty. (*Maugham*) 28. She looked \_\_\_ incarnation of \_\_\_ supreme loveliness, \_\_\_ loveliness which was always revealing itself anew. (*Bennett*) 29. She (Aileen) knew nothing of \_\_\_ literature except \_\_\_ certain authors who to \_\_\_ truly cultured might seem banal. (*Dreiser*) 30. \_\_\_ expression on her face — hungry and hard and feverish — had the most peculiar effect upon Soames. (*Galsworthy*) 31. She listened with, \_\_\_ expression impatient, strained and intent. (*Snow*) 32. At that age I had \_\_\_ very faulty view of \_\_\_ geography. (*Miller*) 33. \_\_\_ poor fellow's face looked haggard with \_\_\_ want: he had \_\_\_ aspect of \_\_\_ man who had not known what it was to live in \_\_\_ comfort... for \_\_\_ weeks, perhaps \_\_\_ months past. (*Ch. Bronte*) 34. He longed for \_\_\_ comfort of his sister's society. (*Marryaf*) 35. He pines for \_\_\_ kindness. (*E. Bronte*) 36. She sighed for \_\_\_ air, \_\_\_ liberty, \_\_\_ quiet of \_\_\_ country. (*Austen*) 37. Miss Cherrell, I am going to do all I can to remove \_\_\_ unpleasant impression you have of me. I am your very humble servant, and I hope some day to have \_\_\_ chance to be something else to you. (*Galsworthy*) 38. Then all four sat down and began to inspect Hunter and Calvin with \_\_\_ air of suspicion and curiosity. (*Murdoch*) 39. He spoke with \_\_\_ air of someone who has got over with an unpleasant duty and can now get on to \_\_\_ brighter matters. (*Murdoch*) 40. How quietly you live, John. I love \_\_\_. silence of this room and garden. (*Murdoch*) 41. At other times he would come and sit for long periods in her room in \_\_\_ silence. (*Murdoch*) 42. What — noble thing \_\_\_ courage is. (*Reade*) 43. Nothing gave him [little Hans] greater pleasure than to listen to all \_\_\_ wonderful things \_\_\_ Miller used to say about \_\_\_ unselfishness of \_\_\_ true friendship. (*Wilde*) 44. \_\_\_ friendship which he had imposed from \_\_\_ beginning he now emphasised more than ever. (*Greene*) 45. And when multitudes of men are hurt to \_\_\_ death in wars I am driven to \_\_\_ grief which

borders on \_\_ insanity. (*Saroyan*) 46. She could not only sing like \_\_ lark... but she had such \_\_ kindly, smiling, tender, gentle, generous heart of her own as won \_\_ love of everybody who came near her. (*Thackeray*) 47. What \_\_ delightful weather we are having! (*Wilde*) 48. Pray, don't talk to me about \_\_ weather, Mr. Worthing. Whenever \_\_ people talk to me about \_\_ weather, I always feel quite certain that they mean something else. (*Wilde*) 49. Such \_\_ weather makes everything and everybody disgusting. (*Austen*) 50. When he let her go, she sank breathless into \_\_ chair, gazing at him with \_\_ expression of such \_\_ terror that he put his hands over his face. (*Galsworthy*) 51. And so, concerned in talk that touched not on \_\_ feelings within them, they reached Mount Street. (*Galsworthy*) 52. Owen saw \_\_ figure of Edward at \_\_ distance of two or three hundred yards. (*Hardy*) 53. Mrs. Maylie took up her abode with her son and daughter-in-law to enjoy during \_\_ tranquil remainder of her days \_\_, greatest felicity that \_\_ age and worth can know, \_\_ contemplation of \_\_ happiness of those on whom \_\_ warmest affections and tenderest cares... have been unceasingly bestowed. (*Dickens*) 54. \_\_ art is — manifestation of \_\_ emotion, and \_\_ emotion speaks \_\_ language that all may understand. (*Maugham*) 55. Ada sat at \_\_ piano, Richard stood beside her. She touched \_\_ notes so softly, and sang so low, that \_\_ wind, sighing away in \_\_ distant hills, was as audible as \_\_ music. (*Dickens*) 56. Mr. Bob Sawyer adjusted his skates with \_\_ dexterity which to Mr. Winkle was perfectly marvellous. (*Dickens*) 57. He had not been stationary half \_\_ minute, when he heard his own name pronounced by \_\_ voice which he at once recognized as Mr. Tupman's, and looking upwards, he beheld \_\_ sight which filled him with \_\_ surprise and \_\_ pleasure. (*Dickens*) 58. She sat by \_\_ window reading. From her position she could see up \_\_ lane for \_\_ distance of at least \_\_ hundred yards. (*Hardy*) 59. I can see \_\_ beauty and \_\_ peace of this home; I think I have never been more at \_\_ rest in my life than at this moment. (*Shaw*) 60. Beside his bed, for \_\_ first time during \_\_ period of nearly twenty years, he fell down on his knees in \_\_ passionate outburst of \_\_ feeling. (*Hardy*) 61. It was \_\_ new fear, different from that which she had once confided in her own flat, yet grown from \_\_ same root. (*Snow*) 62. \_\_ empty windows of \_\_ ruins were filled with \_\_ life of their own. (*Heym*) 63. Cowperwood awakened to \_\_ sense of \_\_ joy in \_\_ life such as he fancied he had never experienced before. (*Dreiser*) 64. Mr. Pickwick stood in \_\_ principal street of this illustrious town, and gazed with \_\_ air of \_\_ curiosity not unmixed with \_\_ interest, on \_\_ objects around him. (*Dickens*)

### Exercise 9. Translate into English.

1. Декабристы погибли в борьбе за свободу народа. 2. Все народы земли хотят мира. 3. Мы никогда не забудем героизм тех, кто боролся против фашизма. 4. Я очень ценю в людях скромность и простоту. 5. Природа играла большую роль в творчестве романтиков. 6. Музыкант должен знать историю оперы. 7. С ней он мог говорить о литературе, об искусстве, о чем угодно, мог жаловаться ей на жизнь, на людей. (*Чехов*) 8. Я хочу быть артисткой, я хочу славы, успехов, свободы. (*Чехов*) 9. Оставим пока геометрию. Обратимся к науке, которую вы, как чиновник почтового ведомства, вероятно, любите. География — наука почтальонов. (*Чехов*) 10. Зачем я стереометрию учил, ежели ее в программе нет? (*Чехов*) 11. Я с детства люблю музыку. 12. Он изучает английскую историю. 13. Он изучает историю Англии. 14. На расстоянии 20—30 шагов мы увидели странную фигуру. 15. Если вы плохо себя чувствуете, не выходите в такую погоду. 16. Мой брат очень любит архитектуру и мечтает стать архитектором. 17. Меня интересуется история развития английского романа.

### Exercise 10. insert articles where necessary. (Articles with names of persons.)

1. Margaret was talking to \_\_ Osbaldistons. (*Snow*) 2. In \_\_ dim light streaming down \_\_ stairs from behind her, he scarcely recognised \_\_ Lily he had known. (*Lindsay*) 3. \_\_ barbaric Bertie got no hint whatever that he was barbaric. (*Bennett*) 4. \_\_ father and \_\_ daughter appeared at last. (*Wells*) 5. Gradman is here, darling, and \_\_ mother, and \_\_ Aunt

Winifred, and Kit and Michael. Is there anyone you would like to see? (*Galsworthy*) 6. Louis seemed... rather \_\_\_ grave, still, retiring man, but \_\_\_ Caroline of this evening, which was not \_\_\_ Caroline of every day, thawed his reserve. (*Ch. Bronte*) 7. She watched \_\_\_ advent of \_\_\_ Tasburghs almost maliciously. Hubert and \_\_\_ young Tasburgh at once discovered mutual service in Mesopotamia. (*Galsworthy*) 8. My visit was specially made to \_\_\_ good Mrs. Ames. (*Conan Doyle*) 9. \_\_\_ professor Beans is \_\_\_ man to whom you'll be responsible for your undergraduate teaching. (*Wilson*) 10. This Pat wasn't at all like \_\_\_ Pat of his memories. When she smiled he saw \_\_\_ Pat he had known, \_\_\_ Pat smiling at him froirt \_\_\_ worn photo that still lay in — pocketbook against his heart. But watching her ...he grew aware that \_\_\_ family was divided in its attitude. Alice... and Mrs. Baxter... were partisans of — new Pat. He still felt that he couldn't bring \_\_\_ two Pats together; but he didn't hold that against \_\_\_ Pat of \_\_\_ present. (*Lindsay*) 11. — flustered Clarice stood beside me. (*Du Maurier*) 12. If you are — Napoleon, you will play \_\_\_ game of \_\_\_ power; if you're \_\_\_ Leonardo, you'll play for — knowledge; \_\_\_ stakes hardly matter. (*Wallace*) 13. At that time I had \_\_\_ greatest admiration for — Impressionists. I longed to possess \_\_\_ Sisley and \_\_\_ Degas, and I worshipped Manet. (*Maugham*) 14. I overtook \_\_\_ pretty little Hetty Sorrel as I was coming to my den. (*Eliot*) 15. He cared to say no more; he had thrown quite dust enough into \_\_\_ honest Adam's eyes. (*Eliot*) 16. This was \_\_\_ famous Frank A. Cowperwood whom he had read about... (*Dreiser*) 17. \_\_\_ certain Joseph Zimmerman suggested that he undertake operating in street railway shares for him. (*Dreiser*) 18. Elsie said she would ring up \_\_\_ Doctor Worple. (*Bennett*) 19. \_\_\_ poor Edward muttered something, but what it was nobody knew. (*Austen*) 20. He was gayer than I had thought... youthful and ardent in \_\_\_ hundred happy ways, not.— Maxim I had first met. (*Du Maurier*) 21. I have \_\_\_ address of — man in London to whom \_\_\_ Professor writes. (*Conan Doyle*) 22. It is needless to multiply \_\_\_ instances of \_\_\_ high and lofty station, and \_\_\_ „, vast importance of \_\_\_ Chuzzlewits at different periods. (*Dickens*) 23. It has been said that there is no instance, in modern times, of \_\_\_ Chuzzlewit having been found on terms of \_\_\_ intimacy with \_\_\_ great. (*Dickens*) 24. \_\_\_ gentle, tender-hearted Amelia Sedley was \_\_\_ only person to whom she [Becky] could attach herself in \_\_\_ least. (*Thackeray*) 25. Yet \_\_\_ room itself was bright and elegant; on one wall was — fine Sisley, of poplars and sunny water, on another \_\_\_ still life by Nicholas de Stael, pastel fruit in \_\_\_ white dish. (*Snow*) 26. \_\_\_ captain Cuttle lived on \_\_\_ brink of — little canal. (*Dickens*) 27. Mr. Tupman, by \_\_\_ nod, intimated that his question applied to \_\_\_ disappointed Rachel. (*Dickens*) 28. I am \_\_\_ Mr. Martin for whom you were to inquire. (*Dickens*) 29. I'm to meet \_\_\_ Professor Hallorsen on Monday. (*Galsworthy*) 30. If you're going West may I come with you? I want to see \_\_\_ Aunt Emily and \_\_\_ Uncle Lawrence. (*Galsworthy*) 31. During — reading of \_\_\_ paragraph, and for \_\_\_ minute or two afterwards, he sat with his gaze fixed on — modest Mr. Toots, like — man entranced. (*Dickens*) 32. I had no doubt that you were — Miss Wilfer I have often heard named. (*Dickens*) 33. "Oh, good evening," he exclaimed, removing his cap and bowing. "How are you?" while his mind was registering that this truly was \_\_\_ beautiful, \_\_\_ exquisite Sondra whom months before he had met at his uncle's. (*Dreiser*) 34. "I don't care about \_\_\_ Captain Dobbin's complexion," she said... "I shall always like him, I know." "There is not \_\_\_ finer fellow in \_\_\_ service," Osborne said, "nor — better officer, though he is not \_\_\_ Adonis, certainly." (*Thackeray*) 35. \_\_\_ difference between \_\_\_ pair was that while \_\_\_ father was violent and \_\_\_ bully, — son had thrice \_\_\_ nerve and courage of — parent, and could not merely make \_\_\_ attack, but resist it; and finding that — moment was not come when \_\_\_ contest between him and his father was to be decided, he took his dinner with \_\_\_ perfect coolness and appetite before \_\_\_ engagement began. \_\_\_ old Osborne, on \_\_\_ contrary, was nervous and drank much. (*Thackeray*) 36. \_\_\_ medical practitioner quite, refused to accept \_\_\_ unhappy Selina's theory. (*Hardy*)

### Exercise 11. Translate into English.

1. Он решил сходить к Туркиным. (*Чехов*) 2. Мой муж ревнив, это Отелло. (*Чехов*) 3. И мать и дочь приняли приглашение. 4. Подождите немножко, отец сейчас

придет. 5. Мы сегодня пойдем в театр. Идет «Дядя Ваня». 6. Вы —Коля, тот самый Коля, неуклюжий, застенчивый... Коля? (*Куприн*)

**Exercise 12. Insert articles where necessary. (Articles with geographical names.)**

1. After \_\_ tour in \_\_ Austrian Alps they had gone to \_\_ *Hotel Splendide* at \_\_ Montreux, in order to enjoy for \_\_ day or two \_\_ charms of \_\_ Lake of \_\_ Geneva. (*Bennett*) 2. Dusk was already falling on \_\_ noble curve of \_\_ Thames. (*Bennett*) 3. I hear he's off to \_\_ Central Africa. (*Bennett*) 4. In *Ivanhoe* Walter Scott describes \_\_ England of \_\_ Middle Ages. 5. \_\_ Capetown is in \_\_ South Africa. 6. In \_\_ heart of \_\_ Central Asia lies \_\_ Khorasm, \_\_ small fertile area in \_\_ sea of \_\_ sand. 7. \_\_ prospect ends... in little hills that come nearly to \_\_ sea; rudiments, these, of \_\_ Atlas Mountains. (*Shaw*) 8. "We've been touring \_\_ world... We tried \_\_ South America...We lasted three days in \_\_ Australia..." "Have you ever been to. \_\_ States?" (*Amis*) 9. Michael looked quizzically at his parent. Did he quite understand \_\_ England of to-day? (*Galsworthy*)

**Exercise 13. Translate into English.**

1. Кордильеры находятся в Северной Америке. 2. Берега Рейна очень живописны. 3. Эльбрус — очень красивая гора. 4. «Пиковая дама» была написана Чайковским во Флоренции в 1890 г. 5. Средиземное море находится между Европой, Азией и Африкой. 6. Венеция расположена на берегу Адриатического моря. 7. Ливингстон погиб в Центральной Африке.

**Exercise 14, Insert articles where necessary. (Articles with names of hotels, streets, ships, and newspapers.)**

1. She nodded \_\_ command to \_\_ footman, and they drove off westward, down \_\_ Strand, and so into \_\_ little side street by \_\_ Charing Cross. (*Bennett*) 2. I am going to Folkestone to-day, and shall stay at \_\_ *Metropole*. (*Bennett*) 3. They were excited because they had been dining with \_\_ editor of \_\_ *Times*, and had been given \_\_ glimpse of next day's paper. (*Snow*) 4. She sat in her superb private drawing room at \_\_ *Hotel Cecil*. 5. \_\_ boys loved him because he told them that \_\_ Navy had borrowed him from \_\_ U. S. Army just in time to blow taps on \_\_ *Maine* as she was sinking, and he remained long after everyone including — captain had abandoned \_\_ ship. (*Wilson*) 6. He began to walk very rapidly up towards \_\_ Trafalgar Square. (*Greene*) 7. He went out and ate \_\_ ices at \_\_ pastry-cook's shop in \_\_ Charing Cross; tried \_\_ new coat in \_\_ Pall Mall; and called for \_\_ Captain Cannon, played eleven games at \_\_ billiards with \_\_ captain, and returned to \_\_ Russell Square. (*Thackeray*) 8. \_\_ street was empty, unlighted save by \_\_ reflection from \_\_ Grandlieu Street behind them... (*Faulkner*) 9. In 1905 \_\_ revolt broke out on \_\_ *Potemkin*, one of \_\_ battleships of \_\_ Black Sea Fleet. 10. Yet, in — bright drawing room in \_\_ Lord North Street, all he was thinking of... was what \_\_ *Telegraph*, \_\_ *Guardian*, the popular press, would say next day. (*Snow*)

**Exercise 15. Insert articles where necessary. (Articles with nouns modified by proper nouns.)**

1. I often go to \_\_ Pushkin Theatre. 2. I am very fond of — Pushkin's short tragedies. 3. \_\_ Tretyakov gallery was founded nearly \_\_ century ago by Pavel Tretyakov. \_\_ Tretyakov's devotion to \_\_ art and his indefatigable efforts had \_\_ magnificent results and furthered \_\_ development of \_\_ Russian painting. 4. I am \_\_ medical student and have held \_\_ post of house surgeon at one of \_\_ London hospitals for some time. (*Marryat*) 5. \_\_ Fox apartment had \_\_ spacious old-fashioned feeling. 6. Towards \_\_ end of \_\_ year 1913 several young students living in Moscow founded \_\_ small group known as \_\_ Students' Drama Studio. It was from that group that \_\_ Vakhtangov Theatre sprang. Vakhtangov was \_\_ tireless innovator. Some of Vakhtangov's pupils became \_\_ capable producers. 7. \_\_ sets of furniture were imitations of one of \_\_ Louis periods. (*Dreiser*) 8. \_\_ Pulkovo Observatory is over \_\_ hundred years old. 9. \_\_ chin of \_\_ founder of \_\_ Forsyte clan was settled comfortably between \_\_ widely separated points of. \_\_ old-fashioned collar. (*Galsworthy*) 10. He had known all \_\_ pretty Montjoy sisters scattered over — Society, but

of them all Diana was \_\_\_ youngest, \_\_\_ prettiest, most tasteful and wittiest... (*Galsworthy*)

**Exercise 16. Insert articles where necessary. (Articles with set expressions.)**

1. I trust you to tell me \_\_\_ bare truth, whatever it is. (*Snow*) 2. The maid, looking to right and left, spoke in \_\_\_ low and hurried voice. (*Galsworthy*) 3. On his trip round \_\_\_ world with Fleur he had often put his nose out and watched the dancing on \_\_\_ deck. (*Galsworthy*) 4. He decided that he would not at \_\_\_ present explain to her who he was. (*Bennett*) 5. I saw \_\_\_ good deal of him during \_\_\_ war. (*Snow*) 6. He has taken his death very much to \_\_\_ heart indeed. (*Collins*) 7. What did her education and her accomplishments amount to? She could keep \_\_\_ house. (*Bennett*) 8. AH seemed perfectly at their ease, by no means in \_\_\_ hurry. (*Dickens*) 9. Somebody important must have been arriving from Europe by \_\_\_ air... (*Greene*) 10. Am I dealing, young people, with \_\_\_ case of \_\_\_ love at \_\_\_ first sight? (*Galsworthy*) 11. We've had some tea already on \_\_\_ board \_\_\_ yacht. (*Shaw*) 12. Rosa was well aware that she had never taken \_\_\_ trouble to get to know Annette. (*Murdoch*) 13. You will go to \_\_\_ sea and forget ail about me in \_\_\_ month. (*Galsworthy*) 14. He was about to start on \_\_\_ long journey, \_\_\_ difficult one, by \_\_\_ sea, and no soul would know where he was gone. (*Eliot*) 15. It is \_\_\_ pleasure to see you. (*Galsworthy*) 16. He held \_\_\_ very guarded conversation with her on his way home, for fear that she would take \_\_\_ additional offence. Argument was out of \_\_\_ question. (*Dreiser*) 17. On \_\_\_ other hand, if he was beaten he took it with complete good humour. (*Maugham*) 18. He is beginning to lose \_\_\_ heart, they say. (*Reade*) 19. She burned like \_\_\_ fire from \_\_\_ head to \_\_\_ foot. (*Hardy*) 20. I got into conversation with him by \_\_\_ chance at \_\_\_ concert. (*Shaw*) 21. She's taken quite \_\_\_ fancy to you, Ridgeon. (*Shaw*) 22. \_\_\_ furniture was all sent round by \_\_\_ water. (*Austen*) 23. I returned at once, and found Ada sitting at \_\_\_ work by \_\_\_ fireside. (*Dickens*) 24. He played \_\_\_ flute. (*Miller*) 25. Somewhere \_\_\_ great many men were singing. (*Greene*) 26. He was chronically in \_\_\_ debt... (*Snow*) 27. \_\_\_ woman I fixed my eye on was \_\_\_ woman who kept \_\_\_ house for me at my cottage. (*Collins*) 28. It is \_\_\_ pity to worry her if she has \_\_\_ talent for \_\_\_ uneasiness. (*Galsworthy*) 29. He has given \_\_\_ permission to go up and see her there. (*Priestley*) 30. Behind \_\_\_ house was \_\_\_ large garden, and in summer, \_\_\_ pupils almost lived out of \_\_\_ doors. (*Ch. Bronte*) 31. \_\_\_ rain had stopped, and we went on \_\_\_ foot to \_\_\_ Ebury Street. (*Snow*) 32. They started at \_\_\_ dawn, and \_\_\_ boy I sent with them didn't come back till next day. (*Maugham*) 33. On being informed... that her departure would be delayed... she had flown into \_\_\_ violent passion. (*Collins*) 34. All of \_\_\_ sudden, his face had become stony. (*Snow*) 35. Dear, dear! It seems only \_\_\_ other day since I took you down to school at Slough! (*Galsworthy*) 36. Mr. Byron Waller could play \_\_\_ violin. (*Lee*)

**Exercise 17. Translate into English.**

1. Он всегда говорит очень тихо. 2. На днях я случайно встретила Нину. 3. Если вы ей так ответите, она придет в ярость. 4. По правде говоря, я так и не поняла, почему она обиделась. 5. Она читает с утра до ночи. 6. Я люблю путешествовать морем. 7. Вы по ошибке принесли не тот журнал. 8. Мы всегда заставляли его за работой. 9. Приходите ко мне завтра.—Об этом и речи быть не может, я очень занята. 10. Он даже не потрудился встретить нас на вокзале. 11. Жаль, что вы не можете пойти с нами в театр. 12. Мы уже' можем читать Диккенса и Теккерера в оригинале. 13. Мой брат очень хорошо играет на скрипке.

**Exercise 18. Insert articles where necessary. (Articles with predicative nouns and nouns in apposition.)**

1. Ostrovsky commenced \_\_\_ clerk in \_\_\_ Moscow Commercial Court. 2. Selina, \_\_\_ daughter of \_\_\_ Paddocks, had been surprised that afternoon by receiving \_\_\_ letter from her once intended husband. (*Hardy*) 3. My father became \_\_\_ rector of Burnmore when I was nine. (*Wells*) 4. Cashel was to go to sea, so that if his affairs became desperate, he could at least turn \_\_\_ pirate. (*Shaw*) 5. He was \_\_\_ particular friend of Sir John's (*Austen*). 6. You are not \_\_\_ person you claim to be. (*Dickens*) 7. His money was \_\_\_ money I brought him as my marriage portion. (*Shaw*) 8. That meeting had occurred at \_\_\_ house of \_\_\_ high official of \_\_\_

British Museum, \_\_\_ scholar with whom Arthur was on friendly terms. (*Bennett*) 9. Mrs. Patterson, \_\_\_ lymphatic woman, was holding her son Jim by \_\_\_ hand. (*Lindsay*) 10. \_\_\_ trained diplomat and statesman as he was, his- stern aristocratic face was upside down with \_\_\_ fury. (*Leacock*) 11. I am not \_\_\_ good fisherman myself. (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 12. Ever since then I haven't been able to suppress \_\_\_ gnawing thoughts in my mind. I'm not strong enough to suppress them. I'm too weak. I'm not \_\_\_ man enough. (*Caldwell*) 13. You were \_\_\_ dear little girl; I see it now, looking back. But not \_\_\_ little girl I had in my mind. (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 14. He looked thin, and yellow as \_\_\_ guinea, and he had turned \_\_\_ miser. (*Reade*) 15. You should have been \_\_\_ woman enough to control yourself. (*Hardy*) 16. Martha, who was \_\_\_ poor apprentice at \_\_\_ milliner's, then told them what kind of \_\_\_ work she had to do. (*Dickens*) 17. What \_\_\_ charming house you have, Lady Chiltern! (*Wilde*) 18. I am Anthony Anderron, \_\_\_ man you want. (*Shaw*) 19. Only, his forehead and mouth betray an extraordinary steadfastness; and his eyes are \_\_\_ eyes of \_\_\_ fanatic. (*Shaw*) 20. He had just been appointed \_\_\_ Lord Justice of appeal. (*Snow*) 21. His clothes are not \_\_\_ clothes, nor his anxious wife \_\_\_ wife of \_\_\_ prosperous man. (*Shaw*) 22.-1 was \_\_\_ fool enough to ask her to live here still, and direct \_\_\_ affairs of \_\_\_ house for me. (*E. Bronte*)

### Exercise 19. Translate into English.

1. В 1937 г. археологическая экспедиция отправилась в Хорезм. Экспедицию возглавлял профессор С. Толстов, известный специалист по истории народов Средней Азии. (*Советская литература*) 2. Качалов, изумительный актер, которого оплакивали миллионы любителей театра, умер за месяц до 50-летнего юбилея Художественного театра. 3. Озеро Байкал, сердце Сибири, как его называют, замечательно редкой красотой берегов и удивительным цветом воды. Академик Берг, выдающийся советский географ, называет Байкал чудом природы. 4. Беранже, знаменитый французский поэт, родился в 1780 г. В детстве он жил с дедом, бедным парижским портным. Когда началась революция, его отправили в провинцию к тетке, содержательнице гостиницы.

### Exercise 20. Insert articles where necessary.

1. \_\_\_ love seemed now so little \_\_\_ thing, seemed to have lost \_\_\_ warmth and \_\_\_ power... (*Galsworthy*) 2. It was too great \_\_\_ P shock to be borne with \_\_\_ calmness, and she immediately left \_\_\_ room. (*Austen*) 3. It's as good \_\_\_ place, I suppose, as you could find. (*Galsworthy*) 4. Mrs. Todgers was \_\_\_ lady, \_\_\_ rather bony and hard-featured lady. (*Dickens*) 5. It was quite \_\_\_ way down to \_\_\_ main road and then we walked along \_\_\_ main road about \_\_\_ mile and \_\_\_ half. (*Hemingway*) 6. But he,., gave her so long and so peculiar \_\_\_ stare from \_\_\_ corner where he was having tea, that she knew he had not forgiven her. (*Galsworthy*) 7. She seemed to take rather \_\_\_ fancy to me. (*Galsworthy*)

### Exercise 21. Translate into English.

1. Такую интересную книгу приятно перечитать. 2. Это слишком длинный роман, чтобы его можно было прочесть в два дня. 3. Это такая же светлая каюта, как та. 4. Я не могу ответить на такой странный вопрос. 5. Это довольно интересная статья. 6. Как вы могли упустить такой редкий случай? 7. Какое нелепое возражение! 8. Оба письма были отправлены утром. 9. Все бумаги подписаны. 10. Это слишком сложная проблема, чтобы ее можно было разрешить в такое короткое время.

### Exercise 22. Translate into Russian. (Ways of expressing the meaning of the English articles in Russian.)

1. I am very fond of Helen, there is a great charm about the girl. 2. The man was slowly walking along the street. 3. A man was slowly walking along the street 4. We've bought the butter in this shop. 5. We've bought some butter. 6. A girl showed me the way to the station. 7. I shouldn't like to live here; there is something gloomy about the house. 8. You had better not attempt to be a governess, as the duties of the position would be too severe for your constitution. (*Ch. Bronte*)

### Exercise 23. Translate into English.

1. Я не знала, что собака в комнате. 2. Я не знала, что в комнате есть собака. 3. Принесите муку. 4. Принесите муки. 5. Девушка подошла к окну. 6. К окну подошла девушка.

### Exercise 24. Insert articles where necessary. (Special cases.)

(A) *Day, night, morning, evening.*

1. Outside it was \_\_\_ night. (*Murdoch*) 2. It was \_\_\_ warm summer night. (*Snow*) 3. \_\_\_ night outside seemed very quiet. (*Greene*) 4. It was \_\_\_ foggy evening in November. (*Murdoch*) 5. During \_\_\_ evening we played innumerable games of piquet... (*Maugham*) 6. It was \_\_\_ evening, and he was walking across the school grounds on his way home. (*Saroyan*) 7. He wondered what hour it was. \_\_\_ sun seemed to indicate \_\_\_ late morning... (*Greene*) 8. I think it's going to be \_\_\_ fine morning, after all. (*Shaw*) 9. \_\_\_ morning was cold and sharp and sunny. (*Greene*) 10. It is \_\_\_ early morning. (*Shaw*) 11. We are going to have \_\_\_ ideal night. (*Shaw*) 12. \_\_\_ night being sharp and frosty, we trembled from \_\_\_ head to \_\_\_ foot. (*Dickens*) 13. It was early in \_\_\_ afternoon. (*Murdoch*) 14. \_\_\_ night was \_\_\_ windy one, with broken clouds drifting swiftly across \_\_\_ face of \_\_\_ three-quarter moon. (*Conan Doyle*) 15. \_\_\_ night came and he sent his sadness into his sleep. (*Saroyan*) 16. I was up at six in \_\_\_ morning. (*Shaw*) 17. She has had \_\_\_ bad night, probably \_\_\_ rather delirious night. (*Shaw*) 18. \_\_\_ machines at \_\_\_ factory were in perpetual motion \_\_\_ day and \_\_\_ night. (*Murdoch*) 19. Arthur did not pass \_\_\_ sleepless night; he slept long and well, for \_\_\_ sleep comes to \_\_\_ perplexed, if \_\_\_ perplexed are only weary enough. (*Eliot*) 20. It was about ten o'clock at \_\_\_ night. (*Maugham*) 21. \_\_\_ fine September afternoon was dying fast. (*Galsworthy*) 22. I persuaded him to stay \_\_\_ night with me, and I put him into my own bed. (*Maugham*) 23. It was \_\_\_ morning after Roger had talked to me in \_\_\_ Park, and Margaret and I were sitting at breakfast. (*Snow*) 24. \_\_\_ day was by This time approaching; \_\_\_ West was dim, \_\_\_ East beginning to gleam. (*Ch. Bronte*) 25. On \_\_\_ bright January morning \_\_\_ telephones kept ringing in my office. (*Snow*) 26. I cannot describe to you \_\_\_ intense silence of \_\_\_ night. (*Maugham*) 27. I shall not forget \_\_\_ evening I spent with him. I had not intended to stay more than \_\_\_ hour, but he insisted that I should spend \_\_\_ night. (*Maugham*) 28. He painted and he read, and in ^ \_\_\_ evening, when it was dark, they sat together on \_\_\_ veranda, smoking and looking at \_\_\_ night. (*Maugham*) 29. It was as lovely \_\_\_ morning as one could desire. (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 30. It was \_\_\_ glorious night. \_\_\_ moon had sunk, and left \_\_\_ quiet earth alone with \_\_\_ stars. (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 31. Nell dropped \_\_\_ curtsey, and told him they were \_\_\_ poor travellers who sought \_\_\_ shelter for \_\_\_ night. \_\_\_ schoolmaster told them that they were welcome to remain under his roof till \_\_\_ morning. (*Dickens*) 32. Every day I was up at \_\_\_ dawn, clearing, planting, working on my house, and at \_\_\_ night when I threw myself on my bed it was to sleep like.— log till \_\_\_ morning. (*Maugham*)

### Exercise 25. Translate into English.

1. Утро было холодное и ветреное. 2. Был теплый летний вечер. 3. Настала ночь, и путешественники решили отдохнуть. 4. Он пишет с утра до ночи. 5. Он переночевал у приятеля. 6. Он провел бессонную ночь и был очень бледен. 7. Приятно поехать за город в ясный летний день. 8. И днем и ночью он думал об одном. 9. Было прекрасное утро — солнечное и тихое. 10. Было раннее утро, и все в доме еще спали.

### Exercise 26. Insert articles where necessary.

(B) *Names of seasons.*

1. It was \_\_\_ winter, and \_\_\_ night of bitter cold. (*Wilde*) 2. You see, \_\_\_ winter was \_\_\_ very bad time for me, and I really had no money at all to buy \_\_\_ bread with. (*Wilde*) 3. It was \_\_\_ very dark evening for \_\_\_ summer. (*E. Bronte*) 4. \_\_\_ summer drew to \_\_\_ end, and \_\_\_ early autumn. (*E. Bronte*) 5. I wondered if \_\_\_ autumn would come upon us two months before her time. (*Du Maurier*) 6. It was \_\_\_ lovely evening in \_\_\_ spring time of \_\_\_ year; and in. \_\_\_ soft stillness of \_\_\_ twilight, all \_\_\_ nature was very calm and beautiful. \_\_\_ day



had been fine and warm; but at \_\_\_ coming on of \_\_\_ night, \_\_\_ air grew cool. (*Dickens*) 7. It was pretty late in \_\_\_ autumn of \_\_\_ year when \_\_\_ declining sun, struggling through \_\_\_ mist which had obscured it all day, looked brightly upon \_\_\_ little Wiltshire village. (*Dickens*) 8. There was going to be \_\_\_ election soon, we all knew: this was. \_\_\_ spring of 1955. (*Snow*) 9. It was \_\_\_ cold fall and \_\_\_ wind came down from \_\_\_ mountains. (*Hemingway*) 10. It was \_\_\_ fine day, early in \_\_\_ spring, and we were in \_\_\_ good humour. (*Maugham*)

### Exercise 27. Translate into English.

1. Была ранняя весна. 2. Была дождливая, холодная осень. 3. Осень была исключительно теплая; стояла ясная, солнечная погода. 4. Мое любимое время года — лето. 5. Лето 1941 года было очень жаркое.

### Exercise 28. Insert articles where necessary.

(C) *Bed, school, prison, town.*

1. It was eleven o'clock. Annette was still in \_\_\_ bed. (*Murdoch*) 2. Stefan, who had been sitting on the edge of \_\_\_ bed, came near to her and smiled for \_\_\_ first time. (*Murdoch*) 3. May comb was \_\_\_ old town. (*Lee*) 4. Dolores said nothing all \_\_\_ way to \_\_\_ town. (*Shaw*) 5. Yes, he and my brother had been to \_\_\_ school together. (*Snow*) 6. Before that she had taught history in \_\_\_ girls' school. (*Murdoch*) 7. \_\_\_ school was not \_\_\_ particularly good one. (*Conan Doyle*) 8. I never knew \_\_\_ lawyer yet who didn't threaten to put me in \_\_\_ prison sooner or later. (*Shaw*) 9. Steger next visited \_\_\_ county jail, close on to five o'clock, when it was already dark. (*Dreiser*) 10. In all probability he was already in \_\_\_ town. (*Austen*) 11. Among other public buildings in \_\_\_ certain town... there is one anciently common to most towns, great or small... — \_\_\_ workhouse. (*Dickens*) 12. After leaving \_\_\_ school, I became clerk to her father. (*Lindsay*) 13. She graduated from \_\_\_ Pedagogical Institute \_\_\_ year ago and now she is working at \_\_\_ school in \_\_\_ village near Leningrad. 14. \_\_\_ prison where Little Dorrit was born was called "The Marshalsea". 15. I haven't done anything that warrants my running away or going to \_\_\_ prison, either. I'm merely going there to save time at \_\_\_ present. (*Dreiser*) 16. It was in my walk that night, and in \_\_\_ sleepless hours which followed when I lay in. \_\_\_ bed, that \_\_\_ thought first occurred to me which afterwards shaped itself into \_\_\_ settled resolution\* (*Dickens*) 17. He told with \_\_\_ perfect truth... how he had in time been released from \_\_\_ prison. (*Dickens*) 18. "When you think of me at all, John, let it only be as \_\_\_ little child you have seen grow up in \_\_\_ prison. (*Dickens*) 19. You take your man home, Mrs. Dubedut, and get him to \_\_\_ bed before eleven. (*Shaw*) 20. I'm going to be out of \_\_\_ town for a few days. So I may not even see you again. (*Faulkner*) 21. Unless we can give \_\_\_ rector. \_\_\_ bed he had nowhere to lay his head this night. (*Shaw*) 22. Who could be in \_\_\_ prison \_\_\_ quarter of \_\_\_ century, and be prosperous! (*Dickens*)

### Exercise 29. Translate into English.

1. Она легла спать в три часа и встала с головной болью. 2. Почему вы так поздно вернулись из города? 3. Женщина подошла к кровати и накрыла ребенка одеялом. 4. Она плохо себя чувствовала и провела весь день в постели. 5. Сегодня мне надо пойти в школу на родительское собрание. 6. Я провела все лето в городе. 7. Когда сестра окончила школу, она поступила в консерваторию. 8. Мы провели несколько дней в маленьком городке на Кавказе. 9. Мы живем на даче, но часто приезжаем в город. 10. О. Генри был обвинен в краже, и, хотя он был невиновен, его посадили в тюрьму. Он сидел в тюрьме три года.

### Exercise 30. Insert articles where necessary.

(D) *Names of meals.*

1. He said he had letters to write and if I would allow him, would remain in his room till \_\_\_ dinner was ready. (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 2. He came in one morning when I was having \_\_\_ breakfast on \_\_\_ terrace of \_\_\_ hotel and introduced himself. (*Maugham*) 3. I saw to it that he had \_\_\_ good dinner. (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 4. We had \_\_\_ cold bacon for \_\_\_ lunch that day. There was not much of it. I took it to be \_\_\_ bacon we had not eaten for \_\_\_ breakfast.

But on \_\_\_ clean dish with parsley it looked rather neat. (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 5. Mr. Clay settled back in his chair, savoring his drink, expecting \_\_\_ good dinner. (*J. Shaw*) 6. \_\_\_ dinner was very sound. (*Bennett*) 7. Come and have \_\_\_ tea on \_\_\_ deck. (*Bennett*) 8. They had \_\_\_ supper in \_\_\_ silence. (*Murdoch*) 9. \_\_\_ little expedition down \_\_\_ river was delightful, and \_\_\_ little room overlooking \_\_\_ river into which they were shown for \_\_\_ dinner was delightful. (*Dickens*) 10. In \_\_\_ tiny dining-room, we were having \_\_\_ excellent dinner, cooked by Mary Osbaldiston-. (*Snow*) 11. She... began to dress for \_\_\_ dinner to which she had been invited. (*Austen*) 12. When he arrived... \_\_\_ famous Contract was at \_\_\_ dinner. (*Dreiser*) 13. When they arrived and mounted \_\_\_, stairs, Stefan behaved as usual, and soon they were eating. \_\_\_ supper which Jan had prepared. (*Murdoch*) 14. He assisted her... in setting forth \_\_\_ neat luncheon, consisting of \_\_\_ cold chicken, \_\_\_ ham and \_\_\_ tarts. (*Ch. Bronte*) 15. \_\_\_ dinner was \_\_\_ grand one. (*Austen*) 16. I shall be glad to see you at \_\_\_ lunch at half past one. (*Shaw*) 17. He had given me \_\_\_ dinner, and \_\_\_ good one. (*Snow*)

### Exercise 31. Translate into English.

1. Мы позавтракали в восемь часов. 2. Завтрак состоял из хлеба с маслом, сыра и кофе. 3. Не опаздывайте к обеду. 4. Обед еще не готов. 5. Наши знакомые пригласили нас на обед.

### Exercise 32. Insert articles where necessary. (Articles with nouns modified by certain adjectives, pronouns, and numerals.)

(A) *Most*.

1. You have had \_\_\_ most distinguished career... (*Snow*) 2. This was \_\_\_ most painful thought of all. (*Murdoch*) 3. He had put himself in \_\_\_ most unsatisfactory position, politically and socially. (*Dreiser*) 4. She was \_\_\_ most beautiful young girl; \_\_\_ most beautiful girl he had ever seen. (*Bennett*) 5. \_\_\_ most of \_\_\_ women had flowers or little black feathers sticking up in their hair. (*Glyn*) 6. I started relating \_\_\_ most interesting anecdote, but was somewhat surprised to observe... that nobody was paying \_\_\_ slightest attention *to* me whatever. (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 7. \_\_\_ news he had conveyed to her would have terrified \_\_\_ most women. (*Cronin*) 8. He was \_\_\_ man of \_\_\_ most subtle and refined intellect. \_\_\_ man of \_\_\_ culture, \_\_\_ charm and \_\_\_ distinction. One of \_\_\_ most intellectual men I ever met. (*Wilde*) 9. Her life held so little of \_\_\_ real charm; and Aileen Butler was \_\_\_ most significant element of \_\_\_ romance in it. (*Dreiser*) 10. Youth in her South Carolinian home had been simple and self-reliant; and unlike \_\_\_ most American girls, she had not had too good \_\_\_ time. (*Galsworthy*) 11. It was \_\_\_ most beautiful room. It was \_\_\_ most beautiful room in \_\_\_ house. (*Du Maurier*) 12. Gentleman, he was \_\_\_ most excellent man, \_\_\_ ' most gentle, tender and estimable man, with \_\_\_ simplicity of \_\_\_ child. (*Dickens*) 13. \_\_\_ Norman Conquest is one of \_\_\_ most important events in \_\_\_ English history, and it had \_\_\_ greatest influence on \_\_\_ history of \_\_\_ language.

### Exercise 33. Insert articles where necessary.

(B) *Few, little*.

1.. \_\_\_ mother and I are planning to go to \_\_\_ country for \_\_\_ few days. (*Dreiser*) 2. It was \_\_\_ cold, windy evening and there were \_\_\_ few people in \_\_\_ Park. 3. \_\_\_ few words that I have to add to what I have written, are soon penned. (*Dickens*) 4. We needn't take. \_\_\_ porter. We have \_\_\_ little luggage. 5. When you've wanted something very badly and it comes at last, it is somehow \_\_\_ little frightening. (*Maugham*) 6. \_\_\_ little I have to say can be said in \_\_\_ few minutes. 7. I am commonly \_\_\_ man of \_\_\_ few words. (*Dickens*) 8. One morning, when Rose was alone in \_\_\_ breakfast-parlour, Harry Maylie entered; and, with some hesitation, begged \_\_\_ permission to speak with her for \_\_\_ few moments. (*Dickens*) 9. What \_\_\_ little light there was came from one small window. (*Priestley*) 10. He paused, wishing he had not mentioned that fact. It was \_\_\_ slip of \_\_\_ tongue, one of \_\_\_ few he ever made, due to \_\_\_ peculiar pressure of \_\_\_ situation. (*Dreiser*) 11. Oh, I know there's no danger, but I'm \_\_\_ little frightened all \_\_\_ same. (*Greene*) 12. Well, for instance, why don't you tell me about your sister? She always sounds fascinating, from \_\_\_ little I hear, but I've no real

idea what she's like. (*Hansford Johnson*) 13. \_\_\_ old man replied that there were \_\_\_ few grown persons as trustworthy or as careful as she [Nell]. (*Dickens*) 14. Harriet closed her coat quickly and walked \_\_\_ little faster. (*J. Shaw*) 15. We can't disguise from ourselves that there's \_\_\_ little hope. (*Greene*) 16. He accepted willingly my invitation to remain for \_\_\_ few days in my apartment. (*Maugham*) 17. I seem to have forgotten \_\_\_ little I ever knew. (*Conan Doyle*) 18. He tried to orient himself by : \_\_\_ stars; but it was \_\_\_ cloudy night and \_\_\_ few stars that were visible did not announce any constellation that he could recognize. (*Murdoch*) 19. Carie expostulated, begged, was very angry, even wept \_\_\_ little, and then suddenly capitulated. (*Buck*) 20. Luf-kin's tastes were austere. He spent \_\_\_ little on himself. (*Snow*) 21. I see very \_\_\_ few women; but those are \_\_\_ women of rank. (*James*) 22. Mary offered to lend \_\_\_ little she had. (*E. Bronte*) 23. I've travelled \_\_\_ little, but not enough. (*Hansford Johnson*) 24. Surely, during \_\_\_ few hours he might pass in \_\_\_ cottage it would be easy for her to keep out of his way. (*Marryat*) 25. She respected him mightily but gave him \_\_\_ very little thought. (*Buck*) 26. When \_\_\_ winter came... he suffered \_\_\_ good deal from \_\_\_ cold and \_\_\_ hunger, and often had to go to \_\_\_ bed without any supper but \_\_\_ few dried pears or some hard nuts. (*Wilde*) 27. He was one of \_\_\_ few men of science who never terrified me, probably because he never behaved like \_\_\_ doctor. (*Lee*)

**Exercise 34. Insert articles where necessary.**

(C) *Second, third, etc.*

1. Of all those to whom he appealed one was actually not in \_\_\_ position to do anything for him; another was afraid; \_\_\_ third was calculating eagerly to drive \_\_\_ hard bargain; \_\_\_ fourth was too deliberate, anxious to have much time. [*Dreiser*] 2. Two people would have to hold \_\_\_ chair, and \_\_\_ third would help him up on it, and \_\_\_ fourth would hand him \_\_\_ nail, and \_\_\_ fifth would pass him up \_\_\_ hammer. (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 3. \_\_\_ professor Earle Fox ignored for \_\_\_ second time \_\_\_ buzzing signal from the secretary in \_\_\_ adjoining office. (*Wilson*) 4. One evening \_\_\_ little Hans was sitting by his fireside when \_\_\_ loud rap came at \_\_\_ door... At first he thought it was merely the storm. But \_\_\_ second rap came, then \_\_\_ third. (*Wilde*) 5. Mr. Pickwick was perfectly aware that \_\_\_ tree is \_\_\_ very dangerous neighbour in \_\_\_ thunderstorm. He had \_\_\_ tree on his right, \_\_\_ tree on his left, \_\_\_ third before him, and \_\_\_ fourth behind. (*Dickens*) 6. Take care, Caroline. I've proposed twice now. I shall not propose \_\_\_ third time. (*Maugham*)

**Exercise 35. Insert another or the other.**

(D) 1. A person who has not done one half of his day's work by ten o'clock, runs the chance of leaving \_\_\_ half undone. (*E. Bronte*) 2. Her hands lay on her lap motionless, one in \_\_\_ loosely clasped. (*Maugham*) 3. There was \_\_\_ silence, not a long one. (*Snow*) 4. Then she came and sat down on \_\_\_ side of the hearth. (*Galsworthy*) 5. There was \_\_\_ reason why he was disturbed. Though he was ambitious, he had high standards of behaviour. (*Snow*) 6. Fleur stole \_\_\_ look. (*Galsworthy*) 7. The boy sidled nearer, moving one foot slowly after \_\_\_ 8. There was \_\_\_ thing I liked in Mrs. Strickland. (*Maugham*)

**Exercise 36. Insert articles where necessary.**

(E) *A number, the number.*

1. Thirteen years of life with Frank Cowperwood had taught her \_\_\_ number of things. (*Dreiser*) 2. \_\_\_ colonel says our losses have not been heavy. \_\_\_ exact number is not yet known. (*Greene*) 3. To this particular dinner \_\_\_ number of people... had been invited. (*Dreiser*) 4. Those who had any letters to deliver or... any settled plan of going anywhere or doing anything, discussed their prospects \_\_\_ hundred times \_\_\_ day; and as this class of passengers was small, and \_\_\_ number of those who had no prospects whatever was very large, there were plenty of listeners and few talkers. (*Dickens*) 5. While he was dancing, Cowperwood had occasion to look at Aileen... She passed close to him \_\_\_ number of times. (*Dreiser*) 6. He went up into \_\_\_ picture gallery. On \_\_\_ bureau there were laid \_\_\_ number of letters and things to be attended to. (*Galsworthy*)

### Exercise 37. Insert articles where necessary.

1. What \_\_\_ strange feeling it was to be going home when it was not home, and to find that every object I looked at reminded me of \_\_\_ happy old home which was like \_\_\_ dream I could never dream again. (*Dickens*) 2. On her face I saw \_\_\_ placid and sweet expression of \_\_\_ : lady whose picture had looked at me downstairs. It seemed to my imagination as if \_\_\_ portrait had grown womanly and \_\_\_ original remained \_\_\_ child. (*Dickens*) 3. Rebecca's mother had had \_\_\_ education somewhere and her daughter spoke \_\_\_ French with \_\_\_ purity and \_\_\_ Parisian accent. It was in those days rather \_\_\_ rare accomplishment, and led to her engagement with \_\_\_ orthodox Miss Pinkerton. (*Thackeray*) 4. He had \_\_\_ wit, \_\_\_ keen sense of \_\_\_ humour, \_\_\_ sense of pathos. (*Dreiser*) 5. \_\_\_ one thing that really interested him in connection with his parents was \_\_\_ existence somewhere in \_\_\_ east in \_\_\_ small city called Lycurgus... of \_\_\_ uncle, \_\_\_ brother of his father's. (*Dreiser*) 6. But \_\_\_ bed I made up for myself was sufficiently uncomfortable to give me \_\_\_ wakeful night, and I thought \_\_\_ good deal of what \_\_\_ unlucky Dutchman had told me. (*Maugham*) 7. We went down \_\_\_ corridors, down \_\_\_ stone stairs. We crossed over \_\_\_ Park by \_\_\_ lake; one of \_\_\_ pelicans was spreading its wings. \_\_\_ trees- were creaking in. \_\_\_ blustery wind; on \_\_\_ grass, \_\_\_ first leaves had fallen. It was \_\_\_ dark evening, with \_\_\_ clouds, low and grey, driving across from \_\_\_ west. (*Snow*) 8. I breathed deeply two or three times, but felt \_\_\_ little calmer, \_\_\_ enormity of \_\_\_ situation was too overpowering. (*Clark*) 9. \_\_\_ English of \_\_\_ 14th century differs from \_\_\_ Modern English. 10. He was young still, and in \_\_\_ few years he would look back on all his misery with \_\_\_ sadness in which there would be something not unpleasurable. (*Maugham*) 11. After \_\_\_ lights within, it was very dark, and \_\_\_ night was enormous and silent with \_\_\_ intensity which for \_\_\_ moment made her pause in \_\_\_ awe. She was in \_\_\_ unfamiliar street. It was \_\_\_ damp night, with rare stars. (*Murdoch*) 12. I had often new temptations afterwards to wonder whether it was really singular, or only singular to me, that he, who was \_\_\_ most grateful of mankind upon \_\_\_ least occasion, should so desire to escape \_\_\_ gratitude of others. (*Dickens*) 13. Large drops of \_\_\_ rain, which pattered every now and then against \_\_\_ windows of \_\_\_ chaise, seemed to warn \_\_\_ travellers of \_\_\_ rapid approach of \_\_\_ stormy night. (*Dickens*) 14. It's pleasant to get used to \_\_\_ expensive, \_\_\_ soft, \_\_\_ comfortable. (*Stone*) 15. \_\_\_ children of \_\_\_ poor know but \_\_\_ few pleasures. Even \_\_\_ cheap delights of \_\_\_ childhood must be bought and paid for. (*Dickens*) 16. And there began for Soames \_\_\_ most confused evening he had ever spent. For in his heart were — great gladness and \_\_\_ great pity, and he must not show \_\_\_ sign of either. (*Galsworthy*) 17. \_\_\_ walls, down which ran \_\_\_ number and variety of ^ \_\_\_ pipes and cables, were painted in two contrasting shades of green — dark up to \_\_\_ height of five foot, lighter above that. (*Clark*) 18. In \_\_\_ evening \_\_\_ weather broke, \_\_\_ wind shifted from \_\_\_ South to \_\_\_ North-East and brought \_\_\_ rain first and then \_\_\_ sleet and \_\_\_ snow. (£. *Bronte*) 19. \_\_\_ Miller said all kinds of beautiful things about \_\_\_ friendship, which Hans took down in \_\_\_ note-book and used to read over at \_\_\_ night, for he was \_\_\_ very good scholar. (*Wilde*) 20. She drew \_\_\_ little away from him; then perceived that unwittingly she had done \_\_\_ right thing for he at once tried to take her hand again. And this was her first lesson too in \_\_\_ nature of \_\_\_ man. (*Galsworthy*) 21. \_\_\_ London train was on \_\_\_ point of \_\_\_ departure. It was yet \_\_\_ early morning, \_\_\_ hour of \_\_\_ milkmen and \_\_\_ postmen \_\_\_ station had \_\_\_ chill, unused, deserted look; \_\_\_, passengers were few. (*Bennett*) 22. In \_\_\_ hands of \_\_\_ strong, like himself when he was at his best, \_\_\_ law was \_\_\_ sword and \_\_\_ shield, \_\_\_ trap to place before \_\_\_ feet of \_\_\_ unwary; \_\_\_ pit to dig in \_\_\_ path of those who might pursue. (*Dreiser*) 23. It had been \_\_\_ severe winter, and \_\_\_ snow lay deep in \_\_\_ gorges of \_\_\_ mountains. (*Conan Doyle*) 24. \_\_\_ point is that \_\_\_ art now is just \_\_\_ subject for conversation; and anything that anybody can understand (at \_\_\_ first sight is not worth talking about and therefore not \_\_\_. art. (*Galsworthy*) 25. I do not consider that \_\_\_ cigars and whisky he consumed at my expense, and \_\_\_ few dollars, borrowed with \_\_\_ civil air of conferring. \_\_\_ favour upon me, that passed from my pocket to his, were in any way equivalent to \_\_\_

entertainment he afforded me. I remained his debtor. (*Maugham*) 26. He was \_\_\_ psychopathologist as well as \_\_\_ student of \_\_\_ art, and \_\_\_ subconscious had \_\_\_ few secrets from him. (*Maugham*) 27. And now he was in \_\_\_ large bedroom overlooking \_\_\_ Thames, \_\_\_ chamber with \_\_\_ writing table, \_\_\_ sofa, \_\_\_ telephone, \_\_\_ electric bells and \_\_\_ massive oak door with \_\_\_ lock and \_\_\_ key in \_\_\_ lock. (*Bennett*) 28. \_\_\_ sun comes up from \_\_\_ East and goes down to ; \_\_\_ West. (*Shaw*) 29. As that day closed in, \_\_\_ girl's excitement increased; and when \_\_\_ night came on... there was \_\_\_ unusual paleness in her cheek, and \_\_\_ fire in her eye, that even Sikes observed with \_\_\_ astonishment. (*Dickens*) 30. Mr. Skimpole could play \_\_\_ piano and \_\_\_ violoncello; and he was \_\_\_ composer, had composed half \_\_\_ opera once, and played what he composed with \_\_\_ taste. After \_\_\_ tea we had quite \_\_\_ little concert, in which Richard and Mr. Jarndyce and I were \_\_\_ audience. (*Dickens*) 31. In \_\_\_ civil life, Cassilis was \_\_\_ stage-designer on \_\_\_ threshold of \_\_\_ brilliant career. He was \_\_\_ quiet man, mildly handsome, mildly intellectual, mildly witty. He was fond of \_\_\_ women in \_\_\_ quiet sort of way, but behaved with them always as if he were in search of \_\_\_ good quiet wife. (*Hansford Johnson*) 32. Though \_\_\_ young man was \_\_\_ honest fellow, and \_\_\_ son of] \_\_\_ honest father, \_\_\_ latter had died so early, and his widow had J had such struggles to maintain herself, that \_\_\_ son was very irn-1 perfectly educated. (*Hardy*) 33. Next day, Margaret and I had to ! leave \_\_\_ house after \_\_\_ tea. \_\_\_ weather had not changed. Just as when we arrived, it was \_\_\_ evening so tranquil that \_\_\_ chimney smoke seemed painted on \_\_\_ sky, and in \_\_\_ air there was \_\_\_ smell of burning leaves. (*Snow*) 34. They never, one felt, dressed carelessly, ; said \_\_\_ wrong word, were \_\_\_ prey to \_\_\_ untidy passion. (*Greene*) 35. \_\_\_ Herzogs moved to \_\_\_ midwest. (*Bellow*) 36. She was \_\_\_ mountain-bred and ever \_\_\_ lover of \_\_\_ mountains. She could see \_\_\_ little beauty in \_\_\_ sea, and that only of \_\_\_ terrible and overwhelming kind. (*Buck*) 37. \_\_\_ very tall and very good-looking man who entered seemed about thirty-eight years old. His clean-shaven face was full of \_\_\_ health, his eyes full of \_\_\_ light, his dark hair had \_\_\_ fleck or two of premature grey in it. (*Galsworthy*) 38. I've been taught ' \_\_\_ Latin, and \_\_\_ Greek, and \_\_\_ mathematics. (*Eliot*) 39. At \_\_\_ dusk, on \_\_\_ evening of St. Valentine's day, Boldwood sat down to \_\_\_ supper as usual. (*Hardy*) 40. Dinny wrote \_\_\_ letter to her brother in which she said nothing of \_\_\_ Hallorsen, \_\_\_ Saxenden, or \_\_\_ Tasburghs, but discoursed in lively fashion of \_\_\_ Aunt Em, Boswell and Johnson, \_\_\_ Uncle Adrian, \_\_\_ Lady Henrietta... (*Galsworthy*) 41. I guessed that \_\_\_ women would likej her as much as \_\_\_ men, that if there was \_\_\_ little tenderness in her nature, there was also no spite. (*Hansford Johnson*) 42. He left \_\_\_ kitchen, went in \_\_\_ dining-room and excused himself to \_\_\_ Aunt Alexandra, put on his hat and went to \_\_\_ town. (*Lee*)

### Exercise 38. Follow the direction for Exercise 37.

1. He had not been here five minutes when \_\_\_ vivid flash of lightning was followed by \_\_\_ loud peal of thunder, that crashed and rolled away in \_\_\_ distance with terrific noise; then came another flash of lightning brighter than \_\_\_ other, and \_\_\_ second peal of thunder, louder than \_\_\_ first. (*Dickens*) 2. Sedov died on his way to \_\_\_ North Pole. Most of \_\_\_ members of his expedition died too. \_\_\_ Soviet Government built \_\_\_ Arctic station at \_\_\_ place where Sedov died, and from that station another expedition, this time \_\_\_ Soviet expedition, went to — North and set — Soviet flag over \_\_\_ North Pole. 3. Glinka was born in 1804. His uncle had \_\_\_ orchestra of his own. Very often \_\_\_ boy would take up \_\_\_ violon and try to repeat \_\_\_ notes and rhythm of \_\_\_ music he had heard. In 1818 \_\_\_ Glinkas went to St. Petersburg, where Mikhail was placed in \_\_\_ boarding school at \_\_\_ St. Petersburg Central Pedagogical Institute. In 1830 Glinka went to Italy, where he stayed for \_\_\_ number of years. However, it was St. Petersburg that was \_\_\_ Glinka's home for \_\_\_ greater part of his life. \_\_\_ St. Petersburg of Pushkin played \_\_\_ great part in. \_\_\_ Glinka's life. — man and \_\_\_ human soul are expressed in \_\_\_ Glinka's music with \_\_\_ deep sincerity and understanding. (*Soviet Literature*) 4. She [Lillian] was s]ightly taller than he... and shapely, artistic in \_\_. form and \_\_\_ feature. Her hair was \_\_\_ colour of — dried English walnut and her complexion waxen, with \_\_\_ lips of faint pink and eyes that varied from

gray to blue and from gray to brown according to. \_\_\_ light in which you saw them. Her beauty measured up to his present sense of \_\_\_ artistic. (*Dreiser*) 5. There were \_\_\_ number of young women who were very friendly to her, but there were \_\_\_ few with whom she was really intimate. \_\_\_ only person who stood out in her mind was \_\_\_ certain Mary Calligan... who had attended \_\_\_ school with Aileen in former years and was now \_\_\_ teacher in one of \_\_\_ local schools. (*Dreiser*) 6. Dick Stroeve, giving up his work entirely, nursed Strickland with \_\_\_ tenderness and \_\_\_ sympathy. He was dexterous to make him comfortable, and he exercised \_\_\_ cunning of which I should never have thought him capable to induce him to take \_\_\_ medicine prescribed by \_\_\_ doctor. I shall never forget \_\_\_ tactful patience with which he persuaded him to take \_\_\_ nourishment. (*Maugham*) 7. \_\_\_ reddish, fitful light was coming from \_\_\_ window above. Great God! His picture gallery! He ran to \_\_\_ foot of \_\_\_ stairs that led up to it. \_\_\_ stealthy sound, \_\_\_ scent of burning much more emphatic, staggered him. He hurried up \_\_\_ stairs and pulled open \_\_\_ door. Heavens! \_\_\_ far end of \_\_\_ gallery, at \_\_\_ extreme left corner of \_\_\_ house, was on fire. (*Galsworthy*) 8. Rosa knocked several times without getting any answer and had stepped back tin to \_\_\_ pavement to look up at \_\_\_ closely curtained windows when \_\_\_ door opened very quietly to \_\_\_ gap of \_\_\_ few inches and c \_\_\_ pale face peered out. Rosa sprang forwards with such \_\_\_ alacrity that \_\_\_ owner of, \_\_\_ face immediately shut \_\_\_ door again, and Rosa could hear \_\_\_ chain being fixed. With this additional safeguard \_\_\_ door opened once more to \_\_\_ narrow slit and Rosa could see one pale blue eye looking out at her. (*Murdoch*) 9. But though so bad \_\_\_ painter he had \_\_\_ very delicate feeling for \_\_\_ art, and to go with him to \_\_\_ picture galleries was \_\_\_ rare treat. I think I have never known \_\_\_ man whose judgement was surer. And he was better educated than \_\_\_ most painters. He was not ignorant of \_\_\_ kindred arts, and his taste for \_\_\_ music and \_\_\_ literature gave \_\_\_ depth and variety to his comprehension of \_\_\_ painting. To \_\_\_ young man like myself his advice and guidance was of \_\_\_ incomparable value. (*Maugham*) 10. \_\_\_ Volterras had \_\_\_ six-room apartment with \_\_\_ hall which was like \_\_\_ cord holding all ' \_\_\_ small rooms together. \_\_\_ kitchen was nearest to \_\_\_ front door, then came three bedrooms, and \_\_\_ bath, \_\_\_ dining room, and, at \_\_\_ far end, \_\_\_ living room. Despite \_\_\_ smallness of \_\_\_ rooms, they had \_\_\_ neat cosy quality that gave Erik \_\_\_ comfortable feeling. (*Wilson*) 11. Mrs. Pryor looked round her, and spoke of \_\_\_ neighbourhood as she had once before seen it long ago. She... compared its aspect with that of other parts of England: revealing in quiet, unconscious touches of description \_\_\_ sense of \_\_\_ picturesque, \_\_\_ appreciation of \_\_\_ beautiful or \_\_\_ commonplace, \_\_\_ power of comparing \_\_\_ wild with \_\_\_ cultured... that gave to her discourse \_\_\_ graphic charm as pleasant as it was unpretending. (*Ch. Bronte*) 12. They found themselves in \_\_\_ matted hall, lined almost to \_\_\_ ceiling with \_\_\_ pictures; through this they were conducted to \_\_\_ large parlour, with \_\_\_ magnificent fire in \_\_\_ grate; \_\_\_ most cheerful of rooms it appeared as \_\_\_ whole, and when you came to examine details, \_\_\_ enlivening effect was not diminished. There was no splendour, but there was \_\_\_ taste everywhere, \_\_\_ taste, you would have said, of \_\_\_ travelled man, \_\_\_ scholar, and \_\_\_ gentleman. \_\_\_ series of Italian views decked \_\_\_ walls; each of them was \_\_\_ specimen of \_\_\_ true art; \_\_\_ connoisseur had selected them. (*Ch. Bronte*) 13. Mrs. Dubedut is \_\_\_ arrestingly good-looking young woman. She has something of \_\_\_ grace and romance of \_\_\_ wild creature, with \_\_\_ good deal of \_\_\_ elegance and dignity of \_\_\_ fine lady. She has \_\_\_ figure on which any dress would look well, and carries herself with \_\_\_ unaffected distinction of \_\_\_ woman who has never in her life suffered from those doubts and fears as to her social position which spoil \_\_\_ manners of \_\_\_ most middling people. (*Shaw*) 14. "I know," said Darnay, "that between you and Miss Manette there is \_\_\_ affection so unusual, so touching, so belonging to \_\_\_ circumstances in which it has been nurtured, that it can have \_\_\_ few parallels, even in \_\_\_ tenderness between \_\_\_ father and \_\_\_ child." (*Dickens*) 15. It is hard that \_\_\_ man's exterior should tally so little sometimes with his soul. Dirk Stroeve had \_\_\_ passion of Romeo in \_\_\_ body of Sir Toby Belch. He had \_\_\_ sweet and generous nature, and yet was always blundering; \_\_\_ real feeling for what was

beautiful and \_\_\_ capacity to create only what was commonplace; \_\_\_ peculiar delicacy of sentiment and \_\_\_ gross manners. He could exercise \_\_\_ tact when dealing with \_\_\_ affairs of others, but none when dealing with his own. What \_\_\_ cruel practical joke \_\_\_ old Nature played when she flung so many contradictory elements together, and left \_\_\_ man \_\_\_ face to \_\_\_ face with \_\_\_ perplexing callousness of \_\_\_ Universe. (*Maugham*) 16. Charmian, who had taken \_\_\_ great fancy to Ellen, spoke of her warmly. At last, she felt, here was \_\_\_ suitable wife for me; and she did her best to jockey me into \_\_\_ marriage. \_\_\_ experience of worrying about my future was \_\_\_ soothing one to her, taking her mind off her own troubles. (*Hansford Johnson*)

### Exercise 39. Comment on the use of articles or their absence.

1. You can't become prime minister at once. (*Shaw*) 2. I began once at a dinner to tell a good story. (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 3. The scene of yesterday was quite transformed. The sea was now pale and almost colourless, yet at the same time brilliant, a sea of liquid light. It merged without a boundary into a sky which at the horizon was of an equal pallor, though changing at the zenith to a very pale vibrating blue. Here and there in the far distance, as if suspended motionless between sea and sky, there were small sailing-boats with triangular sails. (*Murdoch*) 4. Mr. Pickwick observed that fame was dear to the heart of every man. Poetic fame was dear to the heart of his friend Snodgrass; the fame of conquest was equally dear to his friend Tupman; and the desire of earning fame in the sports of *the* field, the air, and the water was uppermost in the breast of his friend Winkle. (*Dickens*) 5. The evening had already deepened into night. (*Dreiser*) 6. I know he couldn't love a Linton. (*E. Bronte*) 7. "John, dear," said Bella, "You're a good nurse; will you please hold baby?" (*Dickens*) 8. I must remind you again that Adam had the blood of the peasant in his veins. (*Eliot*) 9. She comes home to a late tea, and after tea she never sews. (*Ch. Bronte*) 10. He was already chairman of the department. (*Wilson*) 11. Thus he stood by the bank of this still lake... marvelling at the subtleties of reflected radiance, feeling the artist's joy in perfect natural beauty. (*Dreiser*) 12. This is Professor Hallorsen, who was head of the expedition. (*Galsworthy*) 13. Winter and summer a stove was burning in his room, stoked by Peter Saward's landlady, a Miss Glashan, who also brought him his meals and did the cleaning. (*Murdoch*) 14. George got out his banjo after supper and wanted to play it, but Harris objected. He said he had got a headache. George thought the music might do him good—said music often soothed the nerves and took away a headache. Harris said he would rather have the headache. (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 15. A full moon rode between the elm trees and there was silence as of the grave. (*Galsworthy*) 16. The world is all before him where to choose. A life of stirring work and interest, a life of change and excitement, a life of domestic ease and love! (*Dickens*) 17. After all, we all live in the future, even if it's a future where we aren't to be found anywhere upon the earth. (*Murdoch*) 18. But, ere that moment, an astonishing and vivid experience happened to them. One might have supposed that, in the life of Priam Farle at least, enough of the astonishing and the vivid had already happened. (*Bennett*) 19. There was a certain dignity in the little elderly gentleman's manner of rebuking these youths; though it was not, perhaps, quite the dignity most appropriate to the occasion. (*Ch. Bronte*) 20. I went into the war when I was seventeen, ran away from school to do it, enlisting as a Tommy and telling them I was nineteen. (*Priestley*) 21. Phuong was drinking a glass of orange juice and I was having a beer and we sat in silence, content to be together. (*Greene*) 22. So it was that on the following day, which was a Saturday, Rosa was knocking on Mrs. Wingfield's door at about four o'clock. (*Murdoch*)

## THE ADJECTIVE

### Exercise 1. State the morphological composition of the following adjectives.

Pretty, bushy, weather-stained, thoughtful, hard-hearted, illegitimate, sober, non-party, low-bred, improbable, sceptical, counter-revolutionary, careworn, beloved, wicked, disobedient, long-legged, regular, water-proof, large, well-timed, homeless, shaky, courageous, panic-stricken, blindfold, Portuguese, newly-baked, antique, peace-making,

forlorn, illegible, abundant, red-haired, small, deep-blue, bookish, snow-white, respectable-looking.

**Exercise 2. Give the comparative and superlative degrees.**

Cosy, merciful, bad, complete, fat, cheap, big, clumsy, stupid, far, miserable, narrow, virtuous, simple, merry, regular, expensive, low, deep, sad, significant, bitter, intimate, lazy, old, serious, tiny, clever, little, considerate, gay, good, much, dark, beautiful, dear, fit.

**Exercise 3. Use the adjective in the comparative or superlative degree.**

1. They had dined well and were now drinking hard... their faces getting \_\_\_ and \_\_\_ (red, red) (*Priestley*) 2. Was there anything in the world \_\_\_ than indecision? (bad) (*Galsworthy*) 3. He was only five years \_\_\_ than I was, which made him forty-five, (young) (*Snow*) 4. He loved his brother and he had done his brother what people seemed to consider \_\_\_ of wrongs, (bitter) (*Greene*) 5. \_\_\_ sin towards our fellow creatures is not to hate them, but to be indifferent to them, (bad) (*Shaw*) 6. He had been a great fencer, before the war, \_\_\_ fencer in Italy, (great) (*Hemingway*) 7. She is stopping at one of \_\_\_ hotels in town, (good) (*Saroyan*) 8. Difficult to believe it was so long ago, he felt young still! Of all his thoughts this was \_\_\_, \_\_\_ With his white head and his loneliness he had remained young and green at heart, (poignant, bitter) (*Galsworthy*) 9. She received congratulations as if she were \_\_\_ of women, (happy) (*Hansford Johnson*) 10. Kate remembered the little general; he was a good deal \_\_\_ than herself, (small) (*Lawrence*) 11. I think we'll resume the conversation when you're a little \_\_\_, Caroline, (calm) (*Maugham*) 12. They had never made \_\_\_ pretence of believing him. (little) (*Greene*) 13. Things went from bad to \_\_\_ (bad) (*Saroyan*) 14. He took his trinkets, carried them to the \_\_\_ pawnshop he could find, and being offered forty-five dollars for the lot, took it. (presentable) (*Dreiser*) 15. He felt her breathing grow \_\_\_ and \_\_\_ (slow, easy) (*Cusdck*) 16. To be ashamed of his own father is perhaps \_\_\_ experience a young man can go through. (bitter) (*Galsworthy*) 17. It's \_\_\_ in here than it is on the street. (hot) (*Salinger*) 18. I think you're about \_\_\_ girl in school, (pretty) (*J. Shaw*) 19. All his life he had taken pains to be \_\_\_, \_\_\_ than his fellows, (strong, brave) (*Saroyan*) 20. From that moment may be dated the downfall of \_\_\_ and \_\_\_ of the Indian nations, that existed within the limits of the present United States, (great, civilized) (*Cooper*) 21. Mr. Micawber, under pretence of showing me a \_\_\_ way than that by which I had come, accompanied me to the corner of the street, (near) (*Dickens*) 22. He would walk here and there and be no \_\_\_ than an ant in an ant hill, (conspicuous) (*Greene*) 23. We slept in a double-bedded room, which was \_\_\_ that the little country inn could do for us. (good) (*Conan Doyle*) 24. This is Sam Penty one of our \_\_\_ artists, (good) (*Priestley*)

**Exercise 4. Translate into English.**

1. Киев — более древний город, чем Москва; это один из древнейших городов России. 2. В XVI веке Испания была самой могущественной державой мира. 3. Волга длиннее Днепра; это самая длинная река Европы. 4. Ватикан — самое маленькое государство в Европе. 5. Одной из важнейших проблем сегодняшнего дня является установление прочного и длительного мира. 6. Условия жизни трудящихся в странах социалистического лагеря значительно лучше, чем в странах капиталистического лагеря. 7. Можно надеяться, что в ближайшем будущем культурные связи с Англией будут еще более тесными. 8. Точка кипения (the boiling point) спирта ниже точки кипения воды. 9. Платина тяжелее золота; это один из самых тяжелых металлов. 10. Утро было прекрасное, но к вечеру погода стала хуже, ветер усилился, и темные тучи покрыли небо.

**Exercise 5. Point out all the substantivised adjectives and state whether they are wholly or partially substantivised.**

1. He basked in the company of the young. (*Snow*) 2. We must take the bitter along with the sweet. (*Reade*) 3. She warned the domestics not to touch the child, as Mrs. Osborne might be offended. (*Thackeray*) 4. It was a surprise to the optimistic: but it was even more of



a surprise to the experienced. (*Snow*) 5. Oh, I know he is a right good fellow, but it belongs to the rank of the impossible. (*Meade*) 6. Imogen turning her luscious glance from one to the other of the "old dears", only smiled. (*Galsworthy*) 7. How do I know what's gone on between you? The rights and the wrongs of it. I don't want to know. (*A. Wilson*) 8. Willoughby was wearing greens, garrison hat, and all his ribbons. (*Heym*) 9. They were like poor savages confronted with a beautiful white girl. (*Murdoch*) 10. This year I covered half the world and saw people in such numbers — it seems to me I saw everybody but the dead. (*Bellow*) 11. But they had been such innocents then I (*Galsworthy*) 12. He was, as they saw it, part of the rich and superior class and every poor man knew what that meant. The poor must stand together everywhere. (*Dreiser*) 13. I was soon to discover that Gevaert was never interested in what "inferiors" had to say. (*Clark*)

## THE PRONOUN

**Exercise 1. Point out the pronouns in the following sentences and define the class each belongs to.**

1. There's nothing for any of us to do. (*Snow*) 2. Both these people were resolved to treat Mr. Polly very well, and to help his exceptional incompetence in every possible way. (*Wells*) 3. Tom presented himself before Aunt Polly, who was sitting by an open window in a pleasant rearward apartment, which was bed-room, break fast-room, dining-room, and library combined. (*Twain*) 4. Such were the reflections of Felix before the brass tablet. (*Galsworthy*) 5. It was the sort of solemn warning that a sanguine man gives to others, because he ought to give it to himself. (*Snow*) 6. Elizabeth and George talked and found each other delightful. (*Aldington*) 7. What we need is a higher and purer political morality. (*Dreiser*) 8. She hesitated a moment, and then sat down beside me, and laid her hand on mine. (*Dickens*) 9. The uniform had been cut for a stouter person than myself, but one, fortunately, of approximately the same height. (*Clark*) 10. "I didn't know anything about it," cried Charlie indignantly. "I came to see you about something else." (*Priestley*) 11. What about this coal strike? Will it ruin the country as the papers say? Isn't it a foolish thing on both sides? (*Galsworthy*) 12. She sat in a state of irresponsible exaltation, watching him, with that strange passive cruelty which is natural and proper in her sex and age. (*Wells*) 13. None of us except Collingwood knew what the Prime Minister thought of Roger or his policy. (*Snow*) 14. There were some aviators in the compartment who did not think much of me. (*Hemingway*) 15. Then a guarded voice said, "Who goes there?" (*Twain*) 16. Husbands and wives never listen when they talk to each other, only when the other is talking to somebody else. (*Fowler*) 17. Let me tell you something. (*Priestley*) 18. There was at least one person in the world who knew that he was alive and attached some importance to the fact. (*Saroyan*) 19. What are you talking about? (*Snow*) 20. I can only say what I think. (*Hemingway*) 21. He seemed to get prouder and prouder over each item of his own deficiency. (*Leacock*) 22. We said good-bye to one another and arranged to meet in the autumn. (*Maugham*) 23. What was it in this girl that reminded turn of that one with whom he had lived but two years, and mourned fifteen? (*Galsworthy*)-

**Exercise 2. Use the appropriate form of the possessive pronoun.**

1. She put out \_\_\_ hand and took out \_\_\_ (her, hers; my, mine). (*Hemingway*) 2. "Let me see your passports," I gave him \_\_\_ and Catherine got \_\_\_ out of \_\_\_ handbag (my, mine; her, hers; her, hers). (*Hemingway*) 3. Mind \_\_\_ own business and I'll mind \_\_\_ (your, yours; my, mine). (*Lindsay*) 4. Diitcher put his hand gently on \_\_\_ — to calm her (her, hers). (*J. Shaw*) 5. The next voice to speak up was not the Lieutenant's but \_\_\_ (my, mine). (*Salinger*) 6. That, at least, is my opinion of him; and I see it is not very far removed from \_\_\_ (your, yours). (*Dickens*) 7. \_\_\_ was not a marriage that could last (their, theirs). (*Bellow*) 8. \_\_\_ nerves are as bad as \_\_\_ (your, yours; my, mine). (*Greene*) 9. His eyes were as bright as \_\_\_ (her, hers). (*Snow*) 10. After all, this is \_\_\_ home just as much as \_\_\_ (your, yours; my, mine). (*Maugham*) 11. "Go with Lucy," said Mrs. Bretton. "I would rather keep \_\_\_ seat." Willingly would I have kept \_\_\_ also, but Graham's desire must take precedence of my own; I accompanied

him (my, mine; my, mine). (*Ch. Bronte*) 12. His own hand shook as he accepted a rose or two from — and thanked her (her, hers). (*Dickens*)

### Exercise 3. Point out the reflexive pronouns and define their function.

1. Much more than most politicians Gave knew himself. (*Snow*) 2. Meanwhile, he paraded himself gloriously before this young man. (*Priestley*) 3. Of course, I myself used to be very wealthy... (*Clark*) 4. He was not doubting the logic, he realized suddenly; what he was doubting was himself. (*Jones*) 5. Still, he must be thankful that she had been too young to do anything in that war itself. (*Galsworthy*) 6. Simon calmed himself with an effort. (*Sheckley*) 7. But you might remember that one respects oneself more afterwards -if one pays one's way. (*Galsworthy*) 8. Miss Adele Gerry opened the door herself. (*I. Shaw*) 9. He sunned himself in Chanton's admiring gaze. (*Priestley*) 10. What was the use even of loving, if love itself had to yield to death? (*Galsworthy*) 11. This is where we wash ourselves, Eliza, and where I am going to wash you. (*Shaw*) 12. Gevaert cleared his throat and addressed himself to me. (*Clark*) 13. They blamed themselves for this unlucky marriage. (*Hardy*) 14. The theatre manager himself... came to shake hands with them. (*Priestley*) 15. I have made myself perfectly pleasant here. (*Shaw*) 16. Several times he reminded himself that he had not rung up Shuckleworth yet. (*Priestley*) 17. He could talk races with Hurstwood, tell interesting incidents concerning himself. (*Dreiser*) 18. I want to be kept in constant touch with his progress myself. (*Clark*) 19. Anne's terror of being discovered in London or its neighbourhood, whenever they ventured to walk out, had gradually communicated itself to Mrs. Clements. (*Collins*) 20. Soames added: "Well, I hope, you'll both enjoy yourselves" (*Galsworthy*) 21. Cave might have concealed from others, but not from himself, that he profoundly envied Roger. (*Snow*)

### Exercise 4. Supply some or any.

1. She had \_\_\_ children of her own family in her house, and : \_\_\_ children of other people. (*Dickens*) 2. I don't want \_\_\_ money. (*Hemingway*) 3. He sat there, like \_\_\_ 1 unhappy little animal. (*Galsworthy*) 4. A few had gone beyond the gate. \_\_\_ were shouting hoarsely, and waving. (*Heym*) 5. "Do you want \_\_\_ water?" "No, I don't want \_\_\_ water." (*Maltz*) 6. The wounded were coming into the post, \_\_\_ were carried on stretchers, \_\_\_ were walking and \_\_\_ were brought on the backs of men that came across the field. (*Hemingway*) 7. In the town there were... \_\_\_ new hospitals. (*Hemingway*) 8. Well, if you want to know, I have no money and never had \_\_\_. (*Shaw*) 9. "Couldn't you find tomato sauce, Barto?" — "There wasn't \_\_\_," Aymo said. (*Hemingway*) 10. Don't let us have \_\_\_ nonsense about this job. (*Shaw*)

### Exercise 5. Supply somebody or anybody, someone or anyone.

1. You are \_\_\_ now, and don't let \_\_\_ forget it. (*Priestley*) 2. How can \_\_\_ who has travelled so much be so appallingly juvenile, he wondered? (*Murdoch*) 3. In a town of a sensible size you had a good chance of meeting \_\_\_ you were looking for... (*Priestley*) 4. He was wearing a dinner-jacket, unlike \_\_\_ at the supper-party. (*Snow*) 5. "You've no business to say such a thing!" she exclaimed. "Why not? \_\_\_ can see it." (*Galsworthy*) 6. There was a light tap on the door. And \_\_\_ came in. (*Priestley*) 7. Once upon a time Clennam had sat at that table taking no heed of \_\_\_ but Flora... (*Dickens*) 8. Here was \_\_\_ to remember, to think about. (*Priestley*) 9. "Look here," said Hunter at last, "have you shown that picture to \_\_\_?" (*Murdoch*) 10. There is \_\_\_ nice, anyway, who likes being out instead of in that stuffy drawing-room, playing bridge and talking, talking. (*Galsworthy*)

### Exercise 6. Supply something or anything.

1. The word *Germans* was \_\_\_ to be frightened at. We did not want to have \_\_\_ to do with the Germans. (*Hemingway*) 2. But I can't do \_\_\_ for him. (*Galsworthy*) 3. He was a rather small man, but there was \_\_\_ naturally commanding about him. (*Priestley*) 4. Everyone said he could turn \_\_\_ into money. (*Saroyan*) 5. I do not know what I expected to see, but I did not see \_\_\_ except the fields and the bare mulberry trees and the rain falling. (*Hemingway*) 6. \_\_\_ is wrong somewhere. (*Hemingway*) 7. She looked at me with violence, with \_\_\_ like hate. (*Snow*) 8. The room was far more splendid than \_\_\_ Little Dorrit had ever imagined, and

would have been splendid and costly in someone's eyes. (*Dickens*) 9. I can bear \_\_\_ but that. (*Galsworthy*) 10. When he read those books \_\_\_ happened to him. (*Galsworthy*) 11. It was \_\_\_ he didn't want to remember. (*Cusack*) 12. Even when she talks nonsense in that slightly affected way she seems to be saying \_\_\_ valuable... (*Aldington*)

### **Exercise 7. Point out conjunctive, relative, and interrogative pronouns.**

1. She was heartily sick of London fog and cold and soot and niessy open fires which fill the room with dust but don't warm it. (*Aldington*) 2. "Who is that girl with yellow hair and dark eyes," he asked. (*Galsworthy*) 3. You see, Hushabye, you are what women consider a good-looking man. (*Shaw*) 4. Who could tell what his son's circumstances really were? (*Galsworthy*) 5. You don't want to do anything that you'll be sorry for. (*Dreiser*) 6. A man is mostly what you want to see in him. (*Heym*) 7. What do you expect me to believe? (*Snow*) 8. She rises with an air of one who waits and is almost at the end of her patience. (*Shaw*) 9. It was evident, indeed, that she wished me to drop the subject, which I did accordingly. (*Ch. Bronte*) 10. Several times their eyes accidentally met, and then there poured into hers such a flood of feeling as she had never experienced. (*Dreiser*) 11. Would she go with them or stay here and write to William. Which, which should it be? (*Mansfield*) 12. He mentioned things in the play which she most approved of, things which swayed her deeply. (*Dreiser*) 13. I do so wonder what Jolyon's boy is like. (*Galsworthy*) 14. What hurt him most was the fact that he was being pursued as a thief. (*Dreiser*)

## **WORDS DENOTING STATE**

### **Exercise 1. Point out the words denoting state. Translate into Russian.**

1. The afternoon was full of transfiguring sunshine, some Judas trees were abloom in the villa gardens... (*Wells*) 2. I did not mind for myself. I should not have cared if had been alone. (*Du Maurier*) 3...his soul was all ablaze with bliss... (*Twain*) 4. We are not afraid of the truth. (*Gow and D'Usseau*) 5. The rest of his costurne... were the things he had worn at the funeral of his father. So nearly akin are human joy and sorrow. (*Wells*) 6. The lieutenant... Jay asleep on the other bed. (*Hemingway*) 7. He lit a pool of paraffin on the scullery floor and instantly a nest of wavering blue flame became agog for prey. (*Wells*) 8. He [Mr. Polly] rattled and stormed and felt the parlour already ablaze behind him. (*Wells*) 9. But Mr. Polly's establishment looked more like a house afire than most houses on fire contrive to look from start to finish. (*Wells*) 10. You know- everything there is to know about me. There's not much, because I have not been alive for wery long. (*Du Maurier*) II. He did not answer. I was aware again of that feeling of discomfort. (*Du Maurier*)

## **THE VERB**

### **Exercise 1. State the morphological composition of the verbs.**

To worry, to precipitate, to forbid, to retire, to retell, to do away, to whitewash, to whiten, to ascend, to apologize, to engage, to enfold, to give in, to decompose, to translate, to transport, to browbeat, to subscribe, to subordinate, to run away, to underestimate, to backbite, to mislead, to forget, to succeed, to disobey, to take off, to overrun, to satisfy, to recede, to come in, to resign, to superintend, I to descend, to blackmail, to put up, to unbind, to win, to counteract, to go on, to forecast, to befriend, to go away, to lie, to predispose.

### **Exercise 2. Point out notional, auxiliary, modal, and link verbs.**

She went into the drawing-room and lighted the fire; then, picking up the cushions, one by one, that Mary had disposed so care-1 fully, she threw them back onto the chairs and the couches. That] made all the difference; the room came alive at once. As she wasi about to throw the last one she surprised herself by suddenly hugging it to her, passionately, passionately. But it did not put ou the fire in her bosom. Oh, on the contrary!

The windows of the drawing-room opened onto a balcony overlooking the garden. At the far end, against the wall, there wasi a tall, slender pear tree in fullest, richest bloom; it stood perfect,' as though becalmed against the jade-green sky. Bertha couldn't! help

feeling, even from this distance, that it had not a single bud] or a faded petal. Down below, in the garden beds, the red and yellow tulips, heavy with flowers, seemed to lean upon the dusk. A grey cat, dragging its belly, crept across the lawn, and a black; one, its shadow, trailed after. The sight of them, so intent and so quick, gave Bertha a curious shiver. Really — really — she had everything. She was young. Harry and she were as much in love as ever, and they got on together splendidly. She had an adorable baby. They didn't have to worry about money. They had this absolutely satisfactory house and garden. (Mansfield)

**Exercise 3. Point out all the verbs. State whether they are transitive or intransitive. Translate into Russian.**

1. She had spoiled his life, wounded his pride to death, defrauded him of a son. (Galsworthy) 2. The door opened, and a thick set heavy-looking young man entered... (Eliot) 3. The paddock was fairly well filled with people and they were walking the horses around in a ring under the trees behind the grandstand. (Hemingway) 4. Fleur did not answer. She stood for a moment looking at him and her mother... (Galsworthy) 5. After turning the matter over and consulting with Irene, he wrote to his daughter, Mrs. Val Dartie.. (Galsworthy) 6. The soldiers pushed the foreign workers into groups and led them off. (Heym) 7. Hughson marched him up to a sort of jargon desk that was all glass and shining metal. (Priestley) 8. While she stood hesitating, the door opened, and an old man came forth shading a candle with one hand. (Hardy) 9. Fleur looked at her watch and rose. (Galsworthy) 10. It was Fleur's turn now. She spoke of dogs, and the way people treated them. (Galsworthy) 11. The stream which worked the mill came bubbling down in a dozen rivulets. (Galsworthy) 12. He was waiting for us... at the public house; and asked me how I found myself, like an old acquaintance. I did not feel, at first, that I knew him as well as he knew me, because he had never come to our house since the night I was born, and naturally he had the advantage of me. (Dickens)

### TENSES IN THE ACTIVE VOICE

**Exercise 1. Insert the Present Indefinite or Future Indefinite.**

1. When you \_\_\_ to Martin, we shall often meet, (to be married) (Murdoch and Priestley) 2. Wait here, in case I \_\_\_ you. (to want) (Collins) 3. Where \_\_\_ you \_\_\_ "when the seminary \_\_\_, Padre? (to go, to close) (Voynich) 4. Give me the railway guide, and I'll tell you when he \_\_\_ here to-morrow, (to be) (Collins) 5. You \_\_\_ here till it \_\_\_ time to go to the barrier, (to stay, to be) (Voynich) 6. If you \_\_\_ me who you are I \_\_\_ the dog on you. (to tell — negative, to set) (Abrahams) -7. I'm going abroad next week. I don't know when I \_\_\_ back, (to be) (Greene) 8. My father-in-law is asleep... As soon as he \_\_\_, he will, I know, want to see you. (to wake) (Christie) 9. I \_\_\_ Blackstable till I \_\_\_ your wife, (to leave — negative, to be) (Maugham) 10. You must wait, my friend, before you \_\_\_ an answer to that question, (to get) (Christie) 11. Will you wait a minute while I \_\_\_ the manuscript? (to look through) (Voynich) 12. If you \_\_\_ not to tell mother, I \_\_\_ you something, (to promise, to tell) (Voynich) 13. "I want to see Annette." I don't know if she \_\_\_ you." (to see) (Maugham) 14. I am sure you'll like him when you \_\_\_ him. (to see) (Maugham) 15. Heaven knows when your poor child \_\_\_ England again, (to see) (Dickens) 16. "Do they know when he \_\_\_ in?" asked Charlie, (to be) (Priestley) 17. The day will come when you \_\_\_... why I am silent even to you. (to know) (Collins) 18. She'll then be sent to some place of detention for a time. However, after a reasonable interval she'll be allowed to leave, provided she \_\_\_ in Austria, (to stay — negative) (Hilton)

**Exercise 2. Translate into English, using the Future Indefinite or Present Indefinite.**

(A) 1. Вы опоздаете на поезд, если не возьмете такси. 2. Я не Уйду, пока вы не вернетесь. 3. Мне хотелось бы узнать, когда ваша сестра вернется в Ленинград. 4. Мне хотелось бы узнать точный день, когда ваша сестра вернется в Ленинград. 5. Я не| могу с уверенностью сказать, будет ли он на собрании, но если он придет, то обязательно выступит в прениях. 6. Пока дамы будут у себя в комнатах, я спущусь

вниз и постараюсь раздобыть тебе что-нибудь поесть.

(B) 1. Когда я ее [Олю] найду... и привезу сюда, то позову тебя. (*Чаковский*) 2. Я не уйду, пока не получу ее адрес. (*Чакоеский*) 3. Когда мне исполнится двадцать три года, я женюсь на ] ней. (*Куприн*) 4. Если вы меня не убьете, то я не промахнусь. I (*Лермонтов*) 5. Не знаю, удастся ли мне объяснить тебе как еле- ] дует... (*Короленко*) 6....а его (Сережи] нет, не знаю даже, когда вернется. (*Слепухин*)

### Exercise 3. Insert the Present Indefinite or Present Continuous.

1. "Where is Kitty?" "Susan \_\_ her to bed." (to put) (*Collins*) 2. Light \_\_ more quickly than sound, (to travel) 3. I should like to know why you \_\_ always \_\_ (to read) (*Maugham*) 4. "Sorry, Ted. I must go. I'm late." "Where \_\_ you \_\_ ?" "I \_\_ to have tea with Nurse Hopkins." (to go, to go) (*Christie*) 5. He \_\_ best, who \_\_ last, (to laugh, to laugh) 6. I don't interrupt people when they \_\_ (to read) (*Collins*) 7. I never \_\_ him doing any work there, whenever I \_\_ He \_\_ behind a bit of glass all day. (to see, to go in, to sit) (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 8. Actions \_\_ louder than words, (to speak) 9. Robert \_\_ just now \_\_ to my uncle, and they \_\_ hands, (to speak, to shake) (*Ch. Bronte*) 10. And now my written story ends. I look back, once more — for the last) time — before I close these leaves. I \_\_ myself, with Agnes at my side, journeying along the road of life. I \_\_ our children and our friends around us; and I \_\_ the roar of many voices, not indifferent to me as I travel on. (to see, to see, to hear) (*Dickens*) 11. "Why \_\_ you \_\_ ?" she cried. "Because you \_\_ nonsense." (to answer — negative, to talk) (*Maugham*) 12. Every star \_\_ its own orbit, (to have) 13. My tooth-brush is a tiling that haunts me when I \_\_ and \_\_ my life a misery, (to travel, to make) (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 14. This is Mr. Slush's latest book. It \_\_ a wonderful sale, (to have) (*Leacock*) 15. A stitch in time \_\_ nine, (to save) 16. "I've got fever, Kong," gasped Skelton. "Get me the medicine chest and blankets, I \_\_ to death!" (to freeze) (*Maugham*) 17. That's the way she always \_\_ (to talk) (*Twain*) 18. I'm so careless. I \_\_ always \_\_ my bag about, (to leave) (*Maugham*) 19. "Hallo, darling. You \_ very tragic." (to look) (*Christie*) 20. I \_\_ to you house next Thursday, (to come) (*Hilton*)

### Exercise 4. Translate into English.

(A) 1. Не говорите так громко. Я вас хорошо слышу. 2. Становится темно. 3. Я уезжаю в Москву на будущей неделе. 4. Когда бы я ни пришла к вам, вы всегда работаете. 5. Где ваш брат? — Он провожает приятеля. 6. Пароход уходит завтра. 7. Я слышу шаги. Кто-то идет сюда. 8. Не беспокойте его, когда он работает, д. Мой брат завтра уезжает в Москву. 10. Вы чувствуете себя лучше сегодня?

(B) 1. Где же новый твой приятель?.. — Его нет дома; он обыкновенно встает рано и отправляется куда-нибудь. (*Тургенев*) 2. Ее глаза сияют, когда она говорит с Пламеневым. (*Пермяк*) 3. Знаешь ли ты, о чем я думаю? (*Тургенев*) 4. Вы едете в Ставрополь? (*Лермонтов*) 5. Тебе нравится моя сестра? (*А. Толстой*) 6. Поднимитесь наверх. Вас ждет Валентина Павловна. (*Тендряков*) 7. Баклажанов! Почему ты не ешь? (*Булгаков*) 8. Здравствуй... Как себя чувствуешь? (*Тендряков*) 9. В школе занятия начинаются в девять часов утра. (*Пермяк*) 10. Нет! я не всегда смеюсь! Д вовсе не веселый человек. (*Тургенев*) 11. Ты влюблен, Андрей Петрович?.. Ты не отвечаешь мне... Отчего ты не отвечаешь? (*Тургенев*) 12. Мама, кто это свистит? (*А. Толстой*) 13. Ее голос недурен, но поет она плохо. (*Лермонтов*) 14. Виктор, ты меня слышишь? — настойчиво спросил Завьялов. (*Чаковский*)

### Exercise 5. Insert the Past Indefinite or Past Continuous.

1. Montanelli entered the room where Arthur \_\_ for him at the supper table, (to wait) (*Voynich*) 2. Miss Marple's telephone rang when she \_\_ (to dress) (*Christie*) 3. I lighted my pipe afresh and nodded to him to show that I \_\_ (to listen) (*Leacock*) 4. Leila felt the girls \_\_ really \_\_ her. They \_\_ towards the men. (to see — negative, to look) (*Mansfield*) 5. The Sergeant \_\_ when his clients \_\_. (to write, to enter) (*Dickens*) 6. She \_\_ constantly \_\_ me to lunch and dine with her and once or twice a year. \_\_ me to spend a week-end at her house in the country, (to ask, to invite) (*Maugham*) 7. Gretta had the feeling that everyone \_\_

at her, and she \_\_\_ her eyes... (to look, to lower) (*Caldwell*) 8. For some seconds she stood watching him and both \_\_\_ very quickly, (to think) (*Weils*) 9. They walked on a little and then he \_\_\_ she \_\_\_ (to see, to cry) (*Maugham*) 10. I looked at the First of the Barons. He \_\_\_ salad, (to eat) (*Mansfield*) 11. Clyde \_\_\_ as she talked how different she was from Hortense. (to think) (*Dreiser*) 12. Sir Henry looked into the lounge... In the lounge Hugo McLean \_\_\_ a crossword puzzle and \_\_\_ a good deal over it. (to do, to frown) (*Christie*) 13. The storm grew worse and worse, and the rain fell in torrents, and little Hans could not see where he \_\_\_. (to go) (*Wilde*) 14. It was warm and cosy in the kitchen when he walked in. Madam Perier \_\_\_ and her husband \_\_\_ a *Paris-Soir*. Annette .— stockings, (to cook, to read, to darn) (*Maugham*)

### Exercise 6. Translate into English.

(A) 1. Когда Давид приехал, Хэм уже ждал его. 2. Когда декан вошел в аудиторию, тов. Петров делал доклад. 3. Когда туристы вернулись, они увидели, что машина их уже ждет. 4. Она постоянно говорила о своем ребенке. 5. Том Сойер не мог играть со своими приятелями. Он белил забор. 6. Миссис Гуммидж постоянно жаловалась на холод.

(B) 1. «Когда я прошлой осенью готовился к вступительным экзаменам, я познакомился со многими студентами», —сказал Артур. 2. Уже солнце садилось, когда я подъехал к Кисловодску. (*Лермонтов*) 3. Становилось темно. (*Чехов*) 4. Около семи часов вечера я гулял на бульваре. (*Лермонтов*) 5. Я сидел у окна, когда услышал стук их кареты. (*Лермонтов*) 6. Она [Катя] беспрерывно краснела. (*Тургенев*) 7. Час спустя Павел Петрович уже лежал в постели с забинтованной ногой. (*Тургенев*) 8. Гости Маркелова еще спали, когда к нему явился посланец с письмом от его сестры. (*Тургенев*) 9. Они вышли, когда было еще светло и дул сильный ветер. (*Чаковский*) 10. Алехин подвинул свой стул ближе к столику, за которым играли два старика. (*Котов*) 11. Он (Егор Семенович) работал с утра до ночи, все спешил куда-то. (*Чехов*) 12. От двух до пяти Нежданов сидел у себя в комнате. (*Тургенев*) 13. Она проснулась в ту самую минуту, когда я входил в комнату. (*Достоевский*)

### Exercise 7. Insert the Past Indefinite or Past Continuous.

1. She heard him sigh while he \_\_\_ (to read) (*Collins*) 2. While the water \_\_\_, Ma Parker began sweeping the floor, (to heat) (*Mansfield*) 3. While he \_\_\_ the tea she \_\_\_ him. (to make, to watch) (*Abrahams*) 4. Mrs. Presty \_\_\_ at him with some anxiety on her daughter's account, while he \_\_\_ the message on Randal's card, (to look, to read) (*Collins*) 5. It was quite late at night, and the brother \_\_\_ aloud while the sister \_\_\_, her needle, when they were interrupted by a knocking at the door, (to read, to ply) (*Dickens*) 6. While Mrs. Calligan \_\_\_ the table Mamie went to her room and Aileen followed her. (to set) (*Dreiser*) 7. While the doctor \_\_\_, Mrs. Presty \_\_\_ her own conclusions from a close scrutiny of Mr. Sarrazin's face, (to speak, to draw) (*Collins*) 8. While he \_\_\_ he \_\_\_ the doorbell, then voices, (to wash, to hear) (*Abrahams*) 9. While the gendarmes \_\_\_ the room, Arthur \_\_\_ waiting on the edge of the bed. (to ransack, to sit) (*Voynich*)

### Exercise 8. Insert the Present Perfect or Past Indefinite.

1. You \_\_\_ never \_\_\_ me why you're called Tony when your name is James, (to tell) (*Galsworthy*) 2. I \_\_\_ her name in the papers rather often of late, (to see) (*Maugham*) 3. "The rain \_\_\_, carino," Montanelli said after sunset. "Come out; I want to have a talk with you." (to stop) (*Voynich*) 4. " \_\_\_ you \_\_\_ a job?" "There are none." (to find) (*Galsworthy*) 5. " \_\_\_ you \_\_\_ all the necessary preparations incident to Miss Sedley's departure, Miss Jemima?" asked Miss Pinkerton. (to complete) (*Thackeray*) 6. His father \_\_\_ just a week ago to-day, (to die) (*Galsworthy*) 7. I know where you the morning, (to spend) (*Austen*) 8. Gh! You \_\_\_. someone with you. Introduce me. (to bring) (*Shaw*) 9. Barbara! You \_\_\_ the education of a lady. Please, let your father see that and don't talk like a street girl, (to have) (*Shaw*) 10. ""Let's go," said Abra- niovici; "I \_\_\_ my appetite." (to lose) (*Heym*) 11. "Oh — oh —you are Mary Gerrard?... You \_\_\_ I — I wouldn't have recognized you." (to change) (*Christie*) 12.

"Where's the paper?" asked Edward. «I \_\_\_ the leading article yet." (to read — negative) (*Maugham*) 13. Montanelli \_\_\_ awake the whole night through, (to lie) (*Voynich*) 14. Mr. Worthing, I suppose, \_\_\_ from London yet? (to return — negative) (*Wilde*) 15. It's the most tasteless, repulsive idea I \_\_\_ ever \_\_\_ of (to hear). (*Murdoch and Priestley*) 16. Mother, I \_\_\_ just \_\_\_ to him. (to write) (*Wilde*) 17. My hands are all wet with these roses. Aren't they lovely? They \_\_\_ up from Selley this morning. (to come) (*Wilde*) 18. Young Mako \_\_\_ a match, \_\_\_ his pipe, and \_\_\_ them slowly, (to strike, to light, to approach) (*Abrahams*) 19. In fact I \_\_\_ just \_\_\_ a telegram to say that my poor friend Bunbury is very ill again, (to have) (*Wilde*) 20. You \_\_\_ even \_\_\_ at that book I got you on the war in the Pacific, (to look — negative). (*Murdoch*) 21. When \_\_\_ you first \_\_\_ the co-respondent...? (to see) (*Galsworthy*) 22. We \_\_\_ in silence for a few minutes. He \_\_\_ at last, (to sit, to speak) (*Dickens*) 23. "I \_\_\_ so little experience yet," she said. "I only \_\_\_ school yesterday, you see." (to have, to leave) (*Beresford*) 24. "I \_\_\_ surely \_\_\_ very long," returned Florence. "When \_\_\_ I \_\_\_ here? Yesterday?" (to sleep, to come) (*Dickens*) 25. I \_\_\_ Ann at her father's house twenty odd years ago and \_\_\_ her ever since, (to meet, to know) (*Stone*)

### Exercise 9. Translate into English.

(A) 1. Вы написали контрольную работу? Покажите мне ее. 2. Она написала последнюю контрольную работу без ошибок. 3. Я давно видела эту пьесу. Я уже забыла ее. 4. Я давно с ней познакомилась. 5. Я давно ее не видела. 6. Я давно пришла сюда. Я здесь с девяти часов. 7. Я только что видела тов. Петрова. Он недавно приехал из Москвы. 8. Я не слышала вашего вопроса. 9. Что вы сказали? 10. Я не слышала, что вы сказали. 11. Хотелось бы знать, куда она положила мои книги. 12. Вчера у нас была интересная лекция о международном положении. Все студенты присутствовали на лекции. 13. Когда вы начали читать эту книгу? — Мы начали читать ее на прошлой неделе.

(B) 1. Читали вы Обермана, Лизавета Михайловна? (*Тургенев*) 2. Месяца три спустя... он [Печорин] уехал в Грузию. С тех пор мы не встречались. (*Лермонтов*) 3. «Разве гости уехали?» — спросил Лаврецкий. (*Тургенев*) 4. «Письмо из Москвы пришло?» — спросила Машурина погодя немного. — «Пришло... третьего дня». (*Тургенев*) 5. «Я давно не играла», — возразила Варвара Павловна, немедленно садясь за фортепьяно. (*Тургенев*) 6. «Когда вы получили этот журнал?» — промолвила Лиза. (*Тургенев*) 7. Кстати, кончил ты свой барельеф? (*Тургенев*) 8. Вчера у колодца в первый раз явилась Вера. (*Лермонтов*) 9. «Когда он занемог?» — спросила Елена. «Третьего дня; со вчерашнего дня я здесь». (*Тургенев*) 10. У тебя с тех пор немного потемнели волосы. (*Пермяк*) 11. Я рад, если вы это поняли. (*Кожевников*) 12. «Давно вы приехали? Видели вы его?»... — «Я вчера приехала... Я видела Федора Ивановича и говорила с ним». (*Тургенев*)

### Exercise 10. Insert the Present Indefinite or the Present Perfect.

1. My child, what brings you here before I \_\_\_ ? (to breakfast) (*Ch. Bronte*) 2. I'll go there directly I \_\_\_ my breakfast, (to finish) (*Dickens*) 3. "My dear Bertha," said Miss Ley, "the doctor will have an apoplectic fit, if you \_\_\_ such things." (to say) (*Maugham*) 4. When you \_\_\_ your fortune, you must come back and assert yourself in London, (to make) (*Wilde*) 5. "Yes, dear, but till she \_\_\_ you herself, I can't say more." (to tell) (*Galsworthy*) 6. I must go to him, Martin, now, literally tonight, as soon as I \_\_\_ some things, (to pack) (*Murdoch and Priestley*) 7. As soon as Harry \_\_\_ his letters, we're going for a walk, (to finish) (*Maugham*) 8. "Are you ill, darling?" "I shall know that when Dr. Cornish \_\_\_ me." (to examine) (*Maugham*) 9. My dearest Edith will be her natural and constant guardian when you \_\_\_. (to return) (*Dickens*) 10. "If you \_\_\_," Scotty said, "I can give you something to eat." (to get up) (*Aldridge*) 11. When I meet with real poetry, I cannot rest till I \_\_\_ it by heart, (to learn) (*Ch. Bronte*) 12. Signor Rivarez, you must take something before you \_\_\_ (to go) (*Voynich*) 13. I dare not approach the subject of the moonstone again until time \_\_\_ something to quiet her. (to do) (*Collins*) 14. If you \_\_\_ to speak to us, wait till my brother \_\_\_ (to want, to come)

(Hardy) 15. If you \_\_, shall we set off for Hunterbury? (to finish) (Christie) 16. But perhaps we can continue this chat when my dear brother \_\_ (to go) (Murdoch)

### Exercise 11. Translate into English.

(A) 1. Если он об этом узнает, он придет в ярость. 2. Я не смогу вам дать определенного ответа, пока не поговорю с главным инженером. 3. Мы выедем в пять часов, если дождь к этому времени перестанет. 4. Я переведу предложение после того, как проанализирую его. 5. Я приду после того, как закончу работу. 6. Он поедет на юг, как только защитит диссертацию. 7. Я дам вам эту книгу после того, как прочту ее. 8. Как только мы решим этот вопрос, я вам позвоню.

(B) 1. Поднимем занавес ровно в половине девятого, когда взойдет луна. (Чехов) 2. Я умру, если с тобой что-нибудь случится. (Слепухин) 3. Если хотите, давайте рисовать, пока еще не совсем стемнело. (Тургенев) 4. Только что он придет, я заставлю его объяснить это дело. (Достоевский) 5. Я подожду, пока он уйдет. (Достоевский) 6. Что я отвечу ей, если малыш умрет? (Чаковский)

### Exercise 12. Insert the Past Indefinite or Past Perfect.

1. Gemma \_\_ badly the last few nights, and there were dark shadows under her eyes, (to sleep) (Voynich) 2. When he returned to his hotel he found a message that someone \_\_ in his absence... (to telephone) (Hilton) 3. The Gadfly \_\_ a moment, glancing furtively at Gemma; then he \_\_ (to pause, to go on). (Voynich) 4. They \_\_ the door of their inn, and \_\_ a little way down the village, before they \_\_ the precise spot in which it stood, (to pass, to walk, to recollect) (Dickens) 5. The moon \_\_ There was nothing to dispel the dark of the night, (to rise — negative) (Abrahams) 6. Hardly \_\_. she \_\_ when a very stout gentleman \_\_ into the chair opposite hers, (to sit down, to flop) (Mansfield) 7. They did not speak to him again, until he \_\_ (to eat) (Greene) 8. Now the madman on the stairs spoke again and his mood \_\_ suddenly \_\_; he seemed quietly merry, (to change) (Priestley) 9. When Martini \_\_ the room, the Gadfly turned his head round quickly, (to enter) (Voynich) 10. No sooner \_\_ he \_\_ a drink himself, than Mrs. Fettle \_\_ in. (to take, to look) (Lessing) 11. Those grey hairs startled me. I \_\_ they were there, (to know — negative) (Cain) 12. Gemma \_\_ her hand and \_\_ into the house. When the door \_\_ behind her he \_\_ and \_\_ the spray of cypress which \_\_ from her breast, (to pull away, to run, to close, to stoop, to pick up, to fall). (Voynich) 13. The fire \_\_ dead, the moon \_\_ down, and the window — grey before I went to sleep, (to be, to go, to be). (Cain) 14. I told him everything. He \_\_ and \_\_, like a figure cut in stone, till I \_\_ (to stand, to listen, to finish) (Voynich) 15. When I \_\_ Viste Grande towards dusk I found two notes awaiting me... (to reach) (Hilton) 16. He \_\_ hardly \_\_ another cigarette when the general \_\_ into the courtyard, (to light, to come). (Maugham) 17. Gemma went slowly down the stairs, Martini following in silence. She \_\_ to look ten years older in these few days, and the gray streak across her hair \_\_ into a broad band, (to grow, to widen) (Voynich) 18. Presently the sounds of voices and footsteps approaching along the terrace roused her from the dreamy state into which she \_\_ (to fall) (Voynich) 19. She was a woman of nearly fifty who \_\_ obviously \_\_ pretty once. (to be) (J. Shaw) 20. They crouched down behind the group of statuary and \_\_ till the watchman \_\_ (to wait, to pass) (Voynich) 21. Moreover, to him [the doctor] the affair was commonplace; it was just a hysterical woman who \_\_ with her lover and \_\_ poison, (to quarrel, to take) (Maugham) 22. The moon \_\_ yet \_\_ I sat in the sultry dark, making patterns with the end of my cigarette and listening, listening, (to rise — negative) (Hansford Johnson) 23. One night there flew over the city a little Swallow. His friends \_\_ away to Egypt six weeks before, but he \_\_ behind. (to go, to stay) (Wilde) 24. By this time Collard's offer \_\_ a thing of nightmare, (to become) (Hansford Johnson) 25. When Alison \_\_ the first strains of the orchestra came stealing out to me from inside the hall, (to disappear) (Cronin) 26. He \_\_ just \_\_ the hall when a stranger \_\_ (to leave, to enter) (Leacock) 27. On glancing at the address, he observed that it contained no name. The stranger \_\_ far, so he made after him to ask it. (to go — negative) (Dickens)



### Exercise 13. Translate into English.

(A) 1. Не успел он пообедать, как ему позвонил приятель. Он только что приехал из Крыма, где провел несколько месяцев. 2. Он не прочел и трех страниц, как его прервали. 3. Иван Иванович любил эти одинокие прогулки, которые с недавнего времени стали его единственным развлечением. 4. Наконец она осталась одна. Гости ушли. 5. Не успела мисс »Бетси узнать, что у миссис Копперфильд родился сын, как она уехала из дому. 6. Когда я ее видел в последний раз, она казалась очень счастливой. Она только, что получила письмо от брата, который вернулся с Севера, где он пробыл долгое время. 7. Я не пробыл и пяти минут в комнате, как дверь отворилась и она вошла. 8. Оливер пробыл в стенах рабочего дома не более четверти часа и едва успел покончить со вторым ломтем хлеба, как мистер Бамбль вернулся и объявил, что мальчик должен немедленно предстать перед советом. 9. Когда мы приехали в санаторий, мы прежде всего пошли к морю.

(B) 1. ...едва дверь за ним прикрылась, Валя бросилась ко мне. (*Тендряков*) 2. Елена закрыла окно. Она дурно спала всю ночь. (*Тургенев*) 3. Завьялов встал, подошел к креслу, присел на подлокотник, и положил руку на плечо Виктора. (*Чаковский*) 4. Даша пошла в столовую с особым чувством: теперь она стала настоящей рабочей. (*Николаева*) 5. Когда я проснулся, на дворе уже было темно. (*Лермонтов*) 6. Молодые люди спустились к Москве-реке и пошли вдоль ее берега. (*Тургенев*) 7. Я смотрел на него [Есенина]... он очень изменился, похудел... (*Шнейдер*) 8. Я не успел заснуть, как от дверей снова донесся голос вахтерши. (*Тендряков*) 9. Они прошли десяток метров, как вдруг Эмануил остановился. (*Котов*) 10. Мы вышли из сакли... Погода прояснилась. (*Лермонтов*) 11. Она между тем кончила письмо и запечатала его. (*Чехов*) 12. Когда поручик Вулич подошел к столу, то все замолчали. (*Лермонтов*) 13....едва я вошел в ее комнату, как кто-то прибежал с сообщением о том, что приехал Есенин. (*Шнейдер*) 14. Стемнело, когда они вышли из землянки. (*Чаковский*) 15. Настало утро; оба они поднялись. (*Тургенев*) 16. Утром, едва я перешагнул порог школы, как почувствовал: что-то изменилось. (*Тендряков*) 17. Я сел за стол, положил перед собой рукопись, закурил... (*Тендряков*) 18. Я стоял, пока машина не свернула за угол. (*Тендряков*) 19. Берсенев еще никогда не говорил с нею, как в тот вечер. (*Тургенев*) 20. После ужина, когда гости уехали, он пошел к себе. (*Чехов*) 21. Варвара Павловна пошла ей навстречу, как только увидела ее. (*Тургенев*) 22. Уже было поздно и темно, когда я снова отворил окно. (*Лермонтов*) 23. Уже совсем стемнело... когда Берсенев... подошел к двери своего приятеля. (*Тургенев*) 24. Аркадий дождался, пока Федот... запряг лошадей. (*Тургенев*) 25. Марианна еще не появилась, как Соломин уже вошел в комнату Нежданова. (*Тургенев*) 26. Едва лишь закрылась за ним дверь, как аудитория зашумела. (*Тендряков*) 27. Елена Емельяновна долго еще сидела в классе, после того как ушел самый плохой и самый любимый ученик Маврикий Толлин. (*Пермяк*)

### Exercise 14. Insert the Past Continuous or Past Perfect.

1. The Gadfly \_\_\_ just \_\_\_ washing the boy, and \_\_\_ him in a warm blanket, when Gemma came in with a tray in her hands. (to finish, to wrap) (*Voynich*) 2. They \_\_\_ the peacock door and stood there, talking, (to reach) (*Galsworthy*) 3. She [Nurse Hopkins] herself \_\_\_ just \_\_\_ and \_\_\_ her bonnet strings when Mary entered. (to come in, to untie) (*Christie*) 4....she could see their faces in a looking-glass. They \_\_\_ evidently \_\_\_ themselves, (to enjoy) (*Mitford*) 5. Mr. Pickwick found that his three companions \_\_\_ and \_\_\_ his arrival to commence breakfast, (to rise, to wait) (*Dickens*) 6. I led her to the sitting room. Antonia \_\_\_ her tears and \_\_\_ her nose again. She greeted Rosemary, (to dry, to powder) (*Murdoch*) 7. When Gemma returned with the milk the Gadfly \_\_\_ the riding-cloak and. \_\_\_ the leather gaiters which Martini \_\_\_ (to put on, to fasten, to bring) (*Voynich*) 8. When I looked up again I saw that she \_\_\_, and \_\_\_ with her hand on the handle of the door, (to move, to stand) (*Du Maurier*) 9. Then, quite suddenly, I noticed a movement in the garden: someone. \_\_\_ from the gate at the far end of the lawn and \_\_\_ rapidly across towards the

house, (to enter, to move) (*Clark*) 10. He hurried out into the big, dim vault of the station... The rain \_\_\_ at the rails and wind was cold after the closed-in carriage, (to lash) (*Lindsay*) 11. Elinor \_\_\_ more than half a dozen steps... when a hand fell on her arm from behind, (to take — negative) (*Christie*) 12. When daylight came the storm \_\_\_ still \_\_\_ but the snow \_\_\_. (to blow, to stop) (*Hemingway*)

### Exercise 15. Translate into English.

(A) 1. Он настроил скрипку и сыграл сонату. 2. Он настроил скрипку и играл сонату. 3. Мистер Мелл отложил книги в сторону и играл на флейте. 4. Мистер Мелл отложил книги в сторону и стал играть на флейте, 5. Том принес воды и побежал играть с приятелями. 6. Том принес воды и играл с приятелями. 7. Корабли вышли из порта и плыли в северном направлении. 8. Корабли вышли из порта и взяли курс на север. 9. Сэм закрыл дверь за Вильджоком и сел у камина. 10. Когда Сари вошла в кухню, Сэм уже закрыл дверь за Вильджоном и мешал огонь в камине. 11. В доме было тихо. Дети уснули. 12. В доме было тихо. Дети спали. 13. Когда я проснулся, солнце уже взошло. 14. Когда я проснулся, солнце уже ярко светило. 15. Когда я вышла из дома, ветер уже стих и светило солнце. 16. На днях, когда я провожала брата, я встретила на вокзале приятельницу, с которой вместе училась в школе и которую не видела много лет. 17. Когда Тавров пришел, Ольга сидела в столовой. Она читала статью, которую написала для журнала. Тавров еще не читал статьи и попросил Ольгу показать ему ее. 18. Когда мальчик вошел в комнату, его отец сидел у камина и читал письмо, которое он получил в его отсутствие. 19. На улице было еще светло, но в конторе уже горели лампы\* Коростелев уже вернулся.

(B) 1. На нижнем этаже у выхода я, наконец, увидел Валю Она разговаривала с Лещевым. (*Тендряков*) 2. Ласкер закончил завтрак и... отдыхал в кресле, когда в дверь постучали. (*Котоз*) 3. Он [Коврин] вышел из дома... Уже садилось солнце... (*Чехов*) 4. Он [Лаврецкий] встал и сел подле нее на скамейку. Она [Лиза] уже не плакала и внимательно глядела на него. (*Тургенев*) 5. В саду в тени высокого ясеня сидели на дерновой скамейке Катя с Аркадием. Лица их изменились с тех пор, как мы их видели в последний раз. (*Тургенев*) 6. Лил сильный дождь, когда Завьялов вышел на улицу. (*Чаковский*) 7. Я взглянул на часы: без десяти минут семь. Собрание уже началось. (*Тендряков*) 8. Вечером к ним пришел старик Гейзман, В полуосвещенной комнате Алексеев играл Брамса, а Тина, Борис Борисович и старик слушали, сидя на балконе. Тина только что прочла письмо от Юрия... (*Николаева*) 9. Маврик вернулся из Верхотурья, когда Илюша уже работал на заводе. (*Пермяк*)

### Exercise 16. Comment on the use of tenses expressing future actions or states.

1. I'm not going to Bertha; I'm going to Craddock direct and I mean to give him a piece of my mind. (*Maugham*) 2. Pearl, be quick and go. Minnie will be wondering why you don't come. (*Maugham*) 3. "Dr. Ramsay is coming to luncheon tomorrow," she said. "I shall tell them both that I'm going to be married to you." (*Maugham*) 4. I'm terribly sorry not to be able to ask you to lunch, but we're having it early in rather a rush and leaving immediately after. (*Murdoch*) 5. I am not going to play at all, I must see to the tea, and I daresay some more people will be coming in presently. (*Maugham*) 6. "Well, so long, anyway, Gretta," Royd called to her. He waved his hand in her direction. "I'll be seeing you again, too. Maybe I'll be seeing you at the Roundabout some night soon." (*Caldwell*) 7. I hope you're going to enjoy staying in the house. Nobody will bother you there. And if you yell in the night, I'll probably hear and I'll rush in to wake you. (*Hilton*) 8. I shall be having a quiet day with Antonia. We're staying in London this time. Rosemary will be at Rembers with Alexander. (*Murdoch*) 9. You'll be sorry for what you've said when you've calmed down and then you'll want me to forgive you. (*Maugham*) 10. "Are you going out again, Miss Jane?" "Not me, I'm off to bed soon with a good book." (*Hilton*)

### Exercise 17. Insert one of the tenses expressing future actions or states (Future Indefinite, Future Continuous, Future Perfect, Present Indefinite, Present Continuous

**or to be going+ infinitive).**

(A) 1. I have not visited the place yet. I \_\_\_ there to-morrow. (to go) 2. Our train \_\_\_ at 8 p. m. to-morrow, so if you \_\_\_ at 5 o'clock we \_\_\_ still \_\_\_ (to start, to come, to pack) 3. At 4 o'clock tomorrow we \_\_\_ packing and by 6 we \_\_\_ with ease, (to begin, to finish) 4. \_\_\_ you \_\_\_ dinner by the time I come back? (to have) 5. Ring me up at II, I \_\_\_ yet. (to sleep—negative)

(B) 1. I \_\_\_ on my round by the time you go, so I'll say good-bye to you now. (to start out) (*Maugham*) 2. "I think you \_\_\_ him," said Elinor, "when you know more of him." (to like) (*Austen*) 3. "Shall we go downstairs and meet the man?" "Let us stay here; he \_\_\_ at our door in a moment, you will see," said Sylvi-ane. (to knock) (*Bennett*) 4. As a number of episodes from this novel \_\_\_ the public through their wireless sets before it is published, a few words of explanation are necessary, (to reach) (*Priestley*) 5. I suppose everyone \_\_\_ me questions and it's so awkward. (to ask) (*Christie*) 6. But you \_\_\_ I won't let you. (to go — negative) (*Murdoch and Priestley*) 7. "When \_\_\_ I \_\_\_ your brother?" said Georgie. (to meet) (*Murdoch*) 8. What \_\_\_ you \_\_\_ this afternoon? (to do) (*Galsworthy*)

**Exercise 18. Translate into English.**

(A) 1. Они начнут строительство клуба в ближайшие дни и закончат его к концу года. 2. Не звоните ей в одиннадцать часов. Она уже будет спать. 3. Позвоните в семь часов. Я думаю, что к этому времени машинистка уже напечатает ваши документы. 4. Я еще буду работать, когда вы вернетесь.

(B) 1. Я тебе вечером позвоню, часов в восемь. (*Слепухин*) 2. В субботу вечером я вас жду. (*Достоевский*) 3. На днях я буду у вас. (*Достоевский*) 4. Надеюсь, вы поймете меня. (*Достоевский*) 5. Доктор, я жду вас завтра в четыре часа. (*Лермонтов*) 6. Я тоже еду в МильЕенский завод. (*Пермяк*) 7. В котором часу ты будешь дома? (*Слепухин*) 8. Приходите завтра на турнир часа в два... Я буду вас ждать. (*Котов*) 9. Запомни: завтра в пять. К этому времени, надеюсь, у тебя настроение изменится. (*Тендряков*) 10. Зина и Настасья Ильинична уезжают?.. Куда они уезжают? (*Слепухин*) 11....вы завтра идете в цирк? (*Слепухин*) 12....что ты собираешься делать? — Не знаю. (*Чаковский*)

**Exercise 19. Insert the Present Perfect or the Present Perfect Continuous.**

1. I \_\_\_ him since he came back from the East, (to see — negative) (*Greene*) 2. "Ever since I was a young girl," said Miss Ley, "I \_\_\_ not to take things seriously..." (to try) (*Maugham*) 3. I will be your friend: I \_\_\_ always \_\_\_ you. (to like) (*Ch. Bronte*) 4. Your wife flies into a temper and stabs a man you \_\_\_ with for over a year, (to work) (*Hilton*) 5. I \_\_\_ for a long time to make you a little present, Bertha, (to want) (*Maugham*) 6. Lord Caversham \_\_\_ some time in the library for Sir Robert, (to wait) (*Wilde*) 7. I \_\_\_ to England for sixteen years, (to be — negative) (*Maugham*) 8. I suppose you know, Peggy dear, I \_\_\_ awfully fond of you for quite a long time, (to be) (*W. Locke*) 9. It is highly probable you \_\_\_ with him for the last three weeks... (to correspond) (*James*) 10. They \_\_\_ the news in the streets since two o'clock, (to yell) (*Conrad*) 11. "How about playing a little something for me?" he said. "Oh, Lonnie! I \_\_\_ for ages. And I'll wake the children." (to play — negative) (*Benson*) 12. The house \_\_\_ in my charge for more than a year, (to be) (*Du Maurier*) 13. "I can't remember my aunt's address. We \_\_\_ from her for years, (to hear — negative) (*Christie*)

**Exercise 20. Translate into English.**

(A) 1. Сколько времени вы меня ждете? 2. Я знаю ее уже два года. 3. Я всегда предпочитала трагедию комедии. 4. Они пишут изложение уже два часа. 5. Сколько времени-вы занимаетесь музыкой? 6. Мне уже давно хочется прочесть эту книгу. 7. Я не имею от него писем с августа. 8. Я не видела словаря с тех пор, как вы его взяли из шкафа. 9. Я чувствую себя очень одиноким с тех пор, как брат уехал. 10. Я очень устала. Я готовилась к экзамену по политической экономии. 11. "Он рассказывал мне ужасные истории», — сказала она, когда Олег вышел. 12. Почему вы все так смотрите на меня? Нина вам говорила что-нибудь обо мне?

(B) 1. Лена сказала: — Я ищу тебя весь вечер. (*Чаковский*) 2. Я не ел с утра... (*Тендряков*) 3. Вы действительно знаете меня шесть лет. (*Котов*) 4. Я прожила с ним [Ващенко] много лет и хорошо его знаю. (*Тендряков*) 5. Я не видел ее уже два месяца. (*Чаковский*) 6. Я тебя ждала три дня. (*Достоевский*) 7. Катерину Федоровну я знал еще с прошлого года. (*Достоевский*) 8. Они живут поблизости, на улице Жак Колло, около тридцати лет — с тех пор, как приехали в Париж. (*Сухомлин*)

**Exercise 21. Insert the Present Continuous or the Present Perfect Continuous.**

1. "Oh, Mr. Craddock, let me come near you," cried Mrs. Branderton, "I \_\_\_ to get at you for twenty minutes." (to try) (*Maugham*) 2. I \_\_\_ here all the morning to see either her or Robert. (to wait) (*tilde*) 3. "What's the matter?" "The matter? The girl's ill. She \_\_\_ " (to die) (*Christie*) 4. My dear girl, what \_\_\_ you \_\_\_ about now? (to think) (*Beresford*) 5. I \_\_\_ so much about it since I received your letter, (to think) (*Marryat*) 6. I \_\_\_ the streets of the city for you for two years and this is the first time I've admitted it even to myself, (to search) (*Shaw*) 7. I hear you \_\_\_ for a new house, (to look) (*Lindsay*) 8. Of course, we have problems, but we \_\_\_ to handle them, and I must say, quite successfully, (to learn) (*Gow and D'Usseau*) 9. When her voice ceased, he moved uneasily and said, "I \_\_\_ well for the last ten days." (to feel — negative) (*Conrad*) 10. She \_\_\_ extraordinary well to-night (to feel) (*Wells*) 11. What else have I to live for but my children? It's you and the rest of them that I \_\_\_ and \_\_\_ for all these years, (to work, to plan) (*Dreiser*)

**Exercise 22. Translate into English.**

1. Зачем вы на меня так внимательно смотрите? (*Достоевский*) 2. Пойдем, Виктор... Бабушка Броня нас ждет. (*Семенухин*) 3. А я вас давно жду, товарищ Елена... (*Пермяк*) 4. Вы меня оскорбляете... извольте выйти вон. (*Тургенев*) 5. Вот уже два года, как я живу с ней в одном доме. (*Тургенев*) 6. Что вы тут делаете?.. Букет вяжете? (*Тургенев*) 7. Она, верно, давно уже наблюдает за мной, ждет, когда я обернусь и замечу ее. (*Тендряков*) 8. Я уже три дня об этом думаю. (*Достоевский*)

**Exercise 23. Insert the Past Indefinite, Past Perfect, or Past Perfect Continuous.**

1. After some desultory conversation, the Director inquired how long he \_\_\_ Montanelli. (to know) (*Voynich*) 2. It was almost dinner-time by then, and we \_\_\_ no food all day, but neither of us was hungry, (to have) (*Hilton*) 3. We \_\_\_ in silence for some time when Ah-Yen spoke, (to smoke) (*Leacock*) 4. The party \_\_\_ already \_\_\_ for a week before I could get away from London, (to sail) (*Snow*) 5. Breakfast \_\_\_ long \_\_\_ on the table, when Arthur came tearing into the room, (to be — negative) (*Voynich*) 6. Mr. Morrough, who \_\_\_ my doctor for some years and \_\_\_ also my friend, came at once, (to be, to be) (*Hansford Johnson*) 7....since his arrival in April he \_\_\_ simply \_\_\_ round the house, helping Ann with the washing up, running errands, (to hang) (*Murdoch*) 8. She \_\_\_ there more than two months when she fell down a flight of steps and hurt her spine, (to be — negative) (*Mansfield*) 9. He found that he \_\_\_ stockstill for over half an hour, wrestling with his thoughts, (to stand) (*Lindsay*) 10. Bertha \_\_\_ at her husband since he came into the room, unable in astonishment to avert her eyes, (to look) (*Maugham*) 11. For a week the Gadfly \_\_\_ in a fearful state, (to lie) (*Voynich*) 12. After he \_\_\_ about three hours, he arrived at the Doctor's house, (to walk) (*Wilde*) 13. The Carrier expected that Tackleton would pay him an early visit, and he was right. He \_\_\_ to and fro before his open door many minutes when he saw the toy merchant coming in his chaise along the road, (to walk — negative) (*Dickens*) 14. They \_\_\_ from noon till sunset, (to journey) (*Ch. Bronte*) 15. Marian broke up their talk, and told Mr. Townsend to run away to her mother, who \_\_\_ for the last half hour to introduce him to Mr. Almond, (to wish) (*James*) 16. I went into a fish-and-chip shop in a poor street near the station. I \_\_\_ since lunch and I ordered myself a twopenny portion of chips, (to eat — negative) (*Cronin*) 17. The feeling of an overhanging disaster, which \_\_\_ ever since his father's stroke, settled down over his mind, (to grow) (*Lindsay*)

**Exercise 24. Translate into English.**

(A) 1. Я две недели гостила у приятельницы. 2. Я уже две недели гостила у

приятельницы, когда получила ваше письмо. 3. Он вчера два часа играл на скрипке. 4. Он уже целый час играл на скрипке, когда мы пришли. 5. Девушка долго играла на рояле, и мы слушали ее с большим удовольствием. 6. Сестра была больна уже несколько дней, когда я узнал об этом. 7. Мересьев долго лежал без сознания, когда его заметили мальчишки из ближайшей деревни. 8. Мальчик начал работать на заводе, где его отец проработал двадцать лет.

**(В)** 1. Лемм долго сидел на своей кровати с нотной тетрадкой на коленях. (*Тургенев*) 2. К вечеру им уже казалось, что они знают друг друга всю жизнь. (*Чаковский*) 3. Она [Таня] долго стояла перед черной доской в вестибюле. (*Слепухин*) 4. Ему [Волынцеву] было тяжело. Он давно любил Наталью. (*Тургенев*) 5. Анна Акимовна была голодна, так как с самого утра ничего не ела. (*Чехов*) 6. Забежала Раечка — уже три дня она не работала. (*Слепухин*) 7. Более часу провел он у ней. (*Тургенев*) 8... Прошло два года с тех пор, как он [Завьялов] видел его [Виктора] в последний раз. (*Чаковский*)

### Exercise 25. Insert the Past Continuous or the Past Perfect Continuous.

1. The four of them went out and joined Mark Gaskell, who \_\_\_ at the extreme end of the terrace by himself, (to sit) (*Christie*) 2. Gretta \_\_\_ through the blowing snow for several minutes when a man, his head lowered against the wind, walked directly into her. (to walk) (*Caldwell*) 3. It continued to rain and at Vienna \_\_\_ still \_\_\_ (to rain) (*Hilton*) 4. We \_\_\_ maybe an hour when she began to lean forward and look out, and then she told me to stop, (to run) (*Cain*) 5. I \_\_\_ at the bar one evening with an acquaintance when the man with the scar came up. (to stand) (*Maugham*) 6. She took his arm, and led him out to the cab that \_\_\_ at the door, (to wait) (*Collins*) 7. When I came down to Burlington to work in the lumber mill, I was only a kid about sixteen. My brother \_\_\_ there already a year... (to work). (*Reed*) 8. Sitting by the window at a table, where she seemed to have been writing or drawing, was a lady, whose head \_\_\_ on her hand, (to rest) (*Dickens*) 9. Nell awoke and saw that it was still night, and that the stars \_\_\_ brightly in the sky. (to shine) (*Dickens*) 10. He \_\_\_ about half an hour when he saw Cornelius coming along the path, (to walk) (*Hardy*) 11. He \_\_\_ of her all the morning: he \_\_\_ of her now. (to think, to think) (*Collins*) 12. When the doctor awoke, Miss Reid \_\_\_ still \_\_\_ (to work) (*Maugham*)

### Exercise 26. Translate into English.

1. Одним утром Анна Михайловна вошла в комнату сына. Он еще спал. (*Короленко*) 2. Несмотря на поздний час, на привокзальной площади было ещелюдно. Шел дождь. (*Слепухин*) 3. Был тихий летний вечер. Дядя Максим сидел в саду. (*Короленко*) 4. Джейн Эйр в течение нескольких минут внимательно рассматривала мистера Рочестера, когда он обернулся и перехватил ее взгляд. 5. Вдруг что-то заставило его обернуться. В дверях стояла Надя... Сколько времени простояла она, наблюдая за мужем? (*Котов*) 6. Она [Лиза] старалась возвращаться домой как можно позднее, когда девушки уже спали. (*Чаковский*) 7. В часов десять, когда я выходил из квартиры... я столкнулся в дверях с внучкой Смига. (*Достоевский*)

### Exercise 27. Insert the Past Continuous, Past Perfect, or Past Perfect Continuous.

1. Abbey resumed the newspaper she \_\_\_ (to read) (*Dickens*) 2. By three o'clock he \_\_\_ all his own cigarettes and those he could borrow from others. He \_\_\_ about lunch, (to finish, to forget) (*Wilson*) 3. When she came out again her tears and cries \_\_\_, but there was a band of rosy flush across her forehead, (to cease) (*Hansford Johnson*) 4. He \_\_\_ still \_\_\_ at her, when two of the prowlers halted on his left, (to gaze) (*Lindsay*) 5. Approaching the door, she found herself face to face with Mr. Linley. He \_\_\_ just \_\_\_ directions to one of the servants, and was re-entering the drawing-room, (to give) (*Collins*) 6. Rosa made a contemptuous gesture. Then she tossed the book she \_\_\_ on to the ground, (to read) (*Murdoch*) 7. I got up from where I \_\_\_ at the Carlton House writing table and went over to the fireplace, (to sit) (*Murdoch*) 8. She looked up at him, and found he \_\_\_ her closely, (to watch) (*Wells*) 9. She was on the edge of tears, as nearly dishevelled as so tidy and businesslike a girl could be. I thought she \_\_\_ (to cry) (*Hansford Johnson*) 10. It \_\_\_, but it \_\_\_, and a street lamp some way off

streaked the roadway with reflections, (to rain \_\_\_ negative, to rain) (*Murdoch*) 11. Cowperwood got up. He was a little afraid now of this deep-seated passion he \_\_\_ (to arouse) (*Dreiser*) 12. She picked up the chair she \_\_\_ in and quickly slipped away with it into the house, (to sit) (*Maugham*) 13. Elinor \_\_\_ still \_\_\_ at this missive... when the door opened, (to stare) (*Christie*) 14. "Oh, don't get up, dear Miss Ley," said the visitor as her hostess slowly rose from the sofa upon which she \_\_\_ so comfortably \_\_\_. (to lie) (*Maugham*)

### Exercise 28. Translate into English.

(A) 1. Она отложила в сторону письмо, которое писала, и задумалась. 2. Она пошла на почту отправить письмо, которое написала накануне. 3. Все еще спали, когда зазвонил телефон. 4. В саду никого не было. Пахло свежескошенной травой. По-видимому, садовники косили. 5. Сад потерял свою прелесть: садовники скосили всю траву. 6. К счастью, он не заметил ее воспаленных глаз и не догадался, что она плакала. 7. Сью внимательно наблюдала за Джонси, когда та открыла глаза. 8. Сью, которая некоторое время наблюдала за своей больной подругой, подошла к ее кровати. 9. Она отложила в сторону книгу, которую читала. 10. Она написала письмо и читала книгу. 11. Пеготти уронила чулок, который она штопала. 12. Пеготти отложила чулок, который уже заштопала.

(B) 1. Нежданов до того удивился, что даже не поднялся с пня, на котором сидел. (*Тургенев*) 2. Одинцова опустила на то же самое кресло, на котором сидела накануне. (*Тургенев*) 3. В это время один офицер, сидевший в углу комнаты, встал. (*Лермонтов*) 4. Она [Елена] быстро захлопнула книгу, которую читала, и отошла от стола. (*Достоевский*) 5. Лена выпустила его руку, которую минуту тому назад так крепко сжимала. (*Чаковский*) 6. Глаза у Сергея покраснели и чуть припухли. Неужели он плакал?.. (*Слепухин*)

### Exercise 29. Comment on the use of the Present Indefinite, Present Continuous, Present Perfect and Present Perfect Continuous.

1. Women **are** constantly **trying** to commit suicide for love, but generally they take care not to succeed. (*Maugham*) 2. You probably **haven't seen** her since those summer holidays when Mum and Dad were abroad. (*Christie*) 3. Gerald, if you **are going away** with Lord Illingworth, go at once. Go before it **kills** me: but don't ask me to meet him. (*Wilde*) 4. There's the car. Arnold's **come back**. I must go and bathe my eyes. I don't want them to see **I've been crying**. (*Maugham*) 5. **I am seeing** the other nurse, Nurse O'Brien, to-day. (*Christie*) 6. As she turns to go, she finds that Bella **has entered** and **is staring** at her and her father with impassive hatred. (*Gow and D'Usseau*) 7. Bella is a Negro woman of fifty who **has been** in the Langdon home for twenty-four years and thus **occupies** a favored position. (*Gow and D'Usseau*) 8. "You **are being** very absurd, Laura," she said coldly. (*Mansfield*) 9. When **I've taken off** my things we shall go into the next room and have tea. (*Mansfield*) 10. **I'm** always **doing** things on the spur of the moment to ray own inconvenience and other people's. (*Maugham*) 11. He has all the virtues. Dr. Ramsay, Miss Glover, even Mrs. Branderton **have been drumming** his praise into my ears. (*Maugham*) 12. Fatty came over to Lanny's table. A fat, cheerful Greek with laughing wrinkles at the sides of his eyes. "You're alone to-day," Fatty said. Lanny nodded and lit a cigarette. "**I'm leaving** to-night." "Leaving?" "Yes, Fatty. **I'm going** home to the Karroo." (*Abrahams*) 13. D'you know that Robert Qldham and Caroline **have been** madly in love with one another for the last ten years? They've **waited** all this time, and now at last Caroline is free. (*Maugham*) 14. This will be the death of her when she **hears** it. (*Dreiser*) 15. You **have** told my learned friend that you **have known** Mr. Pickwick a long time. (*Dickens*) 16. He is always **breaking** the law. (*Shaw*) 17. "It is Mrs. Sedley's coach, sister," said Miss Jemima. "Sambo, the black servant, **has just rung** the bell." (*Thackeray*) 18. She **doesn't like** me... She's always **saying** sharp things to me. (*Christie*) 19. "I think you **are being** very wise. A complete holiday, a complete rest, that is what you need. **Have you decided** where you **are going**?" "**I've changed** my mind," I said. "**I don't think I'm doind** away after all." (*Murdoch*) 20. Ah,

Miss Marple. Good morning. Glad you've **come**. My wife's **been ringing** you **up** like a lunatic. (*Christie*) 21. A woman never acknowledges such a nondescript age as forty-eight unless she **is going** to marry a widower with seventeen children. (*Maugham*) 22. "By the way, you've **been talking** about me. I see it written in your faces. Your silence tells me all. I could even guess what you've **been saying**..." "You've **been listening**," Gladys cried, making a face at him. (*Priestley*) 23. You **are being** far too romantic about it. (*Hilton*) 24. "Do you like me at all, Bertha?" he asked. "**I've been wanting** to ask you ever since you came home." (*Maugham*) 25. Years **have passed** since we began this life. (*Dickens*) 26. **I've been making** some sandwiches. Won't you come up and have some? (*Christie*) 27. I cannot imagine why **I've lived** thirty years with a man I dislike so much. (*Maugham*) 28. "Antonia **has been telling** me about your flat," said Rosemary. "It sounds ideal. And there's a heavenly view over to Westminster Cathedral." (*Murdoch*) 29. **We've been going** to pictures about twice a week ever since. (*Maugham*) 30. **I've flown** a kite every Saturday afternoon ever since I was a kid and **I'm going** to fly a kite as long as ever I **want** to. (*Maugham*) 31. I **know** this is an old story, I **don't understand** it myself and if I set it **down** in black and white it is only with a faint hope that when **I have written** it I may get a clearer view of it. (*Maugham*) 32. Who **is coming** to tea? (*Wilde*) 33. "I don't know what's been the matter with me. **I've been** so miserable, Eddie..." "You've **been crying**." (*Maugham*)

**Exercise 30. Insert the Present Indefinite, Present Continuous, Present Perfect, or Present Perfect Continuous.**

1. I \_\_\_ the bell for the last quarter of an hour, (to ring) (*Maugham*) 2. I want to see how much he \_\_\_ since I saw him last, (to change) (*Voynich*) 3. \_\_\_ you \_\_\_ any word from her since she left here? (to have) (*Dickens*) 4. I don't want to take a cure at all. I am perfectly happy. All my life I \_\_\_ perfectly happy. (to be) (*Hemingway*) 5. Signora Grassini greeted Gemma affectionately, exclaiming in a loud whisper: "How charming you \_\_\_ tonight!" (to look) (*Voynich*) 6. Here's my keys. I \_\_\_ (to leave) (*Gow and D'Usseau*) 7. I \_\_\_ to Mr. Boldwood since the autumn. I want to explain. I \_\_\_ to do it ever since I returned, (to speak — negative, to long) (*Hardy*) 8. I requested them to suspend their decision until they. \_\_\_ my narrative, (to read) (*Collins*) 9. Wait till you \_\_\_ Moose and \_\_\_ with him. (to see, to talk) (*Aldridge*) 10. "But what \_\_\_ we \_\_\_?" she asked. "I \_\_\_ about it a lot. I \_\_\_ about it all week. But I \_\_\_ what to do." (to do, to think, to think, to know — negative) (*Caldwell*) 11. I must not let my eyes get all red and swollen, or Henry'll know I \_\_\_ (to cry) (*Maugham*) 12. The sun \_\_\_ with different degrees of heating power in different parts of the world, (to shine) 13. "Look," I said, "I \_\_\_ Francis very well. I \_\_\_ him since we were very young men." (to know, to know) (*Snow*) 14. "Well, I \_\_\_ that Iris isn't going to be married," I said after a while, (to hear) (*Maugham*) 15. He says he \_\_\_ to the same tunes for fifteen years, (to listen) (*Maugham*) 16. Cesare you and I \_\_\_ friends for all these years, and I \_\_\_ never \_\_\_ you what really happened about Arthur, (to be, to tell) (*Voynich*) 17. What are we going to say to the king when he \_\_\_? (to come in) (*Shaw*) 18. "Dear little Hans," cried the Miller, "I am in great trouble. My little boy \_\_\_ off a ladder and \_\_\_ himself." (to fall, to hurt) (*Wilde*) 19. "As I \_\_\_ you for the past six months," he said, "business is bad." (to tell) (*J. Shaw*) 20. "This other gentleman," cried Mr. Pickwick, "is, as you will see when you \_\_\_ the letter... a very near relative, or I should rather say a very particular friend of your son's." (to read) (*Dickens*) 21. Maude: You \_\_\_ both; \_\_\_ forward to this moment ever since you met one another. Caroline: And now it \_\_\_ (to look, to come) (*Maugham*) 22. But you ought to have been telling your tale. Now you begin and when you \_\_\_, we'll go back and see what \_\_\_ really \_\_\_ (to finish, to happen) (*Priestley*) 23. What \_\_\_ you. \_\_\_ with yourself since I've been away? (to do) (*Christie*) 24. You \_\_\_ here two weeks. \_\_\_ you \_\_\_ your opinion of the South? (to be, to change) (*Gow and D'Usseau*) 25. "I am very hungry and tired," replied Oliver. "I \_\_\_ a long way. I \_\_\_ these seven days." (to walk, to walk) (*Dickens*) 26. My good man, Signora Bolla \_\_\_ head nurse in general to all of us. She \_\_\_ after sick people ever since she was in short frocks, and \_\_\_ it better than any sister of mercy I \_\_\_ I needn't leave any directions if she \_\_\_ (to be, to look, to do, to know, to

come) (*Voynich*) 27. As Arthur mounted the stone steps leading to the street, a girl in a cotton dress and straw hat ran up to him with outstretched hands. "Arthur! Oh, I am so glad!.. I \_\_\_ here for half an hour... Arthur, why \_\_\_ you \_\_\_ at me like that? Something \_\_\_ Arthur, what \_\_\_ to you? Stop!" (to wait, to look, to happen, to come) (*Voynich*) 28. "Mr. Bithem here yet?" asked Miss Mass. "Oh, yes, dear," cried the chorus. "He \_\_\_ here for ages. We all \_\_\_ here for more than an hour." (to be, to wait) (*Mansfield*) 29. "Are we alone now?" "The waiter \_\_\_ and the door is locked." (to go) (*Caldwell*) 30. I \_\_\_ happy. I \_\_\_ always \_\_\_ happy, (to be, to be) (*Hemingway*)

### Exercise 31. Translate into English.

(A) 1. Ты уложила свои вещи? Такси уже десять минут ждет у дверей. 2. Теперь я поняла. 3. Он уже пять месяцев заведует лабораторией и многому научился за это время. 4. Я приду к вам, если только меня не задержат на работе. 5. Я всегда интересовалась естественными науками. 6. Кто взял мой словарь? Я уже полчаса ищу его. 7. Мы здесь уже с начала месяца, но не было еще ни одного солнечного дня. 8. Она вечно говорит по телефону.

(B) 1. «Виктор, ты меня слышишь?» — «Да, слышу», — ответил он! (*Семенухин*) 2. Что с вами?.. Или вы что потеряли? (*Тургенев*) 3. Здравствуйте, целую вечность вас не видела. (*Тендряков*) 4. Она [Наташка] всегда встает раньше меня. (*Тендряков*) 5. Ваш сын — один из самых замечательных людей, с которыми я когда-либо встречался. (*Тургенев*) 6. «Мы давно не видались»... — «Давно, и переменились оба во многом». (*Лермонтов*) 7. Почему же ты не здороваешься с ним, Алеша? Ведь ты давно знаешь его! (*Коптяева*) 8. Ты что делаешь сегодня вечером? (*Слепухин*) 9. Прошла почти неделя, а я еще не познакомился с Литовскими. (*Лермонтов*) 10. Треплев (*нетерпеливо*). Где Заречная? Дорн. Она уехала домой. (*Чехов*) 11. Ты не заболела? — Нет, Сережа... я просто не ела с самого утра... (*Слепухин*) 12. Инсаров послезавтра приезжает в нашу деревеньку и будет жить со мной на одной квартире. (*Тургенев*) 13. Игнатию Тимофеевичу давно хочется жить самостоятельно. (*Пермяк*) 14. Вы, кухня... не похудели в эти восемь лет. (*Тургенев*) 15. Что же вы намерены теперь сделать? (*Тургенев*) 16... если я сумею помочь тебе, я буду... счастлива. (*Тендряков*) 17. Как-то он [Ласкер] теперь сыграет? Почти десять лет он не играл в шахматы. (*Котов*) 18. Я ее давно знаю, и хорошо ее знаю. (*Тургенев*) 19. Я знаю, кто нас подслушивает в эту минуту... Г-жа Сипягина подслушивает нас. (*Тургенев*) 20. Пси́на, ты откуда? Я тебя ушиб? (*Чехов*) 21. Я, милая, давно уже ничего не читал... Впрочем, иногда читаю Жюль Верна. (*Чехов*) 22. Андрей Васильевич!.. Ваша Тонечка у нас. И вас ждем. Толя приехал. (*Тендряков*) 23. Она [Лена] уже скрылась за поворотом, а Завьялов все стоит и смотрит в окно. (*Чаковский*)

### Exercise 32. Comment on the use of the Past Indefinite, Past Continuous, Past Perfect and Past Perfect Continuous.

1. The cook **used** to snatch away the letters from home, before she [Ma Parker] **had read** them. (*Mansfield*) 2. As she neared the kitchen, Chris came from the garage where he'd **been attending** to a lorry with a magneto trouble, wiping his hands on some waste. (*Lindsay*) 3. She **was** always **telling** herself that the only rational course was to make Edward a final statement of her intentions, then break off all communications. (*Maugham*) 4. I realized that he **had come away** with me in order to discuss once more what he **had been** already **discussing** for hours with his sister-in-law. (*Maugham*) 5. I saw that it was 2 o'clock. We **had been** sitting there an hour and a half. (*Du Maurier*) 6. It **had long been** dark when Arthur rang at the front door of the great house in the Via Borra. (*Voynich*) 7. It was three o'clock. The wind **had fallen**, the moon **was shining** over the quiet sea. (*Christie*) 8. Every Sunday morning Ethel **would read** aloud while Ma Parker did her washing. (*Mansfield*) 9. We'd **got** to Ruby's room by then. She wasn't there, of course, but she'd **been** there, because the dress she **had been wearing** was **lying** across a chair. (*Christie*) 10. To take off her boots or to put them on **was** an agony to her, but it **had been** an agony for



years. (*Mansfield*) 11. Here I saw this man, whom I **had lost sight** of some time; for I **had been travelling** in the provinces. (*Dickens*) 12. When the Gadfly raised his head the sun **had set**, and the red glow **was dying** in the west. (*Voynich*) 13. It was Sunday morning and they **had all been back** at Grayhallock for three days. (*Murdoch*) 14. Rainborough noticed that she **had been crying**, her face was stained with tears... (*Murdoch*) 15. Ann **was** certainly **being** bravely cheerful in a way which both exasperated Hugh and half compelled his admiration. (*Murdoch*) 16. The moment the noise **ceased**, she **glided** from the room; **ascended** the stairs with incredible softness and silence; and was lost in the gloom above. (*Dickens*) 17. We **hadn't been married** a month before I was out of love with him. He was in Lincolnshire at the time, and **I was living** near him. (*Hansford Johnson*), 18. When Cowperwood **reached** the jail, Jasper was there. (*Dreiser*) 19. Susan Nipper stood opposite to her young mistress one morning, as she folded and sealed a note she had been writing. (*Dickens*) 20. The whole party arrived in safety at the Bush before Mr. Pickwick **had recovered** his breath. (*Dickens*) 21. He [Hugh] jumped to feel Ann's clasp upon his arm. She **had been saying** something to him. (*Murdoch*) 22. He **had** scarcely **had time** to form this conclusion, when a window above stairs was thrown up. (*Dickens*) 23. The door was just going to be closed...when an inquisitive boarder, who **had been peeping** between the hinges, set up a fearful screaming. (*Dickens*) 24. Mr. Pecksniff and his fair daughters **had not stood** warming themselves at the fire ten minutes, when the sound of feet was heard upon the stairs. (*Dickens*) 25. He [Cowperwood]... **was** forever **asking** questions with a keen desire for an intelligent reply. (*Dreiser*) 26. He turned off the electric light. The electric light **had been burning** all night. (*Hemingway*) 27....she **would go on** discussing a book she said she had read but manifestly **hadn't** or she **would break up** a dull conversation with some fantastic irrelevance for which everyone was secretly grateful. (*Hilton*) 28. When Katie **brought** in the tea-tray, the boy **opened** his eyes and **sat up** with a bewildered air. (*Voynich*) 29. When we were boy and girl we **used to** call each other by our Christian names. (*Maugham*) 30. There were bits of the work that, because I **had been doing** them so long, I knew better than anyone else. (*Snow*) 31. He **had sat down** with the child on his knees, and **was helping** her to put the flowers in order. (*Voynich*) 32. He **had sat** ruminating about the matter for some time, when the voice of Roker demanded whether he might come in. (*Dickens*) 33. He seemed to be quietly and carefully deciding what he **was going** to say. (*Murdoch*) 34. There was no doubt that their arrival **had transformed** the factory for her. Rosa **had been working** in the factory for about two years. Before that she **had been** a journalist. (*Murdoch*) 35. After dinner Ruby came and sat with us in the lounge. She remained even after the dancing **had started**. We **had arranged** to play bridge later, but we **were waiting** for Mark... and also for Josie. She **was going** to make a fourth with us. (*Christie*) 36. She **used to** sit with him and his family a lot. He **used to** take her for drives sometimes. (*Christie*) 37. George made no answer, and we found... that he **had been** asleep for some time. (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 38. She talked and laughed and positively forgot until **he had come in**... that Pearl Fulton **had not turned up**. (*Mansfield*) 39. Some years ago, when I was the Editor of a Correspondence Column, I **used to** receive heartbroken letters from young men asking for advice and sympathy. (*Leacock*) 40. I took the sculls. I **had not been pulling** for more than a minute or so, when George noticed something black floating on the water. (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 41. The voice **had** no sooner **ceased** than the room was shaken with such violence that the windows rattled in their frames. (*Dickens*) 42. The figure **had** suddenly **retreated** from the gate, and **was running** back hastily to the mill. (*Ch. Bronte*) 43. As he was in dinner dress, Fanny asked where he **had been dining**. (*Dickens*)

### **Exercise 33. Insert the Past Indefinite, Past Continuous, Past Perfect or Past Perfect Continuous,**

1. Then she found that the tears \_ a \_ quietly \_ from her eyes. Perhaps they \_ for a long time, (to flow, to flow) (*Murdoch*) 2. One day of the new year she \_ as usual at her window when Edward came prancing up the drive on horseback, (to sit).(*Maugham*) 3. He

and I \_\_\_ friends since our early twenties. At this time he was fifty-two, and already an elder statesman of science. (to be) (*Snow*) 4. I \_\_\_ out Honor's letter and \_\_\_ it, and \_\_\_ to the post. The fog \_\_\_ When I \_\_\_ I \_\_\_ some biscuits and \_\_\_ myself with whisky and hot milk, (to copy, to seal, to go, to clear, to return, to eat, to dose) (*Murdoch*) 5. He told me that an American Signore \_\_\_ there for three months, (to stay) (*Maugham*) 6. She [Aileen] stole downstairs and out into the vestibule, opening the outer door and looking out into the street. The lamps \_\_\_ already \_\_\_ in the dark, and a cool wind \_\_\_ (to flare, to blow) (*Dreiser*) 7. It was true that we \_\_\_ one another almost intimately! for five and twenty years, (to know) (*Maugham*) 8. I \_\_\_ hardly \_\_\_ more than the first three chapters when my attention was diverted by a conversation going on in the front of the store, (to read) (*Leacock*) 9. She \_\_\_ mortally with my husband only ten minutes ago. (to quarrel) (*Shaw*) 10. He \_\_\_ scarcely \_\_\_ outside the door when he heard Wardle's voice talking loudly, (to get) (*Dickens*) 11. The next day he \_\_\_ some honeysuckle against the porch, when he heard the Miller's voice calling to him from the road, (to nail up) (*Wilde*) 12. Roddy \_\_\_ rapidly and nervously up and down the room for a minute or two. (to walk) (*Christie*) 13. I knew right away that there was the place I \_\_\_. all my life, (to look for) (*Maugham*) 14. Half-past eleven. He [the Gadfly] \_\_\_ still \_\_\_ though the hand was stiff and swollen, (to file) (*Voynich*) 15. A few seconds after the stranger \_\_\_ to lead Mrs. Budger to her carriage, he darted swiftly from the room, (to disappear) (*Dickert*) 16. At nine o'clock that evening a long black Packard roadster drew up to her door, and Arnie stepped out of the front seat where he \_\_\_ with the driver and a girl between them, (to sit) (*Wilson*) 17. I do not stop to say what adventures he began to imagine, or what career to devise for himself before he \_\_\_ three miles from home, (to ride) (*Thackeray*) 18. Mrs. Bantley put down the telephone receiver. She \_\_\_ up twice and each time the answer \_\_\_ the same: Mrs. Marple was out. (to ring, to be) (*Christie*) 19. The sun \_\_\_ a long way up and it \_\_\_ to get really hot. (to move, to begin) (*Abrahams*) 20. He was in the extremity of indecision and very wounded by Rosa's refusal to help him. She \_\_\_ even \_\_\_ him for the last few days, (to avoid) (*Murdoch*) 21. The light in his flat showed that Mrs. Simpson \_\_\_ in for him. (to wait) (*Greene*) 22. I called on Mrs. Strickland before I left. I \_\_\_ her for some time, and I noticed changes in her; it was not only that she \_\_\_ older, thinner, and more lined; I think her character \_\_\_. (to see — negative, to be, to alter) (*Maugham*) 23. He \_\_\_ since nine that morning and his stomach \_\_\_ with hunger, (to eat — negative, to growl) (*Shaw*) 24. They \_\_\_ no sooner \_\_\_ at this point than a most violent and startling knocking was heard at the door, (to arrive) (*Dickens*) 25. The old lady was dressed out in a brocaded gown which \_\_\_ the light for twenty years, (to see — negative) (*Dickens*) 26. Very often, afterwards, in the midst of their talk, he would break off, to try to understand what it was the waves \_\_\_ always \_\_\_ (to say) (*Dickens*) 27. The women and children and old men \_\_\_ Now he was alone with his mother in the little two-roomed shack, (to go) (*Abrahams*) 28. I tried to feel my heart. I could not feel my heart. It \_\_\_ beating, (to stop) (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 29. After he \_\_\_ there some time, he sold the sack of flour for a very good price, (to wait) (*Wilde*) 30. Mr. Moore now \_\_\_ silent for several minutes, (to sit) (*Ch. Bronte*) 31. I think he showed me about thirty canvases. It was the result of the six years during which he \_\_\_ (to paint) (*Maugham*) 32. Grimly she began to pack her goods and to prepare to leave the hovel. It \_\_\_ for days and water \_\_\_ up on the earthen floor... (to rain, to well) (*Buck*) 33. Seven o'clock \_\_\_ hardly \_\_\_ striking on the following morning when Mr. Pickwick's comprehensive mind was aroused from the state of unconsciousness in which slumber \_\_\_ it, by a loud knocking at the chamber door, (to cease, to plunge) (*Dickens*) 34. When the Gadfly \_\_\_ himself that no one \_\_\_ at the spy-hole he \_\_\_ the piece of bread and carefully \_\_\_ it away. In the middle was the thing he \_\_\_, a bundle of small files, (to satisfy, to watch, to take up, to crumble, to expect) (*Voynich*) 35. Gemma \_\_\_ the room and. \_\_\_ for a little while looking out of the window. When she \_\_\_, the Gadfly \_\_\_ again \_\_\_ on the table and \_\_\_ his eyes with one hand. He \_\_\_ evidently \_\_\_ her presence, (to cross, to stand, to turn round, to lean, to cover, to forget) (*Voynich*) 36. He \_\_\_ the key out of the lock, \_\_\_ the door after he \_\_\_ through it; \_\_\_

the key in his pocket, and \_\_\_ into the garden, (to take, to secure, to pass, to put, to go down) (*Collins*) 37. It \_\_\_ still \_\_\_ It \_\_\_ for days. I arrived at Hereford Square, \_\_\_ the water off my overcoat and \_\_\_ it up, and \_\_\_ into the drawing room. A bright fire \_\_\_ and the lamps were, all on.-. Antonia, who \_\_\_ by the fire, jumped up to welcome me... She \_\_\_ me and \_\_\_ what sort of day I \_\_\_. (to rain, to rain, to shake, to hang, to tramp, to burn, to read, to kiss, to ask, to have) (*Murdoch*) 38. It was in this direction that her mind — when her father sent for her to come to him in his room. He \_\_\_ home from his office early in the afternoon and by good luck found her in. She \_\_\_ no desire to go out into the world these last few days, (to run, to come, to have) (*Dreiser*) 39. Arthur took out of his portmanteau a framed picture, carefully wrapped up. It was a crayon portrait of Montanelli, which \_\_\_ from Rome only a few days before. He \_\_\_ this precious treasure when Julia's page \_\_\_ in a supper-tray on which the old Italian cook, who \_\_\_ Gladys before the harsh new mistress \_\_\_, \_\_\_ such little delicacies as she considered her dear signorino might permit himself to eat. (to come, to unwrap, to bring, to serve, to come, to place) (*Voynich*) 40. The first person upon whom Arthur's eyes fell, as he \_\_\_ the room where the students' little gatherings were held, was his old playmate, Dr. Warren's daughter. She \_\_\_ in a corner by the window, listening with an absorbed and earnest face to what one of the "initiators", a tall young Lombard in a threadbare coat, \_\_\_ to her. During the last few months she \_\_\_ and \_\_\_ greatly, and now \_\_\_ a grown-up young woman... She was dressed all in black, and \_\_\_ a black scarf over her head, as the room \_\_\_ cold and draughty. The initiator \_\_\_ passionately \_\_\_ to her the misery of the Calabrian peasantry, (to enter, to sit, to say, to change, to develop, to look, to throw, to be, to describe) (*Voynich*) 41. They \_\_\_ in this way about three miles, when Mr. Wardle, who \_\_\_ of the window for two or three minutes, suddenly \_\_\_ his face and \_\_\_ in breathless eagerness, "Here they are!" (to travel, to look out, to draw in, to exclaim) (*Dickens*) 42. He \_\_\_ on the step for some time..., when he was roused by observing that a boy, who \_\_\_ him carelessly some minutes before, \_\_\_, and \_\_\_ now \_\_\_ him... from the opposite side of the street, (to crouch, to pass, to return, to survey) (*Dickens*) 43. When the Gadfly \_\_\_ into Zita's room she \_\_\_ before a mirror, fastening one of the sprays into her dress. She \_\_\_ apparently \_\_\_ her mind to be good-humoured and \_\_\_ to him with a little cluster of crimson buds tied together, (to come, to stand, to make up, to come up) (*Voynich*) 44. He \_\_\_ about half an hour ago. (to arrive) (*Wilde*) 45. Godfrey rose and took his breakfast earlier than usual, but lingered in the wainscoted parlour V'H his younger brothers \_\_\_ their mea! and \_\_\_. (to finish, to go out) (*Eliot*)

### Exercise 34. Translate into English.

(A) 1. Сэм, негритянский мальчик, очень любил рисовать. 2. В детстве Сэм постоянно что-нибудь рисовал. 3. Сэм уже несколько недель посещал класс рисования, когда он начал рисовать красную розу. 4. Когда мисс Ролстон подошла к Сэму, он уже кончил рисовать розу и рисовал негритянскую девушку. 5. Сэм некоторое время рисовал негритянскую девушку, когда мисс Ролстон подошла к нему. 6. Сэм не рисовал и десяти минут, когда мисс Ролстон подошла к нему. 7. Мисс Ролстон подошла к Сэму и остановилась позади него. 8. Мисс Ролстон подошла к Сэму и стояла позади него. 9. Мисс Ролстон подождала, пока Сэм не окончил рисунок. 10. Рисунок был превосходен. Хотя Сэм взял только несколько уроков, он сделал большие успехи. 11. Мисс Ролстон взяла рисунок и обещала отвезти его в Филадельфию вместе с рисунками, которые он закончил раньше. 12. Заведующий художественным отделом просмотрел рисунки, которые мисс Ролстон принесла ему. Рисунки ему очень понравились, но он отказался их принять, когда узнал, что художник — негр. 13. Мисс Ролстон пробыла в Филадельфии около недели. 14. Мисс Ролстон пробыла в Филадельфии около недели, прежде чем поняла, что ничего не может сделать для Сэма.

(B) 1. Когда Давид приехал в Салемскую школу, директор и его семья отдыхали на берегу моря. 2. Когда Давид приехал в школу, там никого не было:

были каникулы — и мальчишки уехали домой. 3. Давид месяц жил в Салемской школе, когда вернулись мальчишки. 4. Мистер Мелл несколько лганут играл на флейте, когда Давид заснул. 5. Когда мистер Мелл вошел в комнату, Давид искал собаку.

(С) 1. Элиза была очень утомлена, так как целый день ходила. 2. Она не могла переправиться через реку — паромы перестали ходить. 3. Элиза легко нашла дорогу к деревне, так как часто бывала там. 4. Элиза подошла к кровати, где спал ее мальчик. 5. Мальчик спал уже около двух часов, когда преследователи приехали в деревню.

(D) 1. Мересьев одиннадцать дней полз с перебитыми ногами, когда его подобрала партизаны. 2. В госпитале Мересьев старался узнать, уменьшилась ли опухоль, упала ли или поднялась температура. 3. В течение недели в палате № 42 было только четыре человека. Затем привезли нового больного. 4. К началу следующего дня новый больной со всеми познакомился.

(E) 1. Лиза изумилась: она еще никогда не видела своей умной и рассудительной тетки в таком состоянии. (Тургенев) 2. Старушка, сидевшая с Марьей Дмитриевной под окошком, была та самая тетка, сестра отца, с которой она провела несколько уединенных лет в Покровском. (Тургенев) 3. Базаров вернулся, сел за стол и начал поспешно пить чай. (Тургенев) 4. Когда князь Василий вошел в гостиную, княгиня тихо говорила с пожилой дамой о Пьере. (Л. Толстой) 5. Уолтер оставил за собой поле и брел по направлению к дому, когда услышал голос женщины, громко назвавшей его по имени. 6. Я попал в институт, когда совсем стемнело. Вахтерша... вязала у двери шерстяной носок. (Тендряков) 7. Я вдруг почувствовал голод: с утра ничего не ел. (Тендряков) 8. Под потолком, на длинном шнурке, висела клетка с чижом; он беспрестанно чирикал и прыгал, а клетка беспрестанно качалась и дрожала. (Тургенев) 9. Не успел он [Шубин] к ней приблизиться, как опять его сигарочница летела через дорожку. (Тургенев) 10. Когда я снова посмотрел на крышу, девушки там не было. (Лермонтов) 11. Только в четвертом вагоне второго класса увидел он [Алехин] незнакомца. Тот читал газету. (Котов) 12. Гости и хозяйева собрались в маленькой гостиной... Максим разговаривал со своим старым товарищем, молодые люди сидели молча у открытого окна. (Короленко) 13. Когда она [Каштанка] опомнилась, музыка уже не играла... Она перебежала дорогу к тому месту, где оставила хозяина, но столяра там уже не было. (Чехов) 14. Аркадий крепко стиснул ему руку и долго ничего не говорил. Предшествовавшую ночь он всю не спал, и не курил, и почти ничего не ел уже несколько дней. (Тургенев) 15. Лиза была уже в церкви, когда он [Лаврецкий] пришел. Давно не был он в церкви. (Тургенев) 16. Не больше как через полчаса она [Каштанка] уже сидела на полу в большой, светлой комнате... и с любопытством глядела на незнакомца, который сидел за столом и обедал. Он ел и бросал ей куски. (Чехов) 17. Я ведь еще вчера приехала... Ты уже спал. Не хотела будить тебя. (Пермяк) 18. Она уронила журнал на колени и стала смотреть в окно. (Котов) 19. Лаврецкий не успел еще подняться со стула, как уже она обняла его. (Тургенев) 20. Тетка [собака] пошла в гостиную и поглядела за шкаш хозяин не скушал куриной лапки, она лежала на своем месте. (Чехов) 21. Когда я вошел, все замолчали. (Лермонтов) 22. Когда пришли домой, Егор Семенович уже встал. (Чехов) 23. Я бросил перо и сел *Щ* окна. Смеркалось. (Достоевский) 24. Он [Володя] уже уходил, когда Лена включила радио. (Слепухин) 25. Не прошло десяти минут, как на конце площадки показался тот, которого мы ожидали. (Лермонтов) 26. Не успел Сипягин перешагнуть порог; двери, как Паклин соскочил со стула. (Тургенев) 27. Обыкновенно вечерами хозяин уезжал куда-то. (Чехов) 28. Мистер Домби подождал, пока миссис Пипчин перестала трясти головой. 29. Все время пока он говорил, я пристально наблюдал его. (Достоевский) 30. Как только Алеша кончил, князь вдруг разразился смехом. (Достоевский)

### Exercise 35. Translate into English.

(A) 1. Дым рассеялся, и все увидели, что Овод упал. 2. Ворота открылись и закрылись. Монтанелли стоял во дворе. «Я пришел посмотреть на него», — сказал он. 3. Солдаты вскрикнули: окровавленная фигура на земле опять начала двигаться. 4. Через несколько часов Маркони пошел к Мартини, чтобы рассказать ему, что произошло. 5. «Когда он уйдет, вы должны отдохнуть. Вы сегодня слишком много работали», — сказал Мартини Джемме. 6. Мартини посмотрел на Джемму. За эти несколько дней она постарела на десять лет.

(B) 1. Молодые художники жили несколько месяцев вместе, прежде чем Джонси заболела воспалением легких. 2. Она была больна уже несколько дней и плохо выглядела. 3. В то время как Сью рисовала, она слышала голос Джонси. Джонси смотрела в окно и считала. 4. Джонси сказала: «Когда упадет последний лист, я умру». 5. «Не смотри в окно, пока я не кончу свою работу», — попросила Сью подругу. 6. Сью рисовала своего «Старого шахтера» около часа. 7. Сью рисовала своего «Старого шахтера» около часа, когда наконец почувствовала смертельную усталость и легла спать. 8. Когда Сью проснулась на следующее утро, Джонси пристально смотрела на опущенную штору. Она думала о последнем листе — думала о нем, быть может, уже не один час. 9. Сью отложила кисть и пошла готовить бульон для Джонси. 10. Сью отложила кисть в сторону и готовила бульон для Джонси. 11. Старый Берман постоянно говорил о своем шедевре. 12. Умиравший художник был счастлив — он создал свое великое произведение.

(C) 1. Ленни семь лет жил в Кейптауне, когда он решил вернуться домой. 2. Ленни сказал: «Я возвращаюсь домой; я не был дома семь лет». 3. Много лет Ленни мечтал вернуться домой и работать для своего народа. 4. Ленни долгое время мечтал о том, чтобы уехать из Кейптауна, прежде чем сообщил друзьям о своих планах. 5. Ленни долго стоял на дороге, ведущей в деревню. Становилось темно. 6. Ленни подошел к кофейне, где ужинали трое белых. 7. Когда Ленни подошел к деревне, он увидел свою мать, которая бежала ему навстречу. 8. Мать Ленни следила за сыном, пока он готовил для нее ужин. 9. Когда Ленни, проснулся, он почувствовал, что кто-то смотрит на него. 10. Он открыл глаза и увидел сестру, которую не видел много лет. П. Мейбл подошла к Ленни до того, как он проснулся, и с любопытством смотрела на него. 12. К тому времени, когда Ленни вернулся домой, Мейбл стала здоровой восемнадцатилетней девушкой. 13. Когда Ленни проснулся, его мать уже встала и приготавливала чай. 14. Ленни был рад увидеть места, где он играл в детстве. 15. Ленни наблюдал за людьми, окружавшими его. Среди них была Фиета. Он видел ее раньше. 16. Ленни был поражен: Фиета выразила то, что он смутно чувствовал. 17. «Я как раз собирался послать за вами», — сказал священник. 18. Священник сказал Ленни: «Среди нас никогда не было образованного человека». 19. Ленни провел много лет в Кейптауне, и бедность и страдания его народа производили на него тяжелое впечатление.

(D) 1. С тех пор как вы мне капельки дали... Митя спит хорошо. (Тургенев) 2. Как только Нежданов вошел в переднюю, Сипягин, который уже искал его..., представил его жене. (Тургенев) 3. Базаров вдруг раскрыл глаза. «Что ты сказал?» — «Я говорю, что Анна Сергеевна Одинцова здесь и привезла к тебе доктора». (Тургенев) 4. А от нее он узнал, что она выросла в Петербурге, но вышла замуж в С, где живет уже два года... (Чехов) 5. «А где же Аркадий Николаевич?» — спросила хозяйка и, узнав, что он не показывался уже более часа, послала за ним. (Тургенев) 6....дядя Саша куда-то уехал как раз в то время, когда она [Таня] сдавала экзамены... (Слепухин) 7. Горячие слезы закапали на подбородок Александра... «О чем вы плачете, Зина?» — «От счастья, Алеша». (Куприн) 8. «А с бароном вы давно знакомы?» — «Я нынешней зимой с ним в Москве встретился». (Тургенев) 9. «К сожалению, сударыня, вы не ошиблись... Мальчик, действительно, слеп»... — «Я знала давно», — сказала она

[мать] тихо. (*Короленко*) 10. «Надо идти!» — подумала она [Лиза], как только узнала о приезде Лаврецкой. (*Тургенев*) 11. Крошка Эмили преодолела свою застенчивость и сидела рядом с Давидом. 12. Старик машинально взял рюмку, но руки его тряслись и, прежде чем он донес ее к губам, он расплескал половину. (*Достоевский*) 13. Давид кончил завтрак и отодвинул свой стул, когда мистер Мердстон остановил его. 14. Наташа подошла ко мне и молча протянула мне руку. Три недели как мы не видались. Я глядел на нее с недоумением и страхом. Как переменялась она в эти три недели! (*Достоевский*) 15. Я прожил за границей, главным образом во Франции и Италии, около пятидесяти лет. (*Сухомлин*) 16...Алехин надел плащ и вышел на улицу. Было уже темно... Ветер усилился, стало еще морознее, но Алехин не чувствовал ни порывов ветра, ни холода. (*Котов*) 17. Он [Берснев] вернулся и взялся за книгу. Раумера уж он давно кончил: он теперь изучал Грота. (*Тургенев*) 18. Солнце уже давно встало, когда Рудин пришел к Авдюхиному пруду. (*Тургенев*) 19. Рудин подошел к ней и остановился. Такого выражения он еще не замечал на ее лице. (*Тургенев*) 20. Небо почти все очистилось, когда Наталья пошла в сад. (*Тургенев*) 21. Я уже заканчивал наброски своего выступления, когда в комнату просунула голову бабка Настасья. (*Тендряков*) 22. «Послушай, Аня, — спросил Максим у сестры по возвращении домой, — не знаешь ли ты, что случилось во время нашей поездки? Я вижу, что мальчик изменился именно с этого дня». (*Короленко*) 23. «Вы поете?» — промолвила Варвара Павловна. (*Тургенев*) 24. Она [Оля] здесь не живет почти два года... Она жила здесь раньше, почти два года тому назад. (*Чаковский*) 25. Девочка перестала плакать и только по временам еще всхлипывала. (*Короленко*) 26. Екатерина Зашеина... начинает понимать, что царь принес и приносит много' зла своему народу. (*Пермяк*) 27. Ей, Наде, было уже двадцать три года; с шестнадцати лет она страстно мечтала о замужестве, и теперь\* наконец, она была невестой Андрея Андреича. (*Чехов*) 28. Он [аист] прилетел на днях из далеких краев и строит гнездо на старом месте. (*Короленко*) 29. «Вы меня мучите, княжна! — говорил Грушницкий: — вы ужасно изменились с тех пор, как я вас не видал». (*Лермонтов*) 30. «А Валя давно приехал?» — «Уже час беседуем», — ответил Волянский. (*Котов*) 31. Когда он вялый, неудовлетворенный, вернулся домой... Егор Семенович и Таня сидели на ступеньках террасы и пили чай. Они о чем-то говорили, но, увидев Коврина, вдруг замолчали, и он заключил по их лицам, что разговор у них шел о нем. (*Чехов*) 32. Когда вошли в залу, там уже садились ужинать. (*Чехов*) 33. Несколько секунд молча стояли они друг против друга. (*Котов*) 34. «Солнышко село», — произнесла она. (*Короленко*) 35. «А давно мы вас не видали», — наивно заметила Леночка. (*Тургенев*) 36. Мне удалось узнать адрес учреждения, в котором она [Миронова] работала шесть лет назад. (*Чаковский*) 37...если вы увидите Иванова, он вам все подробно расскажет. (*Чаковский*) 38. Волынцев встал и подозрительно посмотрел на Лежнева и сестру. Он похудел в последнее время. (*Тургенев*) 39. Лицо ее было бледно; слегка раскрытые губы тоже побледнели. (*Тургенев*) 40. «Вы давно ее знаете?» — «С детства!» — отвечал Печорин. — «Я также ее когда-то знала». (*Лермонтов*) 41. Я давно хотел поговорить с вами, но опасался, что этот разговор будет вам неприятен. (*Рыбаков*) 42. Я рада, что вы пришли. (*Тургенев*) 43. Я забыла снегирю корму насыпать. (*Тургенев*) 44. «Видели вы Нежданова?» — спросил наконец Остродумов. — «Видела; он сейчас придет. Книги в библиотеку понес». (*Тургенев*) 45. Вы давно видели Сашу? Как он выглядит? (*Котов*) 46. Вы были у меня во вторник, поздно вечером; на другое утро он [Алеша] заезжал ко мне..., и с тех пор я его не видела... (*Достоевский*) 47. Шубин поднял голову. Слезы блестели на его щеках. (*Тургенев*)

## THE PASSIVE VOICE

### Exercise 1. Insert the required tense (Passive Voice).

1. "I don't want to hear another word. I \_\_\_ never \_\_\_ so \_\_\_ in my whole life, (to insult) (*/. Shaw*) 2. But what shall I do if you \_\_\_ ? (to kill) (*Shaw*) 3. Godfrey waited, before

he spoke again, until the ale \_\_\_ and the door \_\_\_ (to bring, to close) (*Eliot*) 4. In whatever spare time he could find, he read the current research journals, trying to understand the implications of the experiments which \_\_\_ throughout the world, (to perform) (*Wilson*) 5. Merriman, order the dog-cart at once. Mr. Ernest \_\_\_ suddenly to town, (to call back) (*Wilde*) 6. Upon the Doctor and the widow the eyes of both Mr. Tuprnan and his companion \_\_\_ for some time, when the stranger broke silence, (to fix) (*Dickens*) 7. In 1834, the Houses of Parliament, with the exception of Westminster Hall \_\_\_ by fire. They \_\_\_ ' by Sir Charles Barry, (to destroy, to rebuild) 8. "I'm afraid that we're going to have to move," he said. "This lab won't be big enough for us after all. But there's a double room on the eleventh floor that \_\_\_ " (to use — negative) (*Wilson*) 9. Lanny noticed that he \_\_\_ by three white men from the coffee stall on the other side of the road, (to watch) 10. It was past eleven o'clock — a late hour for the little village of Cobham — when Mr. Pickwick retired to the bedroom which \_\_\_ for his reception, (to prepare) (*Dickens*) 11. We \_\_. if we \_\_, but never mind, (to scold, to see) (*Ch. Bronte*) 12. The Nobel Prize \_\_\_ to him in 1924 when the advent of wave mechanics had revealed the importance of his work, ten years after his famous experiment \_\_\_ (to give, to perform) (*Wilson*) 13. The camp of peace will not allow the outbreak of a new war that \_\_\_ by the imperialists. (to prepare) 14. I called... to ask if a diamond brooch of mine \_\_\_ (to find) (*Wilde*) 15. The tea-things \_\_\_ scarcely \_\_\_ when the London coach deposited Mr. Weller, senior, at the door, (to put away) (*Dickens*) 16. Annette's most valuable stone was ruby, which \_\_\_ to her when she was twelve by an Indian prince who was in love with her mother, (to give) (*Murdoch*) 17. He [Jim] put down his pail... and bent over the toe with absorbing interest while the bandage \_\_\_ (to unwind) (*Twain*) 18. He carefully examined the contents of his case, and did not speak again until the beer \_\_\_ and he had paid for it. (to bring) (*Priestley*) 19. The little patient — and \_\_, and now lay composed in her crib, (to examine, to soothe) (*Ch. Bronte*) 20. It was an idea that \_\_\_ at that moment \_\_\_ by Colonel Melchett and Colonel Bantry. (to discuss) (*Christie*) 21. Lanny \_\_\_ cruelly, heartlessly in the way Sara \_\_\_ When he \_\_, the barking of a dog \_\_\_ It \_\_\_ by hurried footsteps, (to beat, to beat, to beat, to hear, to follow) 22. H« [Arthur] went up to his room. Nothing in it \_\_\_ since his arrest, (to change) (*Voynich*) 23. You can feel when you \_\_. (to watch) (*Hilton*) 24. The oldest of London's present-day theatres is th( Theatre Royal, Drury Lane, which \_\_\_ in 1663 and \_\_\_ since \_\_\_ several times, (to open, to reconstruct) 25. Below decks the atmosphere was close. Many cigarettes \_\_, and \_\_. (to smoke to smoke) (*Clark*) 26. She kept an eye on the Leanharn people to see that her action \_\_\_ duly \_\_\_ (to notice) (*Maugham*) 27. Rumania is a Balkan State which \_\_\_ long \_\_\_ for its mineral springs. (to know) (*Maugham*) 28. After a few routine questions \_\_\_ and \_\_, Dr. Lord leant back in his chair and smiled at his patient, (to ask, to answer) (*Christie*) 29. Ettore was twenty-three. He \_\_\_ by an uncle in San Francisco and was visiting his father and mother in Torino when war \_\_\_ (to bring up, to declare) (*Hemingway*) 30. He strode up to the front door of the forlorn house and rang the bell like one who \_\_\_ there for weeks, (to expect) (*Priestley*) 31. After lunch, we heard that Charles Lenton \_\_\_ for. (to send) (*Snow*) 32. Breakfast \_\_\_ scarcely \_\_\_ when a waiter brought in Mr. Dowler's card, (to clear away) (*Dickens*) 33. One could not walk or drive about Philadelphia without seeing or being impressed with the general tendency toward a more cultivated and selective social life. Many excellent and expensive houses \_\_\_ (to erect) (*Dreiser*) 34. I \_\_\_ constantly \_\_\_ in the street. I like it. It gives an amusement to the dullest walk, (to follow) (*Maugham*) 35. A minute earlier, a small boy with a partly deflated red balloon had run out into the cleared forbidden street. He \_\_\_ just \_\_\_ : and \_\_\_ back to the curb by his father... (to capture, to drag) (*Salinger*) 36...the railway \_\_\_ at all at that time, (to use — negative) (*Shute*) 37. Ant on i a: Thank you. Thank you. Martin: What \_\_\_ I \_\_\_ for? (to thank) (*Murdoch and Priestley*) 38. The gentleman was so startled that he took the night train for the Continent and \_\_\_ never \_\_\_ of since, (to hear) (*Maugham*)

**Exercise 2. State where the combination to be + Participle II is a simple predicate and where it is a compound nominal predicate.**

1. Mr. Dorrit's rooms **were reached**. Candles **were lighted**. The attendants withdrew. (*Dickens*) 2. The door **was instantly opened**. (*Ch. Bronte*) 3. **I have been treated and respected** as a gentleman universally. (*Dickens*) 4. About noon, **I was summoned** to dress madame. (*Ch. Bronte*) 5. My boxes **are locked, strapped** and labelled; I hate being hurried. (*Collins*) 6. This brisk little affair **was all settled** before breakfast. (*Ch. Bronte*) 7. He was like a man who **had been separated** from one he loved for many years... (*Greene*) 8. I stopped at a barber shop and **was shaved** and went home to the 'hospital'. (*Hemingway*) 9. We shall have time to-morrow, when my packing **is finished**. (*Voynich*) 10. My wife and daughters **were charmed** with her. (*Collins*) 11. The purchase **was completed** within a month. (*Dickens*) 12. You **are deceived**. (*Hardy*) 13. the door **was opened** by a girl. (*Priestley*) 14. **I'll be dressed** in a minute. (*Hemingway*) 15. The small room **was lit** only by a dying fire and one candle with a shade over it. (*Eliot*) 16. A short bridge over a canal **was blown up** but we climbed across on what **was left** of the span. (*Hemingway*) 17. The chambermaid's curiosity **was aroused** at once. (*Priestley*) 18. Was your novel ever **published**? (*Wilde*) 19. He **has not been well educated** up to now. (*Clark*) 20. Huckleberry **was filled** with admiration of Tom's facility in writing and the sublimity of his language. (*Twain*) 21. The beds, which for years **had been neglected**, now were trim with the abominations of carpet bedding. (*Maugham*) 22. A whisper goes about the house that Mr. Dombey's hair **is curled**. (*Dickens*) 23. He was in the house when the diamond **was lost**. (*Collins*) 24. When at last the notes **were finished**, I typed them out... (*Hilton*) 25. Penn **was fascinated and troubled** by this suggestion. (*Murdoch*) 26. The big brightly lit stone-flagged kitchen was silent... The shutters **were closed and barred**. (*Murdoch*) 27. Red carpet **was laid down** for the occasion; hothouse plants and evergreens **were arranged** in bowers at the extremities and in every recess of the gallery. (*Eliot*) 28....perhaps you know that Mirah's brother **is found**. (*Eliot*) 29. Another half-hour and all doors **would be locked** — all lights **extinguished**. (*Ch. Bronte*) 30. Sam's body **was twisted and deformed**. But he had not been, born like that... Early one morning farm laborers on their way to work from Stilleveld had come upon a twisted heap lying in the open. It had turned out to be Sam... The right side of his head **had been crushed in**, as though by a boot. Most of the ribs in the right side of his chest **were broken**. His right arm **was broken** in many places. (*Abrahams*) 31. The scoop, under the ranger's fence, cannily selected for his sleepingplace, **was overhung** by branches. (*Galsworthy*) 32. My things **are all packed**. (*Hemingway*) 33. Two doors opened out of it [the passage] to the left and to the right. One of these **had obviously been closed** for many weeks. (*Conan Doyle*) 34. In the front room the bricks of the floor **were being tumbled** aside by the shoots from old tree-roots. (*Lessing*) 35. She realized that the old life **was gone and done with**. (*Maugham*)

**Exercise 3. Translate into Russian.**

1. That day she was seen little of. (*Hardy*) 2. At that moment hasty steps were heard in the entry. (*Hardy*) 3. A man who is much talked about is always very attractive. (*Wilde*) 4. I was told, too, that neither masters nor teachers were found fault with in that establishment. (*Ch. Bronte*) 5. I shall be quite safe, quite well taken care of. (*Dickens*) 6. I've been sent for urgently, to get at the truth. (*Christie*) 7. A sound of a piano is heard in the adjoining room. (*Wilde*) 8. He could see that the bed was empty, and that it had not been slept in. (*Bennett*) 9. The gate was opened by one of the maids. (*Dickens*) 10. Nothing more was said on either side. (*Dickens*) 11. I don't suppose there's anybody who isn't cared for by someone or other. (*Maugham*) 12. With old and young great sorrow is followed by a sleepless night... (*Maugham*) 13. He was forbidden to receive either letters or telegrams. (*Collins*) 14. The visitor was allowed to come forward and seat himself. (*Eliot*) 15. The match was looked upon as made by her father and mother. (*Hardy*) 16. Klesmer bowed round to the three sisters more grandly than they had ever been bowed to before. (*Eliot*) 17. That's a thing I've not been



accused of before. (*Maugham*) 18. The child shall be taken care of somehow. (*Eliot*) 19. I just chatter when J'rn chattered to. (*Hilton*) 20. And for four years now I have been trying to make myself heard in the popular press. I have been laughed at as a crank. I have endured insults. (*Priestley*) 21. Knight had been looked upon as a bachelor by nature. (*Hardy*) 22. We know that she likes Nurse O'Brien and is well looked after. (*Christie*) 23. Her uncle and mother came two days ago, and she is being well taken care of. (*Eliot*) 24. The effect of my education can never be done away with. (*Eliot*) 25. The strained and precarious relationship between Ann and Randall, which had been quite unprepared for, was also a constant source of pain and surprise. (*Murdoch*) 26. She is so absolutely to be relied on as that? (*Collins*) 27. Fabrizi told me he had been written to and had consented to come and take up the campaign against the Jesuits. (*Voynich*) 28. One child in a household of grown people is usually made very much of, and in a quiet way I was a good deal taken notice of by Mrs. Bretton, who had been left a widow, with one son, before I knew her. (*Ch. Bronte*) 29. She's quite well thought of in Cambridge. (*Murdoch*) 30. I was taught music and singing. (*Eliot*) 31. Habble was dismissed, but Kinney was not allowed to retire with him. (*Priestley*) 32. By now we had been joined by two other people... (*Hansford Johnson*) 33. About an hour or so later I was sent for and found Mary Gerrard unconscious. (*Christie*) 34. She (Gemma) was both pleasant to look at and interesting to talk to. (*Voynich*)

#### **Exercise 4. Translate into English, using the Passive Voice where possible.**

##### **(A) The Passive Voice and the Compound Predicate.**

1. Его нигде не видели в течение всей недели. Он болен? 2. Пожар начался ночью, и пламя было видно издалека. 3. Когда я приехала в Ленинград, этот дом еще строился. 4. Этот дом был построен до того, как началась война. 5. Я уверена, что вам помогут в вашей работе. 6. Город, в котором родился Низами, был основан в IX веке. 7. Московский университет назван именем Ломоносова. 8. Павлову была присвоена почетная степень доктора Кембриджского университета 9. Зоя Космодемьянская была схвачена в тот момент, когда она пыталась поджечь конюшни. 10. Сеть ясель в Советском Союзе значительно расширилась за последние годы. 11. Телеграмму послали поздно вечером, так что она будет получена только утром. 12. Эта книга уже распродана. 13. Когда Ленни вернулся, дома никого не было. Миссис Шварц попросили прийти постирать белье. 14. Произведения Пушкина переведены на 76 языков народов Советского Союза. 15. В этот момент обсуждался очень важный вопрос и все внимательно слушали. Он обсуждался уже более двух часов. 16. Миссис Лекки стояла в прихожей, держа в руках открытку, которую только что принесли. 17. Она знала, что сестра вернется домой поздно. Ее пригласили в театр. 18. Домой они пришли очень поздно, все двери были уже закрыты. (*Чаковский*) 19...когда я появился здесь, уже все было утверждено, подписано. (*Тендряков*) 20...в кабинете давно не открывали окна... Воздух был тяжел... (*Рыбаков*) 21. Почему такая работа не напечатана? (*Тендряков*) 22. После того как письмо Петру было написано, он повеселел... (*Тендряков*) 23. Как мало еще сделано, а уже свистит свисток на обед. (*Пермяк*) 24. Санчик и Маврик появились у ворот своей школы. Ворота еще не открывались... (*Пермяк*)

**(B)** 1. Наконец, ровно через три недели, из города привезли пианино. (*Короленко*) 2. Когда Володю привезли в Сосняки, ему было семь лет. (*Рыбаков*) 3. В тот же день послано было письмо в город. (*Короленко*) 4. Его [Паклина] повели вниз. (*Тургенев*) 5. Послышался топот копыт. (*Тургенев*) 6. В кухне... заметны были некоторые приготовления: все было вытерто и вычищено. Видно было, что нас ждали. (*Достоевский*) 7. Не прошло трех минут, как преступник был связан. (*Лермонтов*) 8. Его везде охотно принимали. (*Тургенев*) 9. Каждый день в комнату вносили бич, обручи. (*Чехов*) 10. Паклин уже взялся за шапку, как вдруг... в передней раздался удивительно приятный.. - баритон. (*Тургенев*) 11. «Басанова арестовали», — прибавил он. (*Тургенев*)

(С) 1. Мне только что предложили интересную работу. 2. Больному запретили курить. 3. Детям велели идти спать. 4. Сусанину приказали показать дорогу на Москву. 5. Меня попросили прийти через несколько дней. 6. Мне задали несколько вопросов, на которые я не сразу мог ответить. 7. Бекки Шарп предложили должность гувернантки. 8. Больному посоветовали ехать на юг. 9. Мне вчера сказали, что вы были больны. 10. Нам вчера дали несколько новых журналов и книг. 11. Ему посоветовали остаться дома. 12. Мне показали проект нового театра. 13. Его спросили, кто живет в этом доме. 14. Это как раз та статья, которую нам посоветовали прочесть. 15. Меня прислали помочь вам. 16. Меня просили рассказать вам, что случилось. 17. Мне велели прийти ровно в пять часов. 18. Ей посоветовали заниматься музыкой. 19. Ему посоветовали обратиться к хорошему врачу. 20. В то время, когда мне предложили ехать в деревню, я вовсе не думал так нестерпимо скучать. (*Куприн*)

(D) 1. Оратора слушали очень внимательно. 2. Дети любят когда им читают. 3. Об этом событии много говорят. 4. На него можно положиться? 5. На эту книгу никогда не ссылаются. 6. О поступке Бермана много говорили в колонии. 7. За машиной послали, как только вещи были уложены. 8. В нашей стране с неграмотностью давно покончено. 9. Зимой в этом доме никогда не жили. 10. Не понимаю, почему об этом фильме так много говорят. 11. Тов. Н. очень хороший лектор, его всегда очень внимательно слушают. 12. Он исключительно добросовестный человек, на него можно положиться. 13. В Советском Союзе о детях очень заботятся. 14. На книги Ленина ссылаются многие ученые. 15. Его речь на собрании была такой блестящей, что о ней потом много говорили. 16. В нашей стране дети обеспечены всем необходимым. 17. Послали ли за свежим молоком? (*Л. Толстой*) 18. От Ивана Макаровича с тех пор никакой весточки. (*Пермяк*) 19. Послали за извозчиком. (*Чехов*)

(E) 1. К счастью, доктор жил в этом же доме, и я была избавлена от необходимости выходить ночью. 2. Когда самолет скрылся из виду, все пошли домой. 3. Опять вы опоздали. С этим надо покончить. 4. Ребенка положили в больницу, где за ним очень хорошо ухаживали. 5. После лекции был концерт. 6. В доме миссис Рид к Джейн Эйр постоянно придирались. 7. Когда длинноногий парень скрылся из виду, Давид сел отдохнуть. 8. За первой мировой войной последовала революция в России. 9. После смерти миссис Копперфильд к Давиду всегда придирались. 10. Как только Скиф Миллер скрылся из виду, собака бросилась за ним. 11. За молнией последовал удар грома. 12. Перевод такой хороший, что в нем нельзя найти никаких недостатков. 13. С такими серьезными вещами не шутят. 14. К Трэддлсу, товарищу Давида Копперфильда, всегда придирались.

## MODAL VERBS

Exercise 1. **Comment upon the meaning of modal verbs. Translate into Russian (can, may).**

1. "Can't you sleep, Signor Tenente?" he asked. "No." "I can't sleep, either." (*Hemingway*) 2. Alice: I'll come too if I may. (*Gow and D'Usseau*) 3. I said, "I am Martin Lynchgibbon. We have met before, though you may have forgotten. Palmer asked me to meet you. May I carry something?" (*Murdoch*) 4. "She cannot have heard of her father's death," said Braybrooke. "But she had! For I expressed my sympathy and she thanked me." (*Hichens*) 5. It was not many hours ere he, Esmond, was in London, of that you may be sure, and received with open arms by the old Dowager of Chesley... (*Thackeray*) 6. Darling, I'm sorry I was so drunk yesterday... I may have seemed churlish, but don't think I'm not deeply grateful for your concern. I may yet need your help... (*Murdoch*) 7. Julia: Why is she coming home? Maude: I don't know... I suppose she got fed up with Paris after five years. She couldn't have had much fun. (*Taylor*) 8. Howard: Lieutenant, may I ask a

question? (*Gow and D'Usseau*) 9. "Can I possibly have made a mistake?" she thought. (*Forster*) JO- Oh. this house, this house! I come back to it after twenty-three years and it is just the same... really. Hesione might at least have been here: some preparation might have been made for me. (*Shaw*) 11. "He may not even know I'm here." (*Forster*) 12. They can't understand the English language, anyway. (*Hemingway*)

**Exercise 2. Insert may (might), can (could) or the contracted forms of may not, might not, cannot, could not (mayn't, mightn't; can't, couldn't). Translate into Russian.**

1. "There is a man I know," I said; "you \_\_\_ have met him, a man named Longrush." (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 2. He noticed at once that her manner was as natural almost as a frank, manly schoolboy's,... there \_\_\_ never (he thought) have been a grain of affectation in her. (*Hichens*) 3. I \_ - neither lie comfortably in bed nor find anything to do with myself if I got up. (*Murdoch*) 4. She jumped up when she saw me and said, "Really, I think she \_\_\_ have waited a bit before dismantling the house!" (*Murdoch*) 5. I beg the Magistrate's pardon, but \_\_\_ I request a few minutes private conversation with him on a matter of deep importance to himself? (*Dickens*) 6. "You are a sworn constable?" "I be, sir." "Then pursue the criminal at once, with assistance, and bring him back here. He — have gone far." (contracted) (*Hardy*) 7. I said, " \_\_\_ I help you?" (*Murdoch*) 8. "Perhaps," said the Captain, "you \_\_\_ have heard your head governor mention my name?" (*Dickens*) 9. "She's gone, she's gone! Your Heathcliff's run off with her!" gasped the girl. "That is not true!" exclaimed Linton, rising in agitation. "It — not be: how has the idea entered your head? Ellen Dean, go and seek her. It is incredible: it \_\_\_ not be." (*E. Bronte*) 10. "I didn't say he wasn't a colonel," he said, "he \_\_\_ have been once for all I know. After all, he's almost forty." (*Benson*) II. Catherine's cup was never filled: she \_\_\_ neither eat nor drink (*E. Bronte*) 12. Oh, welf, you \_\_\_ be right. I don't know. I'm not going to try to explain or adjust myself now. (*Dreiser*) 13. "Old Callendar wants to see me at his bungalow", he said not rising. "He — have the politeness to say why." (*Forster*)

**Exercise 3. Translate into English using the verbs can and may whenever possible.**

1. Не может быть, чтобы она прочла эту книгу за два дня; она, возможно, только просмотрела ее. 2. «Не может быть, чтобы вы потеряли билет, вы могли положить его в карман». — «Нет, я могла выронить его в трамвае». 3. Не может быть, чтобы он уже приехал, я получила телеграмму только вчера. 4. Неужели он уже получил мое письмо? 5. Неужели он не получил моего письма? 6. Ваши часы, возможно, спешат; не может быть, чтобы сейчас было девять часов. 7. Он не мог получить книгу, потому что библиотека была закрыта. 8. Не может быть, чтобы он получил книгу, ведь библиотека была закрыта. 9. Не могли ли бы вы дать мне эту книгу дня на два? 10. Нет, я не верю этому, не может быть, чтобы она меня обманула. 11. Я останусь дома; она, возможно, будет мне звонить. 12. Право, Джордж, ты мог бы помочь мне нести этот тяжелый чемодан, разве ты не видишь, как мне это тяжело? 13. «Где ключ?» — «Не знаю, Ольга могла взять его с собой по ошибке». — «Не может быть, чтобы она его *взяла*, у нее ничего не было в руках, когда она уходила». 14. Наконец-то вы пришли! Вы могли прийти пораньше, ведь вы же знали, что я больна.

**Exercise 4. Comment on the meaning of modal verbs. Translate into Russian.**

1. I have brought back your man —not without risk or danger; but every one must do his duty. (*Hardy*) 2. "May I escort you home?" he said. (*Hichens*) 3. Blanche: I'm sorry. I must have lost my head for a moment. (*Tennessee Williams*) 4. "There must be something wrong somewhere," he said w-ith a solemn, dejected movement of his head. (*Caldwell*) 5. Gracing the centre table was a Bible and a yellow plush album, in which was not a single picture... It must have been the yellow plush that had fascinated them. (*Dreiser*) 6. "Something must have happened. He behaves quite differently to me, he's cold and he looks at me in such a terrifying way as if he were thinking about killing me... And honestly Martin, I'm frightened." "...Pull yourself together," I said. "You must be imagining all

this." 7. Sir Robert: Gertrude, what you tell me may be true, but it happened many years ago. It is best forgotten! Mrs. Cheveley may have changed since then. (*Wilde*) 8. She passed the girls' room, noticed that they were quiet and therefore must be doing as they had been told, and went on to the children's room. (*Benson*) 9. "May not the editor have been right in his revision of your Sea Lyrics...?" she questioned. "Remember, an editor must have proved qualifications or else he would not be an editor." (*London*) 10. Stanley: That must have been a pretty long time ago. (*Tennessee Williams*) 11. Both of you behaved very badly. You might have given me a little encouragement. (*Maugham*)

**Exercise 5. Insert may (might) or must. Translate into Russian.**

1. She said: "Please, please make no sign. That man at the door is mad. Do something. He \_\_\_ kill me!" (*Dreiser*) 2. He was the father of three sons and two daughters, so I was told, all of whom \_\_\_ have hated him; those I knew did anyhow. (*Dreiser*) 3. You \_\_\_ be exhausted after all the tennis you played this afternoon, Minnie. (*Maugham*) 4. You \_\_\_ be getting better, since you can leave your bed? (*Ch. Bronte*) 5. "I can't stay," Stephanie said. 79 As she walked down the corridor, she heard Marguerite calling after him. "You \_\_\_ have told me before I started tea." (*Saxton*) 6. I said, "What time is it, Antonia?" "Ten o'clock"... "I —have slept for twelve hours." (*Murdoch*) 7. She \_\_\_ have recognized his voice, for the light disappeared from the apartment, and in a second or two the door was unlocked and opened... (*Hardy*) 8. Late 299 stood, smiling, in front of the door. "Well, Bertha?" he said. "Ah, Beryl! Well, Jack!" His daughter alone replied. "Well, Father, you \_\_\_ have let us know beforehand!" (*Galsworthy*) 9. "How did it happen?" "It was the streetcar," Esther said. "It hit her. It — have tossed her right onto the cinders at the side of the track." (*Benson*) 10. It occurred to him that perhaps his hostess \_\_\_ be in, her boudoir. It was a possibility; he would go and see. (*Huxley*) 11. The doorway was all dark. The lights in the house \_\_\_ have gone out. (*Priestley*) 12. I \_\_\_ do-these things sometimes in absence of mind; but surely I don't do them habitually. (*Shaw*)

**Exercise 6. Translate into English using the verbs can, may, must.**

1. Уже пять часов. Собрание могло уже кончиться; подождем немножко, он может скоро прийти. 2. Петя, должно быть, заболел, иначе он был бы уже в театре, он никогда не приходит в последний момент. 3. Не может быть, чтобы она забыла о концерте, это совсем на нее не похоже. 4. Я его сегодня не жду; но, кто знает, может быть, он и придет. 5. «Хотела бы я знать, где она достала „Три товарища“ Ремарка?». — «Она могла взять ее в нашей библиотеке». — «Не может быть, чтобы она взяла ее в нашей библиотеке: Семенова вчера взяла последний экземпляр». — «Ну, должно быть, она взяла ее в другой библиотеке». 6. «Где Павел?» — «Не знаю, он, возможно, пошел в филармонию». — «Ну, это не очень-то любезно с его стороны; он мог бы взять билет и для меня». — «Посмотрите-ка, на столе что-то лежит, он, должно быть, оставил вам билет и записку». 7. Не может быть, чтобы она здесь была вчера. Если бы она была здесь, она оставила бы мне записку. 8. Не возвращайте пока книгу в библиотеку; она может вам понадобиться для доклада. 9. Может мне взять вашу книгу? 10. Можно употребить здесь настоящее продолженное время? 11. Он сказал, что доклад у него уже готов и он может прочесть его завтра на собрании. 12. «Он, должно быть, уже ушел». — «Не может быть, чтобы он ушел, не повидав меня». 13. «Где Мария?» — «Она, должно быть, еще спит». 14. Вы, должно быть, ошибаетесь, на двадцать пятой странице нет таких слов

**Exercise 7. Translate into English using the verbs can, may, must. (Based on an episode from *To Let* by J. Galsworthy.)**

Сомс остановился перед картиной одного из начинающих художников, с интересом ее рассматривая. «Что бы это могло изображать?» — думал он. «Они могли бы, по крайней мере, сделать надпись. Ах вот, судя по каталогу, это, наверное (должно быть), и есть картина, изображающая „Город будущего“. А что значат эти

вертикальные черные полосы? Может быть, это самолеты? Джун опять устраивает выставки произведений молодых художников. Она, должно быть, все еще полна иллюзий и думает, что со временем они могут стать знаменитостями. Но где же Флер? Что могло ее задержать? Не могла же она забыть о своем обещании? Да нет, она, наверное, опять пошла к Имоджин Кардиган. Эти женщины! На них никогда нельзя положиться!» Вдруг он заметил даму и юношу. Что-то в ней показалось ему знакомым. Неужели Ирэн? После стольких лет! И она его увидела. В глазах его, должно быть, отразилась саркастическая улыбка Джорджа Форсайта, так как лицо ее приняло жесткое выражение, и она прошла мимо.

**Exercise 8. Comment and translate into Russian (to be + infinitive).**

1. The typewriter people were again clamoring for money, insistently pointing out that according to the agreement rent was to be paid strictly in advance. (*London*) 2. By that time of evening only a few persons were to be seen on the wet streets and most of the shops and stores were dark and closed for the night. (*Caldwell*) 3. "You're to go now, Blick!" said Hunter, getting up. (*Murdoch*) 4. I distinctly told you to stay with her every minute I was away. You are not to be trusted. (*Fischer*) 5. It was after breakfast, and we had been summoned in from the playground, when Mr. Sharp entered and said: "David Copperfield is to go into the parlour." (*Dickens*) 6. Demetrius was nowhere to be found. (*Douglas*) 7. When my wife and I settle down at Willowmere it's possible that we shall all come together. But if this isn't to be, for Heaven's sake, let us recognise that it is simply because it can't be, and not wear hypocritical faces and suffer and be wretched. (*Pinero*) 8. The snow which had lain so thick and beautiful when I left the country was scarcely to be seen in the city... (*Murdoch*) 9. Your mother arranged that she was to come down from London and that I was to come over from Dover to be introduced to you. (*Shaw*) 10. Mrs. Moore, your delightful doctor has decided on a picnic, instead of a party in his house; we are to meet him out there... (*Forster*) 11. For June this evening, that was to have been "her treat", was the most miserable she had ever spent. (*Galsworthy*) 12. Eliza, you are to live here for the next six months, learning, how to speak beautifully, like a lady in a florist's shop. (*Shaw*)

**Exercise 9. Comment and translate into Russian (to have+ infinitive, to be+ infinitive).**

1. Blanche: I didn't save a penny last year and so I had to come here for the summer. That's why I have to put up with my sister's husband. And he has to put up with me, apparently so much against his wishes. Surely he must have told you how much he hates me. (*Tennessee Williams*) 2. "His mother, my dear," said Miss Tox, "whose acquaintance I was to have made through you, does not at all resemble her." (*Dickens*) 3. I had made arrangements so as not to have to come to the office again for a little while. (*Murdoch*) 4....I could scarcely repress my curiosity as to the nature of this composition which was to be published, at his request, presumably, by *The Banner*. (*Dreiser*) 5. There are some things that have to be said sooner or later, and I'd rather hear them from you than from anybody else. (*Caldwell*) 6. She [Ellie] begins stroking Mangan's head, reversing the movement with which she put him to sleep. "Wake up, do you hear! You are to wake up at once. Wake up..." (*Shaw*) 7. "I can't stay in this place any longer!" she cried in utter desperation. We've got to move out of this apartment. (*Caldwell*) 8. He had been indeed with that luckless expedition of the Chevalier de St. George, who was sent by the French King with ships and an army from Dunkirk, and was to have invaded and conquered Scotland... (*Thackeray*)

**Exercise 10. Insert to have (to have got) or to be in the appropriate form. Translate into Russian.**

1. He toiled on all day, recollecting, at the last moment, that he \_\_\_ to have dinner at the Morses'. (*London*) 2. He shook his head again, when Gertrude offered him money, though he knew that within the day he \_\_\_ to make a trip, to the pawnbroker. (*London*) 3. There were thirty poems in the collection and he \_\_\_ to receive a dollar apiece for them. (*London*) 4. But just then we hit a stretch of unpaved road where the mud was thick and the ruts were hard to follow. I \_\_\_ to stop talking and watch what I was doing. (*Maltz*) 5. During

their absence, Mahmoud Ali had gone off in his carriage leaving a message that he should be back in five minutes, but they \_\_\_ on no account to wait. (*Forster*) 6. At this meal they arranged their daily habits. The major \_\_\_ to take the responsibility of ordering everything to eat and drink; and they \_\_\_ to have a late breakfast together every morning, and a late dinner together every day. (*Dickens*) 7. Stella: People — to tolerate each other's habits, I guess. (*Tennessee Williams*) 8. He told me to say you \_\_\_ not to worry about him and that he'll recover in time. (*Murdoch*) 9. She trembled that day as she prepared to go down to the wedding. She \_\_\_ to be a bridesmaid. (*Lawrence*) 10. The time was fixed for his sailing. It \_\_\_ to take place almost immediately: yet much remained to be done; many domestic preparations \_\_\_ to be made. (*Gaskell*) 11. "You see practically the minute he left town, Lon spent his whole allowance. All of it." "But he's only been there a week and that money — to last him through October," Mrs. Smith said. (*Benson*)

**Exercise 11. Translate into English using the verbs can, may, must and the expressions to be + infinitive and to have-f- infinitive.**

1. Теперь всему миру придется поверить, что человечеству суждено заселить если не все, то многие планеты солнечной системы. 2. Если бы кто-нибудь сказал это лет пятьдесят тому назад, ему ответили бы, что об этом и думать нельзя. 3. Скептикам, которые говорили, что этого не может быть, приходится признать, что нам суждено стать свидетелями межпланетных полетов. 4. Для того чтобы осуществить запуск космической ракеты в межпланетное пространство, ученым пришлось сделать точные вычисления, чтобы знать, куда направить ракету. Они решили, что она должна пройти в непосредственной близости от Луны. 5. Полагают, что Луна, может быть, будет служить базой для межпланетных полетов. 6. Ученые думают, что на Луне, должно быть, нет атмосферы. 7. Трудности, которые нам придется преодолеть для того, чтобы создать пассажирские межпланетные ракеты, очень велики. Но мы, несомненно, преодолеем их.

**Exercise 12. Translate into English using modal verbs and expressions (should, ought, to have to, to be to).**

1. Вы должны были давно прочесть «Дни и ночи» Симонова. Ведь книга издана в 1948 году. 2. Как это вы умудрились потерять книгу? Вы должны были положить ее в портфель, тогда вы бы ее не потеряли. Теперь вам придется расстаться с какой-нибудь из своих книг. 3. Собрание должно было состояться вчера, но не состоялось. 4. Мне придется пойти к ней, у нее испорчен телефон. 5. Вам бы следовало сделать то, что я вам говорила, тогда вы не оказались бы в таком глупом положении теперь. 6. Как мы условились, я должна была зайти к ней и привести ее сюда. 7. Вы должны были мне сказать, что вы были больны. 8..Это случилось как раз в то время, когда она должна была, уехать на юг. 9. Я должен был прийти к ней в два часа, но я оставил дома ее адрес, и мне пришлось вернуться; поэтому я опоздал. 10. Вам следует помочь ей, она ведь очень устала.

**Exercise 13. Comment on the meaning of modal verbs. Translate into Russian (shall, will).**

1. "Don't want it, thanks. Finish it yourself." "Shall I? or shall I keep it for an emergency?" (*Priestley*) 2. No, Hubert; no chivalry and that sort of nonsense. You shan't have all this beastliness alone. I'm going to share it. (*Galsworthy*) 3. I ask your advice; and I am waiting for it. I will not have all the responsibility thrown on my shoulders. (*Shaw*) 4. El lean: I will offer to go down to the village with Paula this morning — shall I? Aubrey (*touching her hand gently*): Thank you — do. (*Pinero*) 5....I am yours for ever and ever. Nothing can or shall divide me from you, unless you stop loving. (*Galsworthy*) 6. Soames lifted his eyes: "I won't have anything said against her," he said unexpectedly. (*Galsworthy*) 7. Let snobbish people say what they please: Barbara shall marry not the man they like, but the man I like. (*Shaw*) 8. Sir George: The fact is, Mrs. Tanqueray, I am not easy in my mind about the way I am treating my poor old mother. Lady Orreyed (*to Paula*): Do you

hear that? That's *his* mother, but *my* mother he won't so much as look at. (*Pinero*) 9. And now, Dr. Trench, since you have acted handsomely, you shall have no cause to complain of me. There shall be no difficulty about money; you shall entertain as much as you please: I will guarantee all that. (*Shaw*) 10. "If I could have a picture of you, I should treasure it." "Of course you shall!" (*Galsworthy*) 11. I've told you over and over again that I will not be inter-fered with when I'm playing patience. (*Maugham*) 12. Will you have rum in your tea? (*Galsworthy*) 13. I've proved to you that I love you more than anybody else loves you and still you won't leave that Glenn Kenworthy and go with me. (*Caldwell*) 14. Barbara. I will not have Charles called Cholly: the vulgarity of it positively makes me ill. (*Shaw*) 15. Only don't talk to me about divorce, for I simply won't hear of it! (*Murdoch*)! 16. Princess. You must come and see me and you shall tell me! all the news of home. (*Maugham*) 17....he won't see a doctor,] or take any advice. He won't see anyone. (*Galsworthy*) *IS*, The! editors, subeditors, associate editors, most of them... are men wha| wanted to write and who have failed. And yet they, of all crea-1 tures under the sun the most unfit, are the very creatures whoi decide what shall and what shall not find its way into print.. J (*London*)

**Exercise 14. Insert shall, will or the contracted forms oi shall not, wlla not (shan't, won't). Translate into Russian.**

1. Ellie: You \_\_\_ not run away before you answer. I have found out that trick of yours. (*Shaw*) 2. " \_\_\_ you come in a moment?" "Thank you kindly, young man." (contracted) (*Cronin*) 3. Napoleon (*beside himself*):...Once more, and only once, will you give me those papers or \_\_\_ I tear them from you by force! (*Shaw*) 4. You must be tired, dear; \_\_\_ you go to bed? (contracted) \_\_\_ I bring you something up? (*Galsworthy*) 5. Soames is very fond of you, he \_\_\_ have anything said against you; why don't you show him more affection? (contracted) (*Galsworthy*) 6. Aubrey: Have you seen EHean this morning? Paula (*coldly*): Your last observation but one was about Ellean. Aubrey: Dearest, what \_\_\_ I talk about? (*Pinero*) 7. \_\_\_ you please leave my room? (*Galsworthy*) 8. Then he \_\_\_ be here in a few minutes! What \_\_\_ I do? (*Shaw*) 9. " \_\_\_ I speak to Diana, then, about what we've been saying?" "If you \_\_\_, Dinny." (*Galsworthy*) 10. Mohammed Latif \_ be severely punished for inventing this. (*Forsier*) 11. Jack: Gwendolen, \_\_\_ you marry me? (*Goes on his knees.*) Gwendolen: Of course I \_\_\_, darling. (*Wilde*) 12. I give and bequeath a hundred pounds to my younger son Christopher Dudgeon, fifty pounds to be paid to him on the day of his marriage to Sarah Wilkins, if she \_\_\_ have him. (*Shaw*) 13. "Martin darling, you're drunk," said Antonia. " \_\_\_ I order you a taxi to go home in?" (*Murdoch*) 14. Mrs. Cortelyon: You know we are neighbours, Mrs. Tanqueray. Paula: Neighbours? Are we really? \_\_\_ you sit down? (contracted) (*Pinero*) 15. A man who \_\_\_ work is no good, take that from me. (contracted) (*London*) 1(3. I'll go, Dinny, if Hallorsen \_\_\_ take me. (*Galsworthy*) 17. Since you have taken the minister's place, Richard Dtdgeon, you \_\_\_ go through with it. The execution will take place at 12 o'clock as arranged; and unless Anderson surrenders before then, you \_\_\_ take his place on the gallows. (*Shaw*) 18. "I'm not lying," I said. "If you \_\_\_ believe what I say why do you keep asking me?" (contracted) (*Murdoch*) 19. Lady: I cannot permit you, General, to enter my chamber. Napoleon: Then you \_\_\_ stay here, madam, whilst I have your chamber searched for my papers. (*Shaw*) 20....you stood by my father, and by G — I I'll stand by you. You \_\_\_ never want a friend, Harry, while Francis James Viscount Castlewood has a shilling. (*Thackeray*) 21. "Your master is a true scoundrell" I replied. "But he \_ answer for it." (*E. Bronte*) 22. \_\_\_ we go, Blanche? (*Tennessee Williams*) 23. You may come, if you \_\_\_ (*E. Bronte*) 24. Aubrey: \_\_\_ I burn this, dear? (*Referring to ihe letter he holds in his hand.*) Let me, let me! (*Pinero*) 25. Paula: Why are you here? Why aren't you with your friend? El lean: I've come home — if you \_\_\_ have me. (*Pinero*)

**Exercise 15. Comment on the meaning of modal verbs. Translate into Russian (should or ought, would).**

1. If I do lose my temper, 'tis not with ye, or Cornelia either, but with him that should be helping me and never does. (*Dreiser*) 2. Dad's away at some parsonical

conference. I wanted him to take me, but he wouldn't. (*Galsworthy*) 3. The courage of a Military Tribune should not be squandered in banquet-halls. (*Douglas*) 4. "I was for letting you sleep on," she said, "but they would go up and wake you. I said you didn't really want to come," (*Maugham*) 5. He ought to have phoned Simkin earlier, knowing his habits, (*Bellow*) 6. After a hasty breakfast they consulted. To whom should they go? "Not to the police," said Dinny. "No, indeed." "I think we should go to Uncle Adrian first." (*Galsworthy*) 7. The lady I liked wouldn't marry me — that is the main point, but that's fifteen years ago and now means nothing. (*Forster*) 8. If only one editor, he sometimes thought, would descend from his high seat of pride to write me one cheering line! (*London*) 9...I did something — a certain thing — something I shouldn't have done— but couldn't help it! (*Catdwell*) 10. And now you feed me, when then you let me starve, forbade me your house, and damned me because I wouldn't get a job. (*London*) 11. It isn't the sort of thing one should talk of in private. (*Wilde*) 12. He seemed to me quite normal, except that he would not go out or see anybody. (*Galsworthy*) 13. "If Clare's to see Kit and Kat before we start," said Dinny, "we ought to go up, Fleur." (*Galsworthy*)

#### **Exercise 16. Insert should or would. Translate into Russian.**

1. Never forget that we \_\_\_ always think of others and work for others. (*Shaw*) 2. Anna began to feel a little uncomfortable, but she \_\_\_ not admit it. (*Fischer*) 3. I had that door painted only last week,...you \_\_\_ be more careful. (*London*) 4. You, Patty and Priscilla, are going to college, and \_\_\_ realize the necessity of being prepared. (*Webster*) 5. "Then Agnes came by with Bunchie's sister," Tootie went on. "They were going to ride on the bridge, and we wanted to go... But she and Bunchie \_\_\_ n't take us." (*Benson*) 6. I tried often to get him to talk. It was not that "he \_\_\_ n't talk, it was rather that he didn't seem to hear me.. (*Maltz*) 7. A man \_\_\_ always have an occupation of some kind. (*Wilde*) 8. Every one, except Mrs. Reffold, seemed to recognize that Mr. Reffold's days were numbered. Either she did not or \_\_\_ not understand. (*Harraden*) 9. Algernon: Oh! it is absurd to have a hard and fast rule about what one \_\_\_ read and what one, \_\_\_ n't. (*Wilde*) 10. All of her other former belongings... had either been sold or lost for non-payment of dues. Just the same, she either could not or \_\_\_ not work. (*Dreiser*) 11. Eunice: How is she? Stella: She \_\_\_ eat anything but asked for a drink. (contracted) (*Tennessee Williams*) 12. "Why didn't you come before?" he said. "You \_\_\_ have come, instead of writing." (*E. Bronte*)

#### **Exercise 17. Comment on the meaning of modal verbs. Translate into Russian.**

1. On the fourth day, feeling that she could bear the suspense no longer, she telephoned to Fleur and asked if she might come up to them. (*Galsworthy*) 2. I should be grateful if you would keep your hands off my business in future. (*Murdoch*) 3. You know you didn't dare give the order to charge the bridge until you saw us on the other side. (*Shaw*) 4. Mitch Poker shouldn't be played in a house with women. (*Tennessee Williams*) 5. They didn't have to worry about money. (*Mansfield*) 6. Although his residence and his family were in the country... he was frequently to be found about the restaurants and resorts of the radical section of the city. (*Dreiser*) 7. She would not answer me, of course, but went on cordoning the crate... And when I thought it was done with, she found a volume slipped under a chair... and she would open up the crate and put it in. (*Morgan*) 8. "I suppose you know what I've been through since that bag came this morning," said mother. "You might have had some consideration for me. There is simply no excuse for all this..." (*Fischer*) 9. You need not meet him unless you like. (*Shaw*) 10. He's... let me see... He can't be more than thirty, dear. (*Swinerton*) 11. Mischa followed her, and they were to be seen a moment later in conversation. (*Murdoch*) 12. Meanwhile, Margaret seemed to hear a faint knocking, but as no one appeared to hear it, she thought she must be mistaken. (*Priestley*) 13. And of course you should have introduced us long ago. (*Murdoch*) 14. I could not, and would not, believe that she was becoming interested in me. That could not be. (*Dreiser*) 15. Anyhow, Callendar won't hear of you seeing her. (*Forster*) 16. And here now was this young and promising doctor, who could, if he would, keep her supplied with work, and might



even eventually marry her. (*Dreiser*) 17. Aubrey: What is to be her future? It is in my hands; what am I to do? (*Pinero*) 18. Your family may object to me; and then it will be all over between us. (*Shaw*) 19. Rosa reflected, as the train was leaving Naples, that perhaps she ought not to have left Hunter alone. (*Murdoch*) 20. How dare he speak so to me? (*E. Bronte*) 21. I need hardly say I would do anything in the world to ensure Gwendolen's happiness. (*Wilde*) 22. How dare you address me as dear Sir, Sir? How dare you look me in the face and do it, Sir? (*Dickens*) 23....Mama came down, and in a voice which was both astonished and distraught, exclaimed: "Grandpa is not upstairs. Where can he have gone?" (*Cronin*) 24. But you might have been firing away at the Australians still if we cavalry fellows hadn't found the ford and got across... (*Shaw*) 25. You must be dying with curiosity. Take a peep. (*Shaw*) 26. Madam, may I speak to you a moment? (*Mansfield*) 27. She gazed at me severely. "You ought to be in at your essay." (*Cronin*) 28. Christy (*interrupting her with an apprehensive glance at the door by which Essie went out*): Shi She may hear you. (*Shaw*) 29. The substance of her observations, along with those of others, is to be found in a series of articles published in a series of screen publications of the time. (*Dreiser*) 30. But you've got to finish college. We can't get married for a long time. (*Carter*) 31. Cain said: "I don't have to pay to find that out.. I could have asked anybody at the meeting, and found out." (*Carter*) 32. Soames would often come down to watch with secret pride the building of the house which was to have been his home. (*Galsworthy*) 33. Miss Femm opened the door. "I've none of this electric light. I won't have it. You'll have to wait till I've lit the candles." (*Priestley*) 34. "Well," he [James] said, with a perplexed, nervous emphasis, "I don't see what you want with a tree." "It shall come down to-morrow," said Bosinney. (*Galsworthy*) 35. "What are we to do?" she gasped. "Can't we stay here? Lock the door?" (*Priestley*) 36. I felt suddenly dizzy with pain and unable to face whatever scene was to follow. (*Murdoch*) 37. But Sally, with a towel round her, went down to the water's edge. "You're to come out this minute, Philip," she called, as though he were a small boy under her charge. (*Maugham*) 38. It seemed like an age, but I suppose the whole thing can't have lasted thirty seconds really. (*Forster*) 39. "Land ought to be very dear about there," he said. (*Galsworthy*)

**Exercise 18. Insert modal verbs and explain their use (use the contracted forms shan't, won't, shouldn't, wouldn't if necessary). Translate into Russian.**

1. You \_\_\_ have looked lovely in a veil, Aunt Em. Didn't she, Uncle? (*Galsworthy*) 2. Won't you sit down, Mr. Anderson? I \_\_\_ have asked you before; but I'm so troubled. (*Shaw*) 3. I went over to the window....The pavements were damp and reflected the yellow light. It \_\_\_ have rained to-day. (*Murdoch*) 4. "Now please tell me how you are going to celebrate the great event of my having won a scholarship. \_\_\_ we have a grand sort of schoolroom treat?"... "We certainly will," replied the mother. "You have worked hard and \_\_\_ have your reward." (contracted) (*Meade*) 5. "I mean they're sending me to New York for good. To be the head of the New York office." "I don't believe it," Mrs. Smith said... "I simply don't believe it. I think you \_\_\_ have lost your mind." "It's true," he said,... "I \_\_\_ to start a week from Saturday." (*Benson*) 6. There were two letters for him. One from his guardian..., the other from his sister. The man she was engaged to... was afraid that his leave was going to be curtailed. They would \_\_\_ to be married at once. They might even \_\_\_ to get a special licence. (*Galsworthy*) 7. Pearl: I sent out to the garage and gave instructions that the old Rolls-Royce \_\_\_ to be taken down at once and the other \_\_\_ to go to London. (*Maugham*) 8. "Tootie \_\_\_ have been in school this year," Mr. Smith said defiantly. "And would have been too, if you hadn't carried on so about her being the baby. She'll \_\_\_ to start school sometime, you know." (*Benson*) 9. Hsshl He's still asleep. What \_\_\_ we to do when he wakes? \_\_\_ we go up to him and wait for it? (*Galsworthy*) 10. Let's go over and see old Shropshire. He \_\_\_ have known your father well, Con. (*Galsworthy*) 11. "Did you \_\_\_ to take a cab?" "No... there was nothing much to bring." (*Cronin*) 12. Mrs. Ferse asked him if he had had dinner, and if he would like to go to bed; and if he would see a doctor; but he \_\_\_ speak, he sat with his eyes closed. (contracted) (*Galsworthy*) 13....from time to time he and

Esther Norn \_\_\_ to be seen together. (*Dreiser*) 14. Paula: Ah! (*She sits at the piano and touches the keys.*) Lady Orreyed: Oh, yes, do play! That's the only thing I envy you for. Paula: What \_\_\_ I play? (*Pinero*) 15. A doctor called in at this late hour...He suggested a nurse, but this Mrs. Widdle, ill as she was, \_\_\_ not hear of. It would cost so much. (*Dreiser*) 16. You \_\_\_ not be so careless with your things. (*Gow and D'Usseau*) 17. You \_\_\_ not to tell Dad what I told you, Mother. (*Galsworthy*) 18....indignation against Martin ran high. No one \_\_\_ have anything to do with a Socialist traitor. (*London*) 19. It's all over the town, and \_\_\_ injure your reputation. (*Forster*) 20. We \_\_\_ have children, Gretta — a lot of children. There would be no time to worry about ourselves then. (*Caldwell*) 21. "O Sue!" he cried, sitting down beside her and taking her hand. "How is this! You couldn't write?" "No, it wasn't that!" she answered. "I did catch a bad cold — but I could have written. Only I \_\_\_ I" (contracted) (*Hardy*) 22. She was always well-dressed and carried herself with an inimitable air that \_\_\_ have been bora in her. It \_\_\_ never have been acquired. (*Dreiser*) 23. To Zedelbush Wolff said, "Go and order your men to drop their arms. They \_\_\_ to leave the hotel singly and with upraised hands." (*Heym*) 24. There are some houses there somewhere. We'll ask, they \_\_\_ have seen him. (*Galsworthy*) 25. "Well, Annie," he said. "I gave Trask a dollar for his trouble." "You \_\_\_ not have done that, Father/" Mrs. Smith said. "After all, we do pay him to watch the house." (*Benson*) 26. On the inland side hills \_\_\_ to be seen, spotted with olive trees... (*Murdoch*) 27. " \_\_\_ I ask," he said..., "what it is that is bothering you, my dear?" (*Carter*) 28. "I \_\_\_ be out again directly," he said to the driver, or I \_\_\_ be kept some time." (*Galsworthy*) 29. You \_\_\_ to stay out so late: it makes you fit for nothing, (contracted) (*Galsworthy*)

#### Exercise 19. Translate into English, using modal verbs.

1. «Помочь вам?» — «Нет, спасибо, я сделаю все сама». 2. «Не знаю, справлюсь ли я с этой работой в такой короткий срок». — «Вы должны были подумать об этом раньше». 3. Не может быть, чтобы он уже вернулся, ведь он вчера только уехал в Москву. Вы, должно быть, ошиблись. 4. Вы не должны позволять ей читать в сумерки, она может испортить глаза. 5. Вы не должны' были оставлять гореть газ, такими вещами нельзя шутить, ведь мог произойти пожар! 6. Он должен был поехать в Москву на прошлой неделе, но конференция задержала его на несколько дней. 7. Тысячу раз я просила ее не хлопать дверью, когда я занимаюсь, но она все равно хлопает. 8. Я вас, должно быть, неправильно понял и поэтому пришел так рано. 9. Вам не к чему брать зонтик, на небе нет ни облачка. 10. Мне придется оставить ей записку, я ее, наверно, не увижу. 11. «Почему они ее тогда не видели?» — «Она могла уйти до их прихода». 12. Вам незачем идти на почту, я отправлю ваше письмо. 13. Джордж должен был вчера у нас обедать, но он не пришел. 14. Погода была прекрасная; мы пошли в сад, всюду можно было видеть счастливые лица детей. 15. «Купить вам „Сдается в наем" Голсуорси?» — «Нет, не надо; моя сестра была вчера в книжном магазине, она, возможно, купила эту книгу». 16. Доктор велел ей лежать в постели, но она и слышать об этом не хотела. 17. Обычно я хожу в филармонию пешком, но вчера я вышел поздно, и мне пришлось сесть в автобус.

#### Exercise 20. Translate into English, using modal verbs whenever possible. (Based on an episode from *David Copperfield* by Ch. Dickens.)

1. Давид считал, что Дора должна заниматься хозяйством и вести счет расходам. 2. Он купил ей поваренную книгу, надеясь, что это может послужить хорошим началом, но Дора не хотела даже заглянуть в нее. 3. Она нашла для нее другое применение: на ней должна была стоять и проделывать свои трюки ее собачка Джип. 4. Что касается подсчета расходов, она попыталась считать, но вскоре сказала, что цифры ни за что не хотят складываться, и бросила. 5. Давид долгое время досадовал на Дору и думал, что она могла бы проявлять некоторый интерес к хозяйству, но потом понял, что он не должен требовать от 'нее того, чего

она не может делать.

**Exercise 21. Translate into English, using modal verbs.**

1. Концерт должен был быть пятого февраля, но был отложен из-за болезни дирижера. 2. Петя узнал об этом до дня концерта, но не сообщил своему другу Коле, так как у него был испорчен телефон. 3. Коля очень рассердился на него. «Ты должен был сказать мне, не мог же ты быть так занят, чтобы не зайти на почту или позвонить», — сказал он, когда они увиделись. 4. Петя объяснил, что как раз в тот день заболела его сестра и он должен был за ней ухаживать. 5. Но его друг и слушать не хотел его объяснений. 6. «Ты мог бы найти способ дать мне знать», — упрямо повторял он, хотя Петя продолжал оправдываться, говоря, что никого не было дома и он боялся, что сестре может что-нибудь понадобиться во время его отсутствия.

**Exercise 22. Translate into English, using modal verbs. (Based on an episode from The Citadel by A. Cronin.)**

1. Кристин поражалась перемене, происшедшей в Эндрю. 2. «Не может быть, чтобы он потерял интерес к работе, не может быть, чтобы он думал только о деньгах», — думала она. 3. Эндрю в свою очередь не понимал, почему Кристин стала такой нервной и почему она ни за что не хочет сказать, что с ней такое. 4. Он думал, что вместо того, чтобы сердиться на него, ей следовало бы радоваться его успеху. 5. «Она могла бы подумать о том, как лучше обставить нашу квартиру теперь, когда мы можем позволить себе это», — думал он. 6. Но он не мог долго думать об этом, так как был очень занят: ему надо было обслужить всех своих пациентов, поэтому он решил, что ее странное поведение — просто каприз, на который он не должен обращать внимания. 7. Однажды миссис Лоренс позвонила ему и, сказав, что супруг ее уехал на рыбную лодку в Ирландию и она, быть может, через несколько дней поедет к нему, позвала его к завтраку. 8. Он принял ее приглашение, хотя и подумал, что она могла бы пригласить и Кристин. 9. Потом он пришел к заключению, что это визит скорее деловой, а не светский и что он должен бывать в обществе и заводить знакомства, которые могут быть полезны для его карьеры, и что ему не к чему говорить об этом Кристин.

**Exercise 23. Translate into English, using modal verbs whenever possible. (Based on an episode from David Copperfield by Ch. Dickens.)**

1. Мистер Копперфильд часто думал, что его тетушка могла бы приехать познакомиться с его женой. 2. Неужели она забыла, как она любила меня? 3. Не может быть, чтобы она меня забыла. 4. «Это, должно быть, мисс Бетси», — подумала миссис Копперфильд, увидев незнакомую даму, которая шла по саду. 5. «Она не должна была так пугать вас», — сказала Пеготти, отводя свою госпожу вверх. 6. Она могла бы проявить больше чуткости. 7. «Кто это может быть?» — подумал мистер Чиллип, увидев мисс Бетси. 8. Может быть, это какая-нибудь родственница миссис Копперфильд. 9. Но он сейчас же прогнал эту мысль. «Не может быть, чтобы эта дама была родственницей, у нее такой странный вид». 10. Неужели она уехала, не увидев ребенка? 11. «Она не могла так поступить, какая бы странная она ни была», — сказала миссис Копперфильд. 12. Пеготти ответила, что мисс Бетси, должно быть, очень рассердилась на миссис Копперфильд за то, что у нее родился сын. 13. «Но, может быть, она не уехала, может быть, она пошла погулять и скоро вернется», — ответила миссис Копперфильд. 14. Пеготти, однако, сказала решительно, что она, должно быть, уехала, и уехала навсегда. 15. «Она могла бы попрощаться со мной и взглянуть на моего малютку», — заметила миссис Копперфильд.

**Exercise 24. Translate into English, using modal verbs whenever possible. (Based on an episode from David Copperfield by Ch. Dickens.)**

1. «Где же может быть миссис Копперфильд?» — думала Пеготти, которая не

ложились спать, ожидая свою хозяйку. 2. Она, должно быть, опять ушла к тем соседям, где она всегда встречается этого господина со злобными черными глазами. 3. Затем она подумала, что, может быть, миссис Копперфильд дома, что она, может быть, не видела, как та пришла. 4. «Неужели она влюблена в этого господина, неужели она забыла своего мужа?» — думала она. 5. Она не могла понять, как ее госпожа может допустить, чтобы этот джентльмен с черными бакенбардами ухаживал за ней. 6. Когда миссис Копперфильд пришла, Пеготти сказала ей, что ей не следовало так надолго оставлять ребенка, что она должна была вернуться раньше. 7. «Вы могли бы вернуться раньше и провести вечер с ребенком», — сказала она. 8. Но миссис Копперфильд не слышала, что говорит Пеготти, она сидела, погруженная в мысли. 9. Она думала о мистере Мердстоне. «Он, наверное, полюбит Давида, он, кажется, очень добрый человек, не может быть, чтобы он меня обманывал».

### THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

**Exercise 1. Insert the appropriate form of the Subjunctive Mood. Comment on the form and the use of the Subjunctive Mood. Translate into Russian (conditional sentences).**

1. I honestly think it \_\_\_ better if we \_\_\_ each other for awhile. (to be, to see — negative) (*Hansford Johnson*) 2. If you \_\_\_ already married, Mr. Clay, I \_\_\_ for you. (to be — negative, to wait) (*Stone*) 3. Now if only Betty \_\_\_ able to come this evening she \_\_\_ it. But, of course, she had to choose this evening to go and see her mother, (to be, to do) (*A. Wilson*) 4. If he \_\_\_ ordinary, I \_\_\_ him (to be, to love — negative) (*Galsworthy*) 5. And if anything \_\_\_ to him, there \_\_\_ something in the Press, (to happen, to be) (*Priestley*) 6. I \_\_\_ it a few months ago, Mr. Chapin. (to believe) (*Dreiser*) 7. If I \_\_\_ you, I think I \_\_\_ very much as you do. (to be, to feel) (*Snow*) 8. You first brought your friend into my sister's company, and but for you we \_\_\_ never \_\_\_ him. (to see) (*Dickens*) 9. I certainly won't leave you so long as you are in mourning. It \_\_\_ most unfriendly. If I \_\_\_ in mourning you \_\_\_ with me, I suppose, (to be, to be, to stay) (*Wilde*) 10. He was a power in the College, and \_\_\_ in any society, (to be) (*Snow*) 11. If you \_\_\_ news before morning, ring me up at once, (to have) (*Hansford Johnson*) 12. I like the place. The air suits me. I \_\_\_ surprised if I \_\_\_ here, (to be — negative, to settle down) (*Shaw*) 13. There is nothing the Barkers \_\_\_ for a few pounds, (to do — negative) (*Wilson*) 14. Well that wasn't true what she said and, if it \_\_\_ that \_\_\_ no business of hers, (to be, to be) (*A. Wilson*) 15. "She told me the other day that her heart stopped for five minutes when that horrid nurse was rude to her." "Nonsense! She \_\_\_ alive now if her heart \_\_\_ for five seconds." (to be — negative, to stop) (*Shaw*) 16. I think it \_\_\_ her so much good to have a short stroll with you in the Park, Dr. Chasuble. (to do) (*Wilde*) 17. The story I have to tell \_\_\_. never \_\_\_ if one day I \_\_\_ across the street, (to happen, to walk — negative) (*Maugham*) 18. "She is so wretched," I told him, "that she \_\_\_ gladly \_\_\_ to-morrow morning if it \_\_\_ for the baby." (to die, to be — negative) (*Hansford Johnson*) 19. If I \_\_\_ you I \_\_\_ abroad again.. (to be, to go) (*Hardy*) 20. "I think, Edward," said Mrs. Dashwood, "you — a happier man if you \_\_\_ any profession to engage your time and give an interest to your plans and actions. Some inconvenience to your friends, indeed, might result from it: you \_\_\_ able to give them so much of your time." (to be, to have, to be — negative) (*Austen*) 21. Jago was longing for me to say that he ought to be the next Master. A few years before I \_\_\_ yes on the spot, (to say) (*Snow*) 22. And if I \_\_\_ I was going to meet you, I \_\_\_ differently. (to know, to dress) (*Shaw*) 23. If he \_\_\_ here, send him to us at once, (to return) (*Priestley*) 24. I \_\_\_ what I am but for him. (to be — negative) (*Maugham*) 25. "Why are you talking this rubbish," he said, "and making me talk it too?" "If what you say \_\_\_ true, women \_\_\_ either poisonous or boring!" (to be, to be) (*Murdoch*) 26. Just think, if I \_\_\_ the pictures I \_\_\_ a rich woman now. (to buy, to be) (*Maugham*) 27. Mr. Gresham, this marriage will, at any rate, put an end to your pecuniary embarrassment, unless, indeed, Frank \_\_\_ a hard creditor, (to prove) (*Trollope*) 28. Anyhow, a fire started, and if a young fellow who's working here \_\_\_ instantly \_\_\_ with an axe, their big storage tank of gasoline \_\_\_ in the air and God knows what \_\_\_ then, (to set about — negative, to go up, to happen) We all \_\_\_ with it. (to go) Honestly, we're all lucky to

be alive. If it \_\_\_ for this chap, we \_\_\_ (to be — negative, to be — negative) (*Priestley*)

**Exercise 2. Translate into English, using the Subjunctive Mood where required (conditional sentences).**

(A) 1. Вы бы чувствовали себя лучше, если бы не ложились спать так поздно (to keep late hours). 2. Мы бы не опоздали на поезд, если бы взяли такси. 3. Мы могли бы, пойти на каток, если бы не было так холодно. 4. Если бы вчера не было так холодно, мы, возможно, пошли бы на каток. 5. Если бы вы не сидели на сквозняке (to sit in the draught), вы бы не простудились. 6. Вы бы себя хорошо сегодня чувствовали, если бы приняли вчера лекарство. 7. Если бы я был на вашем месте, я бы больше проводил времени на открытом воздухе. 8. Вы бы лучше знали язык, если бы прочитали летом несколько английских книг. 9. Если бы не моя болезнь, я бы уже окончил университет. 10. Вы бы не разбили вазу, если бы были осторожны. 11. Мы, возможно, не заблудились бы, если бы ночь не была такой темной. 12. Я вернусь не позднее шести, если меня не задержат в университете. 13. Если бы не дождь, мы могли бы поехать за город. 14. Вы были бы уже здоровы, если бы вовремя обратились к врачу. 15. Если бы не ваша помощь, я бы не смог кончить вчера работу. 16. Предположим, мы были бы свободны сегодня вечером, куда бы мы пошли? 17. В случае, если пойдет дождь, я останусь дома. 18. Я бы не упал, если бы не было так скользко. 19. Если бы не такси, я, возможно, опоздал бы на поезд.

(B) (Based on an episode from *David Copperfield* by Ch. Dickens.)

1. Если бы миссис Копперфильд не имела намерения выйти замуж, она бы не послала Давида к мистеру Пеготти. 2. Глядя на маленькую Эмили, Давид часто думал о том, что если бы не мистер Пеготти, она была бы несчастным бесприютным (homeless) ребенком. 3. Давид сказал Пеготти: «Я думаю, что ваш брат очень добрый человек; он бы не удочерил (to adopt) маленькую Эмили, если бы он не был такой добрый». 4. Маленькая Эмили часто говорила Давиду, что если бы случилось так, что она когда-нибудь стала богатой дамой, она подарила бы мистеру Пеготти золотые часы, серебряную трубку и целый ящик денег. 5. Давид не знал, что его матушка вышла замуж за мистера Мердстона. Если бы он знал об этом, он не возвращался бы домой в таком хорошем настроении. 6. Если бы мистер Мердстон сказал Давиду хотя бы одно ласковое (kind) слово, мальчик, возможно, привязался бы к нему. 7. Увидев на лице Давида следы слез, мистер Мердстон велел ему немедленно умыться. Мальчик сразу понял, что если бы случилось так, что он ослушался отчима, тот бы его жестоко избил. 8. «Как мы были бы сейчас счастливы, если бы матушка не вышла замуж за мистера Мердстона», часто думал Давид. 9. Давид был способный мальчик и мог бы хорошо учиться, если бы на уроках не присутствовали Мердстоны. 10. Давид стал угрюмым и вялым (dull) ребенком. Он, возможно, совсем бы отупел (to get stupefied), если бы не книги, которые он читал часами.

(C) 1. Николенька Болконский подошел к Пьеру, бледный, с блестящими, лучистыми глазами. «Ежели бы папа был жив... он бы согласен был с вами?» (Л. Толстой) 2. Она ахнула (to moan), пошатнулась и наверно бы упала, если бы Базаров не поддержал ее. (*Тургенев*) 3. Если бы Григорий Иванович мог предвидеть эту встречу, то конечно б он поворотил в сторону (to turn in another direction)... (*Пушкин*) 4. Нет, у меня нет и гордости. Если бы была гордость, я не поставил бы себя (to put oneself) в такое положение. (Л. Толстой) 5. Если бы он мог слышать, что говорили ее родители в этот вечер, если б он мог перенестись на точку зрения семьи (to put oneself at the point of view of somebody) и узнать, что Кити будет несчастна, если он не женится на ней, он бы очень удивился и не поверил бы этому. (Л. Толстой) 6. «Да приезжай теперь ко мне», — сказал Левин... «Я бы приехал к тебе, если бы знал, что не найду Сергея Ивановича». (Л. Толстой) 7. Он бы тотчас ушел, если бы не Лиза... (*Тургенев*) 8. Ежели бы княжна Марья в состоянии была думать в эту минуту, она еще

более чем m-lle Bourienne удивилась бы перемене, происшедшей в ней. (Л. Толстой)

**Exercise 3. Point out mood auxiliaries and modal verbs. Translate into Russian.**

1. If Savina were with him at this moment, his doubts and loneliness would evaporate. (*Wilson*) 2. She felt if she could lose herself in her mother's arms she would be able to endure the pain that was so intense. (*Caldwell*) 3. Herzog pictured what might have happened if instead of listening so intensely and thoughtfully he had hit Madeleine in the face. (*Bellow*) 4. When she's alone and humiliated and broken it would be dreadful if she had nowhere to go. (*Maugham*) 5. I think, if he wouldn't mind, I should rather like him to spare me five minutes. (*Snow*) 6. If the tradition be ever broken it will be for an abler man than Stephen. (*Shaw*) 7. Jeff wished to suggest that it might be best if he went back to Lord's Creek. (*Caldwell*) 8. It would be worse than before if I should lose you now. (*Greene*) 9. I left a message for him... that I should be glad to see him for a moment on a matter of importance for himself, and that if he would look in here when he was passing he would be welcome. (*Shaw*) 10. He wondered what Bob Watson would say and do if he should happen to see one of his tenants' crops in that condition. (*Caldwell*) 11. My shirt and trousers, stained with heat, dew, grass, and the Kentish soil on which I had slept — and torn besides—might have frightened the birds from my aunt's garden, as I stood at the gate. (*Dickens*) 12. She thrilled from head to toe at the question. A piece of ice dropped down her back could not have startled her more. (*Dreiser*) 13. I should tell your son to keep away from him if I were you. (*A. Wilson*) 14. If I had gone overseas, instead of him, I might have learned something and been somebody. (*Baum*) 15. If she could have been compressed to about three quarters of her actual width, she would have been very attractive. (*Amis*)

**Exercise 4. Insert the appropriate form of the Subjunctive Mood. Comment on the form and the use of the Subjunctive Mood. Translate into Russian (simple sentences, conditional sentences, adverbial clauses of purpose and concession).**

1. She wanted him to be a member of Parliament only that he \_\_\_ a claim on the gratitude of his party, (to have) (*Maugham*) 2. God \_\_\_ me from such friends in future, (to save) (*Lindsay*) 3. Andrews turned up the collar of his coat, lest he \_\_\_ (to recognize—passive) (*Greene*) 4. I am prepared to gratify all your whims, however unreasonable they \_\_\_ (to be) (*Maugham*) 5. Do you think she \_\_\_ and have lunch with me if I „her? (to come, to telephone) (*Hansford Johnson*) 6. "Oh God \_\_\_ you! How could you strike an old woman like that?" (to forgive) (*Shaw*) 7. Tell them I leave my country that I \_\_\_ free, and it is the end and the beginning, (to be) (*Buck*) 8. "Mr. Penty," said the doctor... "in my experience, very few people are perfectly well, although they \_\_\_ they are." (to imagine) (*Priestley*) 9. I keep a diary in order to enter the wonderful secrets of my life. If I \_\_\_ them down, I \_\_\_ probably \_\_\_ all about them, (to write — negative, to forget) (*Wilde*) 10. He seemed to be dozing when she returned, and she put the low fire together very softly lest she \_\_\_ him. (to awake) (*Dickens*) 11. Whatever your father \_\_\_ once \_\_\_, to day he's decay; he's age; he's everything that's corrupt and evil, (to be) (*Gow and D'Usseau*) 12. God \_\_\_ for her kind heart, (to thank — passive) (*Lindsay*) 13. If necessary, I could cable her to tell her his address in order that she \_\_\_ Australia without seeing him. (to leave — negative) (*Shute*) 14. I \_\_\_ you if I \_\_\_ a way out, but there isn't one. (to press — negative, to see) (*Maugham*) 15. It was plain that however conscientious Cassilis \_\_\_, however desperately hard and intelligently he \_\_\_, he would never get his captaincy, (to be, to work) (*Hansford Johnson*) 16. And, fearful lest he \_\_\_ Soames turned away and mounted slowly to his room, (to see — passive) (*Galsworthy*) 17. This was true, and he \_\_\_ to meditate on this sad confession if he \_\_\_ otherwise engaged, (to pause, to be — negative) (*Murdoch*) 18. He had to admit to himself that whatever Miss Dobb's faults \_\_\_, she was the right sort of girl to take to a restaurant, (to be) (*Lessing*)

**Exercise 5. Translate into English, using the Subjunctive Mood where required.**

1. В этом зале очень хорошая акустика (acoustics); где бы вы ни сидели, вы все услышите. 2. У нас были очень плохие места; если бы акустика в этом зале не была такой хорошей, мы бы ничего не услышали. 3. Как бы он ни был занят, он находил

время ходить в театр. 4. Как он ни занят, он находит время ходить в театр. 5. Что бы вы ни говорили, мне эта пьеса не нравится. 6. Врач сказал: «Как ни слаб больной, его надо оперировать». 7. Если бы не операция, больной, возможно, умер бы. 8. Сестра закрыла окно, чтобы шум не разбудил больного. 9. Врач сказал: «Больной теперь вне опасности. Но если бы случилось так, что у него опять поднялась температура, позвоните мне немедленно». 10. Когда бы вы ни пришли ко мне, я всегда буду рад вас видеть. 11. Приходите пораньше, чтобы я мог показать вам свои книги. 12. Машина остановилась, чтобы туристы посмотрели развалины старого монастыря. 13. Как бы темна ни была ночь, нам придется продолжать путь. 14. Как ни темна была ночь, туристы решили продолжать путь. 15. Если бы не звезды, которые так ярко светили, не было бы видно ни зги (to be pitch dark). 16. Я принес вам журнал, чтобы вы прочитали эту статью. 17. Позвоните мне вечером, как бы поздно вы ни вернулись домой. 18. Нан деньте пальто, чтобы не простудиться. 19. Как бы он ни был взволнован час тому назад, сейчас он кажется совершенно спокойным. 20. Мне пришлось взять такси, чтобы не опоздать на поезд.

**Exercise 6. Insert the appropriate form of the Subjunctive Mood. Comment on the form and the use of the Subjunctive Mood. Translate into Russian (simple sentences, conditional sentences, adverbial clauses of purpose, concession and comparison, predicative clauses, and subject clauses).**

1. She took up her work and began to sew, as if it \_\_\_ always \_\_\_ her custom to work in this room, (to be) (*Greene*) 2. It's important that he \_\_\_ what he wants, (to have) (*A. Wilson*) 3. Have you realized that though you \_\_\_ towns and win battles, you cannot conquer a nation, (to occupy) (*Shaw*) 4. It was not Sir Edgar's intention that such a remarkable performance \_\_\_ (to curtail — passive) (*A. Wilson*) 5. You \_\_\_ to carry so much weight if you \_\_\_ the proper exercise, (to have — negative, to take) (*Caldwell*) 6. Mrs. Strickland was taking her family to the coast of Norfolk, so that the children \_\_\_ the sea and her husband golf, (to have) (*Maugham*) 7. You look as if you \_\_\_ toothache... (to have)' (*Wilde*) 8. Then he looked at his hands; he looked at them as if he \_\_\_ just \_\_\_ he had them and \_\_\_ yet \_\_\_ what they were for. (to discover, to puzzle out — negative) (*Faulkner*) 9. The poor little woman will stand up for her brother, whatever he \_\_\_ (to be) (*James*) 10. I thought it was necessary that we \_\_\_ a short conversation before I left this house. (to have) (*Maugham*) 11. You are as right as can be and far \_\_\_ it from me to tell you otherwise, (to be) (*Dickens*) 12. He sounded as though he \_\_\_ us to see, \_\_\_ himself to see, that he was happy. (to want — negative, to want — negative) (*Snow*) 13. I dared not express my anxiety, lest it \_\_\_ her offence, (to give) (*Dickens*) 14. Without his help she \_\_\_ never \_\_\_ able to achieve an independent establishment and a clientele, (to be) (*Murdoch*) 15. After a while she saw Tommy. She went straight towards him, as if she \_\_\_ for him all the while, (to look) (*Faulkner*) 16. We must remember that though she \_\_\_ grievously in leaving her home, she is still our sister, (to err) (*Hardy*) 17. If only he \_\_\_ free (to be) (*Galsworthy*) 18. Letters came to her from the family worded with a sort of anxious astonishment that Soames \_\_\_ such a thing happen to him. (to have) (*Galsworthy*) 19. She had brought the nurse back to attend to Laura, so that all her time \_\_\_ for her husband and his mother, (to be) (*Hansford Johnson*)

**Exercise 7. Translate into English, using the Subjunctive Mood where required.**

(A) Based on an episode from *Vanity Fair* by W. Thackeray.

1. Мать Бекки была француженка, и девушка говорила по-французски так, словно она всю жизнь прожила в Париже. 2. Когда Бекки было шестнадцать лет, друзья ее отца обращались с ней, как со взрослой женщиной (как если бы она была взрослой женщиной), и часто отказывались (to give up) от самых веселых балов и пирушек (parties), чтобы провести с ней вечер. 3. После смерти отца Бекки переехала в Чизик (Chiswick), в пансион мисс Пинкертон, которая взяла девушку для того, чтобы она говорила по-французски с ее ученицами. 4. Когда мисс Пинкертон услышала, как Бекки играет на рояле, она подумала, что было бы желательно, чтобы

девушка учила ее воспитанниц также и музыке. 5. Мисс Пинкертон никогда не была добра к Бекки и всячески (in every way possible) старалась оскорбить и унижить ее. Она бы иначе относилась к девушке, если бы та была дочерью богатых родителей. 6. «Что бы Эмилия ни говорила,—думала Бекки, — я знаю, что мисс Пинкертон ненавидит меня. Она никогда не взяла бы меня, если бы моя работа не была для нее выгодна». 7. Бекки тоже ненавидела мисс Пинкертон и относилась к ней, как к своему злейшему врагу (worst enemy). 8. Бекки уехала бы из Чизика, но она прекрасно понимала, что для нее очень важно получить хорошее образование. «Какой бы несчастной я себя ни чувствовала у мисс Пинкертон, мне придется некоторое время здесь оставаться»,—думала Бекки. 9. Как ни выгодна была для мисс Пинкертон работа Бекки, она решила, наконец, что будет лучше, если девушка уедет из Чизика. Она понимала, что для того, чтобы Бекки не оказала плохого влияния на ее учениц, им лучше расстаться. 10. Когда Бекки выразила желание, чтобы мисс Пинкертон нашла ей место гувернантки, та немедленно нашла такое место и таким образом избавилась от девушки.

**(В)** 1. Предчувствуя неизбежную разлуку (separation), он хотел по крайней мере остаться ее другом, как будто дружба с такою женщиной была возможна... (Тургенев) 2. Павел Петрович... промолвил с глубоким вздохом: «Будьте счастливы, друзья мои! Farewell!» (Тургенев) 3. «Я люблю тебя больше, лучше, чем прежде», — сказал князь Андрей, поднимая рукой ее лицо, так чтобы он мог глядеть в ее глаза. (Л. Толстой) 4. И вдруг... с ним сделалось дурно, так что он прислонился к забору, чтобы не упасть. (Л. Толстой) 5. Если бы она располагала (to intend) основаться в Лавриках, она бы все в них переделала, начиная, разумеется, с дома... (Тургенев) 6. Я предложил отцу ее стакан пуншу; Дуне подал я чашку чаю, и мы втроем начали беседовать, как будто век были знакомы. (Пушкин) 7. Она [Анна] знала, что, чтобы он ни сказал ей, он скажет не все, что он думает. (Л. Толстой) 8...она старалась улыбаться, чтобы не огорчить его. (Л. Толстой) 9. Когда он передал (to tell) Кити совет Степана Аркадьевича ехать за границу, он очень удивился, что она не соглашалась на это... (Л. Толстой) 10. Герман очень недоволен своим приятелем: он говорит, что на его месте он поступил бы совсем иначе... (Пушкин)

**Exercise 8. Insert the appropriate form of the Subjunctive Mood. Comment on the form and the use of the Subjunctive Mood. Translate into Russian (object clauses, attributive clauses, sentences with the emotional should).**

1. Strange that so simple a thing \_\_ birth to beautiful delight. (to give) (Young) 2. I wish I \_\_ what has frightened you so. (to know) (Shaw) 3. I hate telephones. I wish I \_\_ never \_\_ one put in. (to have) (Maugham) 4. When we had sat for an hour or so, she insisted that we \_\_ all \_\_ to the restaurant below and have supper, (to go) (Hansford Johnson) 5...that they \_\_ before nine o'clock to see him off was astounding, (to arise) (Sinclair) 6. It's time I \_\_ a new leaf, (to turn over) (Du Maurier) 7. Oh! I am so ill! so miserable! Oh, I wish I \_\_ dead, (to be) (Shaw) 8. Apart from his awe, and his concern that the tent \_\_ up, Goldstein was watching the storm with a fascinated interest, (to remain) (Mailer) 9. I proposed that we \_\_ all \_\_ and eat ices in the park, (to go) (Maugham) 10. I wish Fleur \_\_ seriously to water-colour work. (to take) (Galsworthy) 11. Why \_\_ people \_\_ with others like that? (to interfere) (Galsworthy) 12. I appreciate your coming, yet in a way I wish you \_\_ (to come — negative) (Hansford Johnson) 13. I suggest that he \_\_ home for a while, (to go) (Maugham) 14. I wish I \_\_ your talent, (to have) (/. Shaw) 15. It seemed unbearable to him that she \_\_ (to suffer) (Greene) 16. I thought also of Field himself, of his easy charm, of his genuine desire that all \_\_ happy so long as it involved no inconvenience to himself, (to be) (Hansford Johnson) 17. Soon I said that it was time I \_\_ home, (to go) (Snow) 18. She wished he \_\_ pestering her with this sort of reminder, (to stop) (Lessing) 19. "I demand," says the small man, "that you \_\_ with me." (to come) (Saroyari) 20. "I want to be treated with respect," Miss Zelinka wailed. "I was brought up in a good family, why \_\_ I \_\_ with respect?" (to treat — negative, passive) (/. Shaw)



**Exercise 9. Translate into English, using the Subjunctive Mood (object clauses and attributive clauses).**

(A) 1. Как жаль, что идет дождь. Я бы хотел, чтобы была хорошая погода, тогда мы могли бы поехать за город. 2. Я слышал, что вы очень хорошо играете на рояле. Я бы хотел, чтобы вы поиграли мне. 3. Мне жаль, что он не приехал в Ленинград на каникулы. Ему давно пора посмотреть этот прекрасный город. 4. Погода была такая плохая, что я пожалел, что вышел из дому. 5. Хотелось бы мне, чтобы вы не были таким рассеянным и не задавали один и тот же вопрос несколько раз. 6. У ребенка очень хороший слух (to have a good ear for music). Жаль, что его не учат музыке. Его давно пора отдать в музыкальную школу. 7. Хотелось бы мне, чтобы вы не перебивали меня каждую минуту. 8. Мне очень жаль, что я это сказал; мне кажется, что он обиделся на мое замечание. 9. Я пожалел, что у меня не было времени, и я не мог пойти с ними в Эрмитаж. 10. Я бы хотел, чтобы вы побыли со мной. 11. Как жаль, что я не принял участия в этой экскурсии; говорят, она была очень интересна. 12. Я бы хотел, чтобы вы держали свои вещи в порядке. 13. Я чувствую себя очень плохо. Боюсь, как бы мне не заболеть. 14. Было очень поздно, и мы боялись, как бы нам не опоздать на поезд. 15. Погода была очень хорошая, и я предложил поехать за город и провести день на свежем воздухе. 16. Проследите за тем, чтобы студентов известили о перемене расписания. 17. Нам очень хочется (to be anxious), чтобы вы приняли участие в концерте. 18. Он хотел сразу же уйти, но я настаивал, чтобы он снял пальто и выпил чашку чая. 19. Уже поздно; нам пора идти (to be off). 20. Вам давно пора вернуть книгу в библиотеку.

(B) 1. Мавра Кузминишна предлагала внести раненого в дом. (Л. Толстой) 2. Толпа очутилась неожиданно так близко к императорам, что Ростову, стоявшему в передних рядах ее, стало страшно, как бы его не узнали. (Л. Толстой) 3....в Мытищах раненый сам потребовал, чтобы его вынесли (из коляски) и чтобы ему дали чаю. (Л. Толстой) 4. Она позвонила, девка вошла и на вопросы ее отвечала, что Кирила Петрович вечером ездил в Арбатове и возвратился поздно, что он дал строгое приказание... смотреть за тем, чтоб никто с нею не говорил. (Пушкин) 5.... раз утром St.-Jerome... предлагает мне ехать кататься (to go for a ride) с Любочкой и Катенькой. (Л. Толстой) 6. Степан Аркадьевич спорил со слугой Алексея Александровича и настаивал на том, чтоб о нем было доложено (to announce somebody). (Л. Толстой) 7. Каждый человек, Лиза, должен заботиться о том, чтобы привести все свои идеи в порядок, в систему... (А. Толстой) 8. Тогда Марья Дмитриевна вздохнула и, с своей стороны, предложила Гедеоновскому пройтись с ней по саду. (Тургенев)

**Exercise 10. Translate into English, using the emotional should.**

(A) Based on an episode from *Oliver Twist* by Ch. Dickens.

1. «Как странно, что Оливер не вернулся, — сказал мистер Браунлоу. — Мне грустно думать, что мальчик обманул меня». 2. «Совершенно естественно, что Оливер убежал от вас; он, должно быть, вернулся к своим старым друзьям, — ответил мистер Гримвиг. — Зачем ему возвращаться к вам, ведь у него ваши деньги и книги?» 3. «Стыдно вам так плохо думать о ребенке, ведь вы его совсем не знаете, — возразил мистер Браунлоу. — Не может быть (it is impossible), чтобы он украл мои деньги и книги, я этому не верю». 4. «Как бы вам это ни было неприятно, вам придется поверить, — продолжал мистер Гримвиг. — Мне очень жаль, что вы так обманулись в ребенке», (to be disappointed in somebody)

(B) 1. «А вы его любите?» — «Он хороший человек; отчего же мне его не любить?» (Тургенев) 2. Не понимаю, зачем тебе нужно мучить меня? (Л. Толстой) 3. «Я нахожу только странным, что женщины ищут новых обязанностей, — сказал Сергей Иванович, — тогда как мы, к несчастью, видим, что мужчины обыкновенно избегают их». (Л. Толстой) 4. Нет, почему же тебе не приехать?.. Жена ждет тебя. Пожалуйста приезжай. (Л. Толстой) 5. Она и всегда рада ему была, но теперь особенно

рада была, что он видит ее во всей ее славе. (Л. Толстой) 6. Почему же не попробовать своего счастья?., (to try one's luck). (Пушкин)

**Exercise 11. Insert the appropriate form of the Subjunctive Mood. Comment on the form and the use of the Subjunctive Mood. Translate into Russian.**

1. Strickland was certainly forty, and I thought it disgusting that a man of his age \_\_\_ himself with affairs of the heart, (to concern) (*Maugham*) 2. He brightened as if he \_\_\_ a gift. (to receive) (*Lawrence*) 3. I wish you \_\_\_ me alone now. (to leave) (*Dreiser*) 4. It's time I \_\_\_ it out again from the beginning, (to think) (*Snow*) 5. When I suggested that he \_\_\_ to bed he said he could not sleep. (to go) (*Maugham*) 6....glancing sidelong at his nephew, he thought: "I wish I \_\_\_ his age!" (to be) (*Galsworthy*) 7. If I \_\_\_ you and \_\_\_ going to be a banker, I \_\_\_ first \_\_\_ a year or so in some good grain and commission house, (to be, to be, to spend) (*Dreiser*) 8. "God \_\_\_ us always," I said, "from the innocent and the good." (to save) (*Greene*) 9. She held her baby up to the window that she \_\_\_ the pretty silvery tinkle of the little bells on the pagoda, (to hear) (*Buck*) 10. She had a conviction that, long as she \_\_\_, her aunt would live at least as long, and always retain her brilliancy and activity, (to live) (*James*) 11. The arrangement was that Miss Everdene \_\_\_ them by coming there for a day or two... (to honour) (*Hardy*) 12. She was by now feeling so happy that she \_\_\_ for joy if it \_\_\_ for the delicious spell which she felt herself to be under and which still enjoined silence, (to shout, to be — negative) (*Murdoch*) 13. Why \_\_\_ he \_\_\_ the one to hurt her, when really he had wanted to be her friend from the beginning? (to be) (*Saroyan*) 14. For a fortnight it was necessary that someone \_\_\_ with him all night, and she took turns at watching with her husband, (to stay) (*Maugham*) 15. Lady Bracknell, I admit with shame that I do not know. I only wish I \_\_\_ (to do) (*Wilde*) 16. Hunter was anxious that a certain person \_\_\_ it. (to see — negative) (*Murdoch*) 17. Except for the unexpectedly sad lines which ran from his nose to the corners of his mouth he \_\_\_ like a boy. (to look) (*Mailer*) 18. Her face looked strange, as if she \_\_\_ to cry and \_\_\_ how. (to want, to forget) (*Galsworthy*) 19. But I still don't begin to understand why these people, however silly they \_\_\_ about their beliefs, \_\_\_ ready to risk murder, (to be, to be) (*Priestley*) 20. They were a pleasant pair, and I told myself it was far better that Avice \_\_\_ him than Roger. (to marry) (*Snow*) 21. Heaven \_\_\_ me, I left you alone with that scoundrel, (to forgive) (*Shaw*) 22. Mrs. Mann gave him a piece of bread-and-butter, Test he \_\_\_ too hungry when he got to the work-house. (to seem) (*Dickens*) 23. He was still puffing and blowing as if he \_\_\_ just \_\_\_ a mile, (to run) (*Priestley*) 24. I regret to say, Miss Chiltern, that I have no influence at all over my son. I wish I \_\_\_. If I \_\_\_, I know what I \_\_\_ him do. (to have, to have, to make) (*Wilde*) 25. "I want to marry Aileen," Cowperwood repeated, for emphasis' sake. "She wants to marry me. Under the circumstances, however you \_\_\_, you can have no real objection to my doing that, I am sure." (to feel) (*Dreiser*) 26. Besides, it's high time you \_\_\_ down, (to settle) (*Maugham*) 27. Sir Gregory Hatchland was a poor public speaker,... but he had seen to it that there — some good speakers on the platform, (to be) (*Priestley*) 28. She ran down to her cabin that she \_\_\_ the ship pulling away and widening the chasm between her and her beloved shore, (to see — negative) (*Buck*) 29. I wish you \_\_\_ me. (to interrupt — negative) (*Maugham*) 30. There had been a time when I \_\_\_ surprised to see girls like Avice and Tonia drink spirits, but I had come to accept it as another of the things which are inevitable in these troubled days of ours — and I could not see any possible reason why they \_\_\_ whisky if they liked it. (to be, to drink — negative) (*Snow*) 31. Far \_\_\_ it from me to marry any woman on account of her money, (to be) (*Trotlope*) 32. Your father tells me you think highly of his accomplishments whatever they \_\_\_ (to be) (*Lindsay*) 33. A little Jater Fox suggested that he \_\_\_ her a monthly allowance, in addition to the rent of the room, (to pay) (*Murdoch*) 34. She \_\_\_ to bed last night just as if nothing \_\_\_ if I \_\_\_ her. (to go, to happen, to let) (*Shaw*) 35. She [Aileen] was greatly outraged to think you \_\_\_ detectives on her trail, (to put) (*Dreiser*) 36. Perhaps, if such a thing \_\_\_ again, Mrs. de Winter will tell me personally? (to happen) (*Du Maurier*) 37. It seemed to me important that the weather \_\_\_, not the least cloud \_\_\_ on the horizon; I was

almost frightened to stare too long at the colour of the water lest it \_\_\_ or darken by the least degree, (to change — negative, to appear, to dull) (*Hansford Johnson*) 38. He wished now that he \_\_\_ to look at. Fleur's portrait; it \_\_\_ him something to talk of. (to stop, to give) (*Galsworthy*) 39. My people told me this story about the man so that I \_\_\_ what a fool he was and not be like him. (to understand) (*Saroyan*) 40. I am feeling very drowsy, and it is time I \_\_\_ to bed. (to go) (*Maugham*) 41. As she spoke to me she was glancing about the bar, her gaze hopping from one face to the next, as if it \_\_\_ imperative that she \_\_\_ nothing of what was going on in a shrivelling world, no matter how trivial it \_\_\_ (to be, to miss, to be) (*Hansford Johnson*) 42. I wish you \_\_\_ with your work instead of interrupting me all the time, (to get on) (*Maugham*) 43. Why \_\_\_ there \_\_\_ one law for men, and another for women? (to be) (*Wilde*) 44. She proposed that in a little while she and I \_\_\_ married, (to get) (*Coppard*) 45. Anything's better than to sit there as if you \_\_\_ you \_\_\_ a thousand miles away, (to wish, to be) (*Shaw*)

**Exercise 12. Translate into English, using the Subjunctive Mood. (Based on an episode from David Copperfield by Ch. Dickens.)**

1. Мисс Мердстон держала себя так, словно она была хозяйкой дома, словно она прожила там всю свою жизнь. 2. Она обращалась с миссис Копперфильд, как будто та была ребенком и совсем не знала жизни. 3. «Вам давно пора отдать ключи моей сестре», — сказал мистер Мердстон жене. 4. Мистер Мердстон не раз говорил, что очень важно, чтобы миссис Копперфильд была строга с Давидом. 5. Миссис Копперфильд никогда не ласкала Давида в присутствии мужа, чтобы не рассердить его. 6. «Странно, что мисс Бетси ни разу не написала нам, — сказала Пеготти. — Не может быть (it is impossible), чтобы она совсем забыла нас». 7. «С какой стати она будет нам писать? — возразила миссис Копперфильд. — Она не любит ни меня, ни моего ребенка!» 8. Мистер Мердстон просил сестру посмотреть за тем, чтобы Давид не был так часто в обществе Пеготти. 9. Давид боялся, как бы мистер Мердстон не увидел, что он пошел на кухню к Пеготти. 10. «Что бы ни говорила миссис Копперфильд, я знаю, что она несчастна», — думала Пеготти. 11. Мистер Мердстон настаивал на том, чтобы его жена уволила Пеготти. 12. «Как бы меня ни уговаривал мистер Мердстон, я ни за что не уволю Пеготти», — думала миссис Копперфильд. 13. «Если бы случилось так, что Пеготти ушла от нас, наша жизнь стала бы невыносимой», — думал Давид. 14. Как ни горячо (dearly) любила Давида миссис Копперфильд, она допустила, чтобы с ним плохо обращались. 15. Давид знал, что как бы он ни старался, он не сможет хорошо ответить уроки в присутствии отчима. 16. Давид боялся, как бы миссис Копперфильд не сочла его дурным и ленивым мальчиком. 17. «Как жаль, что матушка вышла замуж за мистера Мердстона, — не раз думал Давид. — Если бы не он, мы были бы очень счастливы». 18. В Салемской школе (Salem House) Давид чувствовал себя очень одиноким. «Как бы я хотел быть сейчас дома с матушкой и Пеготти», — часто думал он. 19. После смерти миссис Копперфильд Пеготти предложила, чтобы Давид поехал с нею в Ярмут. 20. Пеготти взяла мальчика в Ярмут, чтобы он отвлекся там от своих печальных мыслей (to divert oneself from something).

**Exercise 13. Insert should or would and state whether they are auxiliary or modal. Translate into Russian.**

1. She smiled; her smile was really very sweet, and she blushed a little; it was singular that a woman of that age \_\_\_ flush so readily. (*Maugham*) 2. He glanced at Sir Edgar, but the old man \_\_\_ not share the joke. (*A. Wilson*) 3. Richard proposed that we all \_\_\_ go to London together. (*Dickens*) 4. He saw a thousand things he \_\_\_ have done, but had not done. (*Jones*) 5. It is no use, I fear, to ask Tod; but of course if he \_\_\_ come too, both Stanley and myself \_\_\_ be delighted. (*Galsworthy*) 6. I wish you \_\_\_ not talk about that, Father. (*Dreiser*) 7. Her eyes were fixed on Lady Arabella, and her position seemed to say that it was time that her ladyship \_\_\_ go. (*Trollope*) 8. At the gate of Huntercombe whom \_\_\_ they meet but

Compton Bassett, looking very pale and unhappy? (*Reade*) 9. It was lonely! A woman in the room \_\_\_ have made all the difference. (*Galsworthy*) 10. I asked him one or two questions, but he \_\_\_ not answer. (*Maugham*) 11. I wish you — not talk like that. (*Hardy*) 12. He looked more than ever out of place: he \_\_\_ have stayed at home. (*Greene*) 13. I went to my bureau, with a sort of haste and trembling lest Madame \_\_\_ creep upstairs and spy me. (*Ch. Bronte*) 14. You see that it is necessary that he \_\_\_ pay us a visit, don't you? (*Shaw*) 15. Why \_\_\_ you expect her to act as you \_\_\_ act yourselves? (*Galsworthy*) 16. Now again he had forgotten that unemployment was not a mark of the lazy man; that the beggar did not beg because he \_\_\_ not work. (*Greene*) 17. She promised to inform him if anything important \_\_\_ occur. (*Reade*) 18. In his weary and hungry state, he \_\_\_ never have come here. (*Dreiser*) 19. Please, say to Mr. Townsend that I wish he \_\_\_ leave me alone. (*James*) 20. It is most important that you \_\_\_ be good. (*Shaw*) 21. He hesitated. "It's queer that you \_\_\_ be treating me like this, like a friend." (*Greene*) 22. During I the year she was sent to a Chinese boarding-school where she was given an education in her own language, for Carie \_\_\_ not separate the child from her own people. (*Buck*) 23. I was thinking angrily of Roger. He \_\_\_ have broken the news himself. (*Snow*) 24. He says, naturally enough, that it is absurd that he \_\_\_ be asked to provide for the children of a man who is rolling in money. (*Shaw*) 25. I swore that I forgave her everything, but she \_\_\_ not listen. (*Maugham*)

#### **Exercise 14. Comment on the Subjunctive Mood and modal verbs. Translate into Russian.**

1. There was no immediate answer, but presently I heard my name again, in a tone so very mysterious and awful, that I think I should have gone into a fit, if it had not occurred to me that it must have come through the keyhole. (*Dickens*) 2. As he walked along the north side of a certain street, what should he see but the truly beautiful and remarkable eyes of Mr. Angelo. (*Reade*) 3....you should never neglect a chance, however small it may seem. (*Conan Doyle*) 4. I hope he may not return here just yet. I pray God he may not come into my sight, for I may be tempted beyond myself. (*Hardy*) 5. Annette sighed. If Nicholas were only here, he would advise her. As he was not here, should she confide in Rosa? That was the question. (*Murdoch*) 6. Harper Steger... walked always as though he were a cat and a dog were! prowling somewhere in the offing. (*Dreiser*) 7. It was as if she had received a physical blow and were rocking on her feet. (*Heym*) 8. She had suggested that Abraham arrive precisely at one-thirty. (*Stone*) 9. If I were to die—and I may die soon—it would be dreadful that you should always think mistakenly of me. (*Trollope*) 10. She strove to ensnare him with comfort and would not see that comfort meant nothing to him. (*Maugham*) 11. I wished he would not always treat me as a child. (*Du Maurier*) 12. It is likely that except for the instruction of his grandfather, Karl himself would now be more like the other children. He would not have the military manner of walking which is the chief difference between him and the other children. (*Saroyan*) 13. He proposed to change his will to the effect that his collection should be bequeathed to the city only on certain conditions, the most important of which was that I should be retained as curator. (*Hansford Johnson*) 14. His spirits fell, however, when, upon reaching the park, he waited and waited and Carrie did not come. Could something have happened out there to keep her away? (*Dreiser*) 15. I never saw a man so hot in my life. I tried to calm him, that we might come to something rational; but he got hotter and hotter, and wouldn't hear a word. (*Dickens*) 16. I think you might have the decency to treat me as a prisoner of war, and shoot me like a man instead of hanging me like a dog. (*Shaw*) 17. At lunch she did not tell Michael she was going — he might want to come, too, or at least to see her off. (*Galsworthy*) 18. It's odd, bethought, very odd; I must be mistaken. Why should he have followed me this distance? (*Greene*) 19. My only terror was lest my father should follow me. (*Eliot*) 20. But I find now that you left me in the dark as to matters which you should have explained to me years ago. (*Shaw*) 21. Tony must have had several drinks by the time Erik arrived, and he insisted that Erik join him in still one more. (*Wilson*) 22. It would be monstrously selfish if I disturbed a state of things which is

eminently satisfactory to you both. I will not come between you. (*Maugham*) 23. You shall smart for this!.. You shall rue it to the end of your days. (*Conan Doyle*) 24. And I will arrange that the funeral shall take place early tomorrow. (*Hardy*) 25. Your husband shall be treated exactly as if he were a member of the royal family. No gratitude, it would embarrass me, I assure you. (*Shaw*) 26. He felt as if something in him were collapsing. (*Heym*) 27. I am sure this William Wallace is a fine fellow... but I can't see why my daughter should marry without even sending me an invitation to the wedding. (*Stone*) 28. Stener was to be sentenced the maximum sentence for his crime in order that the party and the courts should appear properly righteous. (*Dreiser*) 29. Vincent knew that his sketches from life were not all what they should have been; but he was confident that if he worked hard they would come right in the end. (*Stone*) 30. An old gentleman suggested that she walk' to the village where she might yet catch the bus to the Plaza. (*Baum*) 31. This was to be the very last dinner he would ever eat at Mrs. Fawset's...; but he did not know this and neither did Mrs. Fawset. (*Priestley*) 32. That girl that I spoke of was to have married me twenty years ago. She was forced into marrying that same Drebber, and broke her heart over it. (*Conan Doyle*) 33. Indoors nothing was to be heard save the droning of blue-bottle flies. (*Hardy*) 34. The light was not good where they had stopped, and he might have made a mistake. (*Priestley*) 35. No doubt life held many strange secrets. Perhaps it was essential that somebody should investigate them. However that might be, the call of his was in another direction. His business was to make money. (*Dreiser*) 36. Your feelings do you honour. You are young; may you never outlive your feelings! (*Dickens*) 37. This mayn't be the first time you've pulled me out of a mess, but I swear it shall be the last. (*Hansford Johnson*). 38. He insisted that the boy remain in bed. (*Cronin*) 39. I ought not to have left Knapwater last night. I wish I had not. (*Hardy*) 40. You must have mistaken him, my dear. He could not have intended to say that. (*Trollope*) 41. Hooker repeated the name as if he had never heard it before. (*Priestley*) 42. If the tradition be ever broken it will be for an abler man than Stephen. (*Shaw*) 43. Whatever unfortunate entanglement my dear boy may have got into, I will never reproach him with it after we are married. (*Wilde*) 44. I may have been foolish, inspector, but I've never done anything wrong before the law. (*Lindsay*)

#### **Exercise IS. Follow the direction for Exercise 14.**

1. Erik carried the books silently down to his own office, picked up his hat and coat as though he were in a daze and left the building. It would be a lovely thing, he thought, if Haviland were to get killed in an accident tomorrow so that nobody would ever know what a fool Erik was going to make of himself in embarking upon an impossible job. (*Wilson*) 2. He began to whistle to the snake, to see if the music would have any effect on its movements, if it would make the snake dance... but the snake would not dance. (*Saroyan*) 3. If she [little Emily] should come home while I'm away... or if I should bring her back, my meaning is, that she and me shall live and die where no one can reproach her. (*Dickens*) 4. That she should have been there, to hear everything—it was the last thing he had wanted. (*Cronin*) 5. Later that evening, he got still another confirmation that he must be on the right track no matter what anyone else might say. (*Wilson*) 6. When he reached the top landing, he had to stop, not simply because he was out of breath, but because a swelling excitement inside threatened to suffocate him. (*Priestley*) 7. She [Fleur] looked as if — as if she might do something to herself! She had no veronal, or anything of that sort, he hoped. And all the time he was wondering what had happened. If the issue were still doubtful — if she were still waiting, she might be restless, feverish, but surety she would not look like this! No! It was defeat. (*Galsworthy*) 8. She never condemned him for not earning money, or suggested that he do anything but paint. (*Stone*) 9. The assistant Commissioner stood at the corner as if he had forgotten something... I wish I had spoken to that man, the Assistant Commissioner thought, I wish I had asked him how he came to be unemployed; it might have been possible to find him work; but what good after all would that have been?... he is only one; it is impossible for me to help these men, only the state can do that... (*Greene*) 10. How

good he had always been to her! Incredible that he should die and take that goodness away, that she should never hear his flat-toned voice again, or feel the touch of his moustache on her cheeks or forehead. Incredible that he should never give her a chance to show that she had really loved him. (*Galsworthy*) 11. Should I encounter the rascal in the street or a tavern... he would treat me familiarly as though I were his dearest friend. (*Lindsay*) 12. Whatever else he might have been, beyond question he was Lord Cranstoun's brother. When a few days later he left with his kinsman Lord Mark for a stay in Bath, I began to hope that he might take this opportunity to slip away from Henley. (*Lindsay*) 13. Mr. Lightwood would propose to me, if I would let him. (*Dickens*) 14. What I want is that Tod should be made to see that his family mustn't quarrel with his nearest neighbours. (*Galsworthy*) 15. But Bronwen must have seen me strain to move and speak, for she left the chair quickly as though she had jumped. (*Llewellyn*) 16. She was a business woman of high acumen, who saw to it that I should meet all people who might possibly be of professional value to me in the future. (*Hansford Johnson*) 17. It was the kind of outcry no little gentleman should ever permit himself, however deeply he may be aggrieved. (*Wells*) 18. May your life together be as happy as mine and my old woman's has been. (*Abrahams*) 19. I did not have to meet Ellen's eye, as she would not glance in my direction. (*Hansford Johnson*) 20. I should value it if you would keep me in touch. (*Snow*) 21. "You should not have made me wait so long," he said. "I don't know how I have been living; every hour seemed like years. You should have decided sooner." (*James*) 22. It was important to him that she should be alone, that she should be available to speak with him privately at any hour, that she should be able to entertain his anonymous guests. (*Murdoch*) 23. Whatever Rose may have been, she is not now a responsible scholar. (*A. Wilson*) 24. I'm in favour now. It may not last twelve months. Things may begin to go the other way. You ought to know what to expect... For all we know, I'm at the top of the hill tonight. I may start moving downwards tomorrow. Or perhaps I've already started. We 've all got to remember that. (*Snow*) 25. And now the day arrived when Mr. Dorrit and his family were to leave the prison for ever, and the stones of its much-trodden pavement were to know them no more. (*Dickens*) 26. Nina stood stiffly for a moment, as if she were about to cry out. (*Murdoch*) 27. After all, if he had any talent I should be the first to encourage it. If it weren't for the children, I wouldn't mind anything. I could be just as happy in a -shabby studio in Chelsea as in this flat. (*Maugham*) 28. You shall come, whether you like it or not. (*Reade*) 29. As Dr. Thome is our hero... and as Mary Thorne is to be our heroine... it is necessary that she shall be introduced and explained and described in a proper, formal manner. (*Trollope*) 30. The fact is, sir, I have made up my mind that Mary Thorne shall be my wife — sooner or later, that is unless, of course, she should utterly refuse. (*Trollope*) 31. When so much has been written about Charles Strickland, it may seem unnecessary that I should write more. (*Maugham*) 32. There is no flattery too gross for a male. However much you may be on your guard, however much you may think you dislike it, you will find yourself instinctively angling for female flattery and getting it. (*Aldington*) 33. God may soften major Swindon's heart. (*Shaw*) 34. Notwithstanding he thought it better that she should not remain in everyday contact with his father and one day he suggested that they should go back to live in Florence. Laura and the Count were astonished that he should propose such a thing and would not hear of it. (*Maugham*) 35. If I'd only waited, perhaps it would have gone all right. I shouldn't have been so impatient. Oh, poor child, what have I driven her to? (*Maugham*) 36. "She might have gone back home, you know." "She might, but I'll bet anything she hasn't." (*Priestley*) 37. He twisted himself a little round that he might more easily use the paper, pen and ink I had brought him. (*Lindsay*) 38. Of course, I told myself, he might have been detained for some reason at the American Legation, but surely in that case he would have telephoned to the restaurant — he was very meticulous about small courtesies. (*Greene*) 39. She had to show herself half an hour later, and she was sustained at table by the immensity of her desire that her father should not perceive that anything had happened. (*James*) 40.

Aunt Juley tried to say something pleasant: "And how will dear Irene like living in the country?" June gazed at her intently, with a look in her eyes as if her conscience had suddenly leaped up into them; it passed; and an even more intent look took its place, as if she had stared that conscience out of countenance. She replied imperiously: "Of course she'll like it; why shouldn't she?" Mrs. Small grew nervous. "I didn't know," she said, "I thought she mightn't like to leave her friends. Your Uncle James says she doesn't take enough interest in life. We think. — I mean Timothy thinks — she ought to go out more. I expect you'll miss her very much!" June clasped her hands behind her neck. "I do wish," she cried, "Uncle Timothy wouldn't talk about what doesn't concern him!" (*Galsworthy*)

**Exercise 16. Translate into English, using the Subjunctive Mood and modal verbs where required.**

**(A)** Based on an episode from *In Chancery* by J. Galsworthy.

1. Some пригласил Аннет и ее мать в свой загородный дом (country house), чтобы они видели, как он богат. 2. Возвращаясь домой, Some думал об Ирэн. Двенадцать лет прошло с тех пор, как они расстались. «Она, должно быть, очень изменилась с тех пор. Ей, должно быть, теперь около сорока». 3. Он думал о том, что Ирэн всегда была несправедлива к нему. «Она могла бы относиться ко мне иначе. Разве я не давал ей все, что она только пожелает?» 4. «Странно, что она никогда не чувствовала себя счастливой со мной, — подумал он с горечью. — Странно, что она ушла от меня. Если бы она не сделала этого, мне не пришлось бы сейчас думать о разводе». 5. Мысль о разводе показалась ему нелепой после стольких лет полной разлуки (after all these years of utter separation). «Я уже давно должен был развестись с нею. Жаль, что я этого не сделал. Я был бы теперь свободен и мог бы жениться на Аннет». 6. «Как жаль, что у меня нет ребенка», — думал Some: его угнетала мысль, что ему некому оставить свое состояние. 7. Аннет с матерью должны были приехать поездом, и он поехал на вокзал встретить их. 8. Была осень, и всюду видны были (можно было видеть) желтые листья. 9. Анкет была такая хорошенькая, что Some не мог не залюбоваться ею. Ее лицо казалось таким свежим, словно его только что sprays (to be sprayed) росой. 10. За чаем они говорили о бурах. «С какой стати англичане вмешиваются в их дела (to interfere with somebody)? — сказала мадам Ламотт. — Они могли бы оставить их в покое». 11. Some улыбнулся: ее слова показались ему нелепыми. «Неужели вы не понимаете, что Англии не следует отказываться от своих законных прав (to abandon one's legitimate interest)?» — сказал он. 12. После чая Some предложил посмотреть его картинную галерею. Ему очень хотелось (to be anxious), чтобы Аннет увидела все его сокровища. Он был уверен, что как бы молода и красива она ни была, она выйдет за него замуж, когда увидит, как он богат.

**(B)** Based on an episode from *Jane Eyre* by Ch. Bronte.

1. «У нее ТаКojні вид, как будто она маленькая фея, как будто она пришла сюда из сказочной страны (the fairy land)», — подумал мистер Рочестер, когда увидел Джейн в первый раз. 2. «Странно, что они пришли сюда, — подумала Джейн, увидев в церкви незнакомцев. — Они, может быть, слышали, что мистер Рочестер собирается жениться. Да, должно быть, слышали». 3. Когда один из незнакомцев потребовал, чтобы бракосочетание было прервано (to break off the ceremony), мистер Рочестер вздрогнул, словно перед ним разверзлась (to open) пропасть. 4. Священник сказал, что невозможно, чтобы миссис Рочестер все эти годы жила в Торнфильде. «Не может быть, чтобы она жила здесь столько лет. Мы бы давно услышали об этом», — заметил он. 5. Джейн пожалела, что приехала в Торнфильд. «Было бы лучше, если бы я никогда не видела мистера Рочестера», — думала она. 6. Мистер Рочестер понимал, что сколько бы он ни уговаривал Джейн, она не останется с ним. Он жалел, что обманывал девушку. «Я должен был сказать ей, что я женат», — думал он. 7. Джейн ушла из Торнфильда ночью, так как хотела (to be anxious), чтобы никто

не узнал, куда она идет. 8. «Как мы были бы сейчас счастливы, если бы Джейн не покинула меня»,—думал мистер Рочестер. 9. Джейн не могла забыть дня, который должен был быть днем ее свадьбы (wedding day) и который окончился так трагически.

(C) Based on *Running for Governor* by M. Twain.

В своем рассказе «Как меня выбирали в губернаторы» М. Твен говорит о том, как проходила предвыборная кампания (pre-election campaign), когда была выдвинута его кандидатура на пост губернатора (to be nominated for governor) штата Нью-Йорк. Однажды, просматривая газеты, Марк Твен увидел статью, которая его чрезвычайно удивила. Автор статьи говорил, что мистериу Твену давно пора рассказать, при каких обстоятельствах он оттягал (to gain by a lawsuit) у одной бедной вдовы в Кохинхине (Cochin-China) ее жалкий клочок земли (patch of land). М. Твен не верил своим глазам — он никогда не был в Кохинхине и не имел не малейшего представления, о какой вдове идет речь. «Неужели они сами верят тому, что написали про меня? — думал он. — Они, может быть, приняли меня за кого-нибудь другого? Наверное, есть другой человек, которого зовут так же, как меня (to bear the same name)». В каждой газете можно было найти статью, в которой говорилось о том или ином преступлении, совершенном М. Твеном. Автор одной из статей обвинял М. Твена в том, что он отравил своего дядюшку с целью завладеть его имуществом, и настаивал на немедленном вскрытии трупа. Автор другой статьи требовал, чтобы мистер Твен разъяснил своим избирателям, каким образом у его товарищей (fellow-workers) в Монтане то и дело пропадали (to lose) разные мелкие, но ценные вещи, которые они всегда находили либо в карманах мистера Твена, либо в его чемодане. Это соперники М. Твена возводили на него всякие нелепые обвинения (to lay a charge upon somebody), боясь, как бы его не избрали губернатором. Временами М. Твен чувствовал себя так, словно он действительно совершил все эти преступления. Руководители его партии просили М. Твена написать ответ на обвинения, чтобы его политическая карьера не была загублена (to ruin); они говорили, что ему необходимо опровергнуть (to refute) предъявленные ему обвинения. Но М. Твен понимал, что, что бы он ни делал, он навсегда потерял свое доброе имя.

Наконец соперники М. Твена узнали, что он должен выступить на предвыборном собрании. Едва он появился на трибуне (platform), как девять малышей бросились к нему, обхватили его за ноги (to clasp somebody around his legs), словно он был их отцом, и стали кричать: «Папа!» Никогда еще М. Твен не переживал такого унижения. Он пожалел, что дал согласие выдвинуть свою кандидатуру на пост губернатора.

(D) Based on a fairy-tale.

Сестры Золушки (Cinderella) обращались с нею так, словно она была их служанкой. «Как жаль, что я не могу угодить (to please) сестрам, — не раз думала Золушка. — Как бы я ни старалась угодить им, они всегда недовольны (to find fault with somebody)». Однажды было объявлено (to announce), что в королевском дворце должен состояться большой бал. Всем очень хотелось пойти туда. Сестры Золушки были приглашены, но Золушка так и не получила приглашения. «Как жаль, что меня не пригласили!—думала бедная девушка. — Как жаль, что я не смогу увидеть Юного Принца! Как он, должно быть, красив! А что, если я попрошу сестер взять меня на бал? Нет, бесполезно даже и пытаться. Они меня не возьмут, хотя бы я умоляла их об этом целый день».

Наконец наступил день, когда сестры Золушки должны были поехать на бал. Золушке пришлось много работать, причесывая сестер и стараясь сделать их как можно красивее. Вечером сестры уехали, и Золушка осталась одна. «Какие они счастливые, — думала Золушка, сидя у камина. — Если бы у меня было красивое



платье, я бы тоже могла поехать на бал». В эту минуту появилась ее крестная мать и сказала: «У тебя будет красивое платье. Ты пойдешь на бал. Но помни: как бы ты ни веселилась (to enjoy oneself), ты не должна оставаться во дворце после полуночи».

Золушка в своем прелестном платье, которое точно (выглядело так, словно) было соткано из лунных лучей (moonbeams), вошла (to step) в карету. Она никогда не видела такой красивой кареты. Что касается кучера, то он был просто великолепен; он точно (выглядел так, словно) никогда и не был крысой. Когда Золушка приехала во дворец, король подумал, что это, должно быть, какая-то иностранная принцесса. Она держала себя так, словно всю жизнь прожила в королевском дворце. Золушка забыла приказание крестной и осталась на балу после полуночи. Едва она успела выбежать из дворца, как снова превратилась в бедную Золушку. «Как жаль, что я не послушалась моей доброй крестной матери. Если бы я не осталась во дворце после полуночи, я бы сейчас ехала (to drive) в карете в своем прелестном платье».

Юный Принц всюду искал Золушку, но ее нигде нельзя было найти. «Где может быть эта прекрасная принцесса? — думал он.— Неужели она потеряна для меня навсегда (to be lost to somebody)? Я боюсь, что сколько бы я ни искал, я не смогу ее найти».

Принц приказал, чтобы все девушки в городе примерили (to try on) хрустальный башмачок (glass slipper), который потеряла Золушка. Он думал, что таким образом он, может быть, найдет прекрасную принцессу. Многие девушки старались надеть башмачок, чтобы выйти замуж за Юного Принца. Когда пришла очередь Золушки примерять башмачок, сестры стали смеяться над нею. Но башмачок наделся на ногу Золушки с величайшей легкостью (to slip on with the greatest ease), и к своему ужасу (dismay) сестры узнали в девушке прекрасную принцессу, которую они видели на балу. Они пожалели, что плохо обращались с Золушкой.

(Е) 1. Ежели они враги мои, то не могут быть друзьями, как бы они там ни разговаривали в Тильзите. (Л. Толстой) 2. Наташа посмотрела на нее, как бы не понимая того, что у ней спрашивают. (Л. Толстой) 3. Правда, он в течение всего этого времени чувствовал, как будто она к нему снисходила, как будто ему следовало быть ей благодарным... но молодые сердца не тяготятся этим чувством (to be weighed down by something). (Тургенев) 4. Аркадий, к собственному изумлению, беспрестанно думал о Никольском; прежде он бы только плечами пожал, если бы кто-нибудь сказал ему, что он может соскучиться под одним кровом с Базаровым... (Тургенев) 5. После чаю Анна Сергеевна предложила пойти гулять... (Тургенев) 6. Павлу Петровичу скоро полегчало (to feel better); но в постели пришлось ему пролежать около недели. (Тургенев) 7. Вы, я уверен, ни за что первая не выскажете своего чувства, как бы оно ни было сильно и свято. (Тургенев) 8. Базаров быстро пробежал письмо и сделал усилие над собою, чтобы не выказать злорадного чувства, которое мгновенно вспыхнуло у него в груди. (Тургенев) 9. Пойду прилягу. а вы мне пришлите липового чаю (lime-flower tea). Простудился, должно быть. (Тургенев) 10. Ехать в Париж решено было обоим и немедленно... (А. Толстой) 11. С полчаса я просидел на стуле, стараясь не двигаться и не дышать громко, чтобы не нарушить (to disturb) гармонии звуков, говоривших мне так много. (Л. Толстой) 12. Катенька была уже совсем большая... и мысль, что она скоро может выйти замуж, уже не казалась мне шуткой... (Л. Толстой) 13. Невольно подслушав разговор, которого мне не должно было слушать, я на цыпочках... выбрался из комнаты. (Л. Толстой) 14. Палатка и кухня отправлены были вперед на место, где Кирила Петрович должен был обедать. (Пушкин) 15. «Прощайте, Петр Иванович! — сказала она мне со слезами.— Будьте живы (to live long) и счастливы». (Пушкин) 16. Настойчивая, властолюбивая, она и слышать не хотела о замужестве (matrimony). (Тургенев) 17. На следующее утро, за

чаем, Лемм-попросил Лаврецкого дать ему лошадей для того, чтобы возвратиться в город. «Мне пора приняться за дело (to start one's work), то есть за уроки,—заметил старик, — а то я здесь только даром время теряю». (Тургенев) 18. «Мне кажется, — говорила Лиза несколько мгновений спустя,—если бы он точно меня любил, он бы не написал этого письма; он должен был бы чувствовать, что я не могу отвечать ему теперь». (Тургенев) 19. Я, как рабыня, исполню ваше приказание, какое бы оно ни было. (Тургенев) 20. Впрочем, кто знает? Я, может быть, был бы более огорчен, если бы я получил это известие двумя неделями раньше... (Тургенев) 21. Что же касается до жены Ивана Петровича, то Петр Андреич сначала и слышать о ней не хотел... (Тургенев) 22. Князь Лыков не противуречил: это было бы напрасно. (Пушкин) 23. Ибрагим в рассеянии отвечал, что, вероятно, государь работает теперь на корабельной верфи. (Пушкин) 24. Левин \_\_ отправился домой, чтобы переодеться и ехать к Щербацким, где решится его судьба. (Л. Толстой) 25. Вронский встал и, дружелюбно глядя в глаза Левину, пожал ему руку. «Я нынче зимой должен был, кажется, обедать с вами, — сказал он, улыбаясь своею простою и открытою улыбкой, — но вы неожиданно уехали в деревню». (Л. Толстой) 26. «Но надеюсь, граф, что вы бы не согласились жить всегда в деревне»,—сказала графиня Нордстон. (Л. Толстой) 27. Алексей Александрович, просидев (to stay) полчаса, подошел к жене и предложил ей вместе ехать домой... (Л. Толстой) 28. Она чувствовала... что, сколько бы она ни старалась, она не будет сильнее самой себя. (Л. Толстой) 29. Она знала, что он, по обыкновению, скоро уедет по службе, и ей хотелось до этого видеть его, чтоб отношения их были определены (to define). (Л. Толстой) 30. Но когда в нынешнем году, в начале зимы, Левин приехал в Москву после года в деревне и увидел Щербацких, он понял, в кого из трех [сестер] ему действительно суждено было влюбиться. (Л. Толстой) 31.... он тотчас же попросил Степана Аркадьевича, как будто это была его обязанность, ехать в деревню и устроить там все... (Л. Толстой) 32. «Неужели это правда? — сказал он, наконец, глухим голосом. — Я не могу поверить, что ты любишь меня!» (Л. Толстой) 33. Ему хотелось оглянуться назад, но он не смел этого сделать. (Л. Толстой) 34. Дуняша принуждена была убежать в рошу, чтобы скрыть свое волнение. (Тургенев) 35. Поведение со мною мужчин, как бы оно ни было учтиво, поминутно задевало мое самолюбие (to hurt somebody's pride). (Пушкин) 36. Прошло еще около десяти минут; роши все было не видать. (Пушкин)

## THE NON-FINITE FORMS OF THE VERBS (VERBALS)

### THE PARTICIPLE

#### Exercise 1. Insert the appropriate form of Participle I.

1. Derek, who had slept the sleep of the dead, \_\_ none for two nights, woke \_\_ of Nedda. (to have, to think) (Galsworthy) 2. The street was full of people, t- and \_\_ home, (to laugh, to go) (Greene) 3. The gypsy smiled, \_\_ his teeth, (to show) (Hemingway) 4. While \_\_ my directions, he glanced at me now and then, suspiciously, from under his frost-white eye-lashes, (to obey) (Ch. Bronte) 5. \_\_ them, he raised his coffee cup. (to watch) (Cronin) 6. It (the letter) contained very little matter, \_\_ in haste; but the meaning was bulky enough, (to write) (Hardy) 7. He went upstairs again, \_\_ past the door, and, \_\_ his room, switched on the light, (to tiptoe, to enter) (Galsworthy) 8. The missionary, \_\_ daily opportunities of looking at this seascape for thirty years or so, pays no heed to it, \_\_ in trimming a huge red geranium bush. (to have, to absorb) (Shaw) 9. \_\_ my back on him I started down the steps, (to turn) (Clark) 10. At that moment he was plunged in the depth of an easy-chair, \_\_ to by Mr. Vandernoodt. (to talk) (Eliot) 11. There was only one candle \_\_ on the rough board table. (to flicker) (Stone) 12. Boldwood, \_\_ her comparatively isolated, came up to her side, (to see) (Hardy) 13. On the sultry platform of Grand Central he opened the bulky *Times*..., \_\_ the valise on his feet, (to set) (Priestley) 14. Young Herndon had done preparatory work at Illinois College for a year but, not \_\_ to the college proper, had returned home, (to admit) (Stone) 15. \_\_ his hands and \_\_ a towel over his face, he followed her down the stairs

of the hushed house, (to wash, to pass) (*Galsworthy*) 16. Frank \_\_\_ the step on the gravel, turned sharply round. (to hear) (*Trollope*) 17. She had not brought him money or position, \_\_\_ no more than the daughter of a Wort ley doctor, (to be) (*Cronin*) 18. Abraham was back at the end of three weeks, \_\_\_ an extra eighty miles, (to ride) (*Stone*) 19. Then swiftly \_\_\_ neither to left nor right, she returned to Adrian, (to look) (*Galsworthy*) 20. And \_\_\_ this in her official and impersonal tone of voice, the chambermaid then grinned, winked and vanished, (to say) (*Priestley*) 21. The campaign progressed uneventfully, from day to day, no longer \_\_\_ in news broadcasts, (to mention) (*Mailer*) 22. \_\_\_ that no one else was coming, Mr. Lincoln rose, (to see) (*Stone*) 23. \_\_\_ dinner, Soames lighted the second of his two daily cigars, and took up the earpieces of the wireless, (to finish) (*Galsworthy*)

### Exercise 2. State the form and the function of Participle I. Translate into Russian.

1. Having traversed seven hundred miles he was now travelling toward the border of the United States. (*Horgan*) 2. There was a tiny smile playing about the corners of his mouth. (*Stone*) 3. He had a beautiful old house in Queen Anne Street, and being a man of taste he had furnished it admirably. (*Maugham*) 4. Dona Carlotta covered her face with her hand, as if swooning. (*Lawrence*) 5. Turning in anger, she gave John a shove, spilling his tea. (*Lindsay*) 6. To Maggie, the new protective gentleness of her son was sweet, and also very frightening. (*Lessing*) 7. Judging him by his figure and his movements, he was still young. (*Collins*) 8. Placing his drink upon the mantelpiece the ex-convict stood for a moment observing the young man out of the corner of his eye. (*Cronin*) 9. Being very tired with his walk however, he soon fell asleep and forgot his" troubles. (*Dickens*) 10. He [Lincoln] raised his eyes, looked at her as though peering over the top of spectacles. (*Stone*) 11. There were four girls sitting on the wooden benches of the agency's front room. (*J. Shaw*) 12. Having shaken hands with them, he brought his own hands together with a sharp slap. (*Priestley*) 13. Manuel went in, carrying his suitcase. (*Hemingway*) 14. While pondering this problem, I sat in the dormitory window-seat. (*Ch. Bronte*) 15". I am going to Rome, having friends there. (*Dickens*) 16. There was sunlight coming in through the shutters. (*Hemingway*) 17. Abraham appeared at noon the next day, bringing with him two hundred dollars in cash. (*Stone*) 18. Much of the afternoon I looked out of the window, as though thinking, but not really thinking. (*Snow*) 19. He was thoughtful for a moment while leaning perilously close to the fire. (*Stone*) 20. Cecilia had heard very little being absorbed in her own reflections. (*Crawford*) 21. Having breakfasted, out I went. (*Ch. Bronte*) 22. He looked at his father listening with a kind of painful desperation. (*Cronin*) 23. She recrossed her legs comfortably, as though preparing for a long session on the sofa. (*J. Shaw*) 24. Never having encouraged friends to drop in spontaneously, she was almost totally alone. (*Stone*) 25. A cold wind swept the pavement, bearing a scrap of silver paper from a chocolate box across the lamplight. (*Greene*)

### Exercise 3. Translate into English, using Participle I where possible.

(A) 1. Получив телеграмму, моя сестра немедленно выехала в Москву. 2. Войдя в класс, учительница спросила дежурного, кто отсутствует. 3. Мать улыбалась, глядя на детей, играющих в саду. 4. Взяв перо и бумагу, мальчик стал писать письмо отцу, уехавшему на Дальний Восток. 5. Услышав голос товарища, я вышел из комнаты, чтобы встретить его. 6. Увидев незнакомого человека, я извинился и вернулся в свою комнату. 7. Будьте осторожны, переходя улицу. 8. Приехав в Москву, мы прежде всего сдали вещи на хранение (to leave something in the left luggage room). 9. Прожив много лет в Англии, он хорошо говорит по-английски. 10. Читая эту книгу, я встретил несколько интересных выражений (to come across). 11. Прочитав книгу, мальчик вернул ее в библиотеку. 12. Проведя лето в деревне, больной совершенно поправился (to be fully recovered). 13. Студенты, читающие английские книги в оригинале, легко овладевают языком. 14. Увидев своих друзей, пришедших проводить его, он подошел к ним.

(B) Based on an episode from *Uncle Tom's Cabin* by H. E. Beecher-Stowe.

1. Законы, существовавшие в Америке, позволяли покупать и продавать негров. 2. Узнав, что хозяин продал ее единственного ребенка, Элиза решила бежать и пробраться в Канаду. 3. Выйдя из дома, Элиза направилась в городок Т., который лежал на берегу реки Огайо. 4. Добравшись до реки Огайо, она постучала в дверь небольшой таверны (public house). 5. Женщина, открывшая ей дверь, была хозяйкой таверны. 6. Ребенок Элизы заплакал, так как устал после долгого пути. 7. Элиза успокоила мальчика, плакавшего от усталости. 8. Положив ребенка на кровать, она подошла к окну, выходившему на реку (to overlook the river). 9. Элиза стояла у окна и глядела на реку Огайо, лежавшую между ней и свободой. 10. Вдруг она увидела работоторговца, купившего ее ребенка. 11. В комнате была дверь, выходившая к реке (to open to the river). 12. Схватив ребенка, Элиза бросилась к реке. 13. С диким криком она прыгнула на большую льдину (a slab of ice), плывшую недалеко от берега. 14. Перепрыгивая (to leap) с одной льдины на другую, Элиза добралась до противоположного берега реки. 15. Она посмотрела на человека, стоявшего на берегу, как бы моля его о помощи.

**Exercise 4. State the function of Participle II, Translate into Russian.**

1. Stirred by the beauty of the twilight, he strolled away from the hotel. (*Cronin*) 2. All the country near him was broken and wooded. (*Aldington*) 3. For a moment the trio stood as if turned to stone. (*Murdoch*) 4. Through the dark hall, guarded by a large black stove... I followed her into the saloon. (*Mansfield*) 5. If left to myself, I should infallibly have let this chance slip. (*Ch. Bronte*) 6. He spoke when spoken to, politely and without much relevance. (*Hansford Johnson*) 7. He cast upon her one more look, and was gone. (*Hichens*) 8. Miss Brodrick, though not personally well known in the county, had been spoken well of by all men. (*Trollope*) 9. Prepared, then for any consequences, I formed a project. (*Ch. Bronte*) 10. Thus absorbed, he would sit for hours defying interruption. (*Stone*) 11. As directed, I took the lead, almost happily. (*Salinger*) 12. He looked at her for a moment as though amazed at her friendliness. (*Greene*) 13. Fancy a married woman doomed to live on from day to day without one single quarrel with her husband. (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 14. He bowed low when presented to Dinny. (*Galsworthy*) 15. Displeased and uncertain Brande gazed from his son to the Spanish gardener. (*Cronin*)

**Exercise 5. Translate into English, using Participle II where possible.**

1. На листе бумаги было несколько строк, написанных карандашом. 2. Если меня спросят, я скажу правду (to tell the truth). 3. В вазе было несколько увядших роз. 4. Я не люблю смотреть на посаженных в клетку животных (to cage). 5. Книга будет здесь, пока ее не спросят (to ask for). 6. Муж ее был отставным полковником. 7. Хотя он был очень удивлен, он не сказал ни слова. 8. Вот новые учебники, присланные для нашей школы. 9. Оставленный один в темноте, ребенок заплакал. 10. Студенты писали сочинение о системе образования в Англии, как она описана Диккенсом. 11. Солнце село, и деревья казались темными, как будто высеченными (to cut) из черного мрамора.

**Exercise 6. Insert Participle I or II.**

1. It was a windy day, and the air \_\_\_ on Little Dorrit's face soon brightened it. (to stir) (*Dickens*) 2. He took a \_\_\_ strip of paper from his vest and gave it to the reporter, (to fold) (*Faulkner*) 3. There was one bright star \_\_\_ in the sky. (to shine) (*Dickens*) 4. He reminded you of a \_\_\_ sheep \_\_\_ aimlessly hither and thither, (to frighten, to run) (*Maugham*) 5. At one end was a group of beautiful women exquisitely \_\_\_, \_\_\_ diamonds on their heads and bosoms... (to gown, to wear) (*Stone*) 6. Maxim stooped, and picked up a \_\_\_ petal and gave it to me. (to fall) (*Du Maurier*) 7. They came to the quiet little station \_\_\_ by a single bulb, almost \_\_\_ in a mass of oleander and vines and palmettos, (to light, to hide) (*Faulkner*) 8. She remained silent but her silence was like a question \_\_\_ in the dark between them. (to hang) (*Lessing*) 9. With \_\_\_ eyes he leaned back on the bench, (to close) (*Байн*) 10. We walked down the hall and down the wide thickly \_\_\_ stairs, (to carpet) (*Hemingway*) 11. There were

\_\_ candles on the table, (to light) (*Hemingway*) 12. There was a long line of \_\_ trucks and carts on the road \_\_ up the bridge, (to abandon, to lead) (*Hemingway*) 13. A tall, thin man with a sharp pointed face sat at a table \_\_ for dinner, (to lay) (*Greene*) 14. The voice had something \_\_ in it. (to appeal) (*Dreiser*) 15. There was a balcony along the second floor \_\_ by the columns, (to hold up) (*Hemingway*) 16. On the next afternoon Horace went out to his sister's, again in a — car. (to hire) (*Faulkner*)

**Exercise 7. Translate into English, using Participle I or II as an attribute where possible.**

(A) 1. Количество школ, построенных в Советском Союзе за последние годы (of late years), очень велико. 2. Школа, строящаяся на нашей улице, откроется к 1 сентября. 3. Рабочие, строящие эту школу, обещали закончить ее к началу учебного года. 4. Девушка поставила в вазу цветы, присланные ей в день рождения. 5. Человек, приславший ей цветы, был ее старым школьным товарищем. 6. В Публичной библиотеке есть рукописи, написанные много столетий тому назад. 7. Имя человека, написавшего эту рукопись, неизвестно. 8. Он вошел в комнату и увидел письмо, лежащее на столе. 9. Письма, опущенные в ящик до 12 часов, доставляются (to post, to deliver) в тот же день. 10. Люди, проводящие много времени на открытом воздухе, обычно сильные и здоровые. 11. Молодые музыканты говорили о днях, проведенных в Москве во время конкурса имени Чайковского (the Tchaikovsky music contest).

(B) 1. Пугачев бежал, преследуемый Михельсоном. (*Пушкин*) 2. Жители привыкли к ядрам, залетавшим (to fall) на их дворы... (*Пушкин*) 3. Шедший мимо раненый офицер обратился к нему [Ростову]. (*Л. Толстой*) 4. Его приятно поразила чистота отведенной (to assign) ему комнаты. (*Тургенев*) 5. Уже вечерело, солнце скрылось за небольшую осиновую рощу, лежавшую в полверсте от сада. (*Тургенев*) 6. Темная, мягкая ночь глянула в комнату с своим почти черным небом, слабо шумевшими деревьями и свежим запахом вольного (open) чистого воздуха. (*Тургенев*) 7. Она [Катя] держала в руках корзину, наполненную цветами. (*Тургенев*) 8. Одетая в легкое белое платье, она [Фенечка] сама казалась блее и легче... (*Тургенев*) 9. Он [Степан Аркадьевич] прочел письма. Одно было очень неприятное — от купца, покуповавшего лес в имении жены. (*Л. Толстой*) 10. Это была просторная, высокая комната, убранная (to furnish) довольно роскошно. (*Тургенев*) 11. Но доктор, знаменитый петербургский доктор, находившийся в приятельских отношениях к Алексею Александровичу, занял много времени. (*Л. Толстой*) 12. Вслед за доктором, отнявшим так много времени, явился знаменитый путешественник. (*Л. Толстой*) 13. Он [Каренин] прошел в кабинет... подписать некоторые бумаги, принесенные правителем дел (chief secretary). (*Л. Толстой*) 14. Вронский часто видел устремленный на него внимательный и недоумевающий (bewildered) взгляд ребенка... (*Л. Толстой*) 15. В это время один офицер, сидевший в углу комнаты, встал и... окинул всех спокойным и торжественным взглядом. (*Лермонтов*)

**Exercise 8. Translate into English, using the Participle where possible. (Based on an episode from *Oliver Twist* by Ch. Dickens).**

1. Держа Оливера за руку, Сайке подошел к полуразрушенному, заброшенному дому. 2. Войдя в дом, Сайке поздоровался с Тоби, который уже ждал его. 3. Человек, лежавший на старом диване, поднял голову и, увидев Оливера, спросил Сайкса, зачем он привел мальчика. 4. Напуганный словами и жестами грабителей, Оливер сидел в углу, едва -сознавая (to know), где он находится и что происходит вокруг него. 5. Выпив немного виски, грабители легли отдохнуть. 6. Проспав час или два, они вышли из дома, приказав мальчику следовать за ними. 7. Грабители молчали, когда шли по главной улице городка. 8. Пройдя около четверти мили, они подошли к большому красивому дому, обнесенному (to surround), стеной. 9. Один из грабителей вскарабкался на стену, окружавшую дом. 10. Когда Оливер

понял, что его спутники (companions) собираются ограбить дом, он упал на колени, умоляя их отпустить его. 11. Проклиная Фегина, пославшего Оливера на такое дело (errand), Сайке приказал мальчику залезть в дом через окно и открыть дверь. 12. Решив, что он поднимет в доме тревогу (to raise an alarm), мальчик повиновался. 13. Услышав шум, слуги, спавшие наверху, начали стрелять и ранили Оливера.

**Exercise 9. Point out the Objective and the Subjective Participial Construction. Translate into Russian.**

1. In the midday quiet of the bush she heard a small bird singing. (*Young*) 2. The taxi could be seen waiting outside. (*Murdoch*) 3. His face clouded when he heard his name spoken. (*Greene*) 4. She had the drawing-room redecorated. (*Maugham*) 5. All the while she felt her heart beating with a vague fear. (*Eliot*) 6. The darkness found him occupied with these thoughts. The darkness found Mr. and Mrs. Plornish knocking at his door. (*Dickens*) 7. Somewhere a long way off a telephone bell rang and a voice could be heard speaking. (*Greene*) 8. For their New Year's Eve party she had all the furniture moved out of the parlor and sitting-room. (*Stone*) 9. Get your things packed. (*Cronin*) 10. Temple heard the woman fumbling at the wall. (*Faulkner*) 11. The two- men were heard descending. (*Dickens*) 12. Two days later she heard sleigh bells coming up the drive. (*Stone*) 13. They wanted the Committee convened over the week-end. (*Snow*) 14. She had her bed moved to the corner of the porch. (*Buck*) 15. Mary could feel Elizabeth reviewing their hopes and dreams, their relationship as sisters. (*Stone*) 16. She averted her eyes each time she found herself being stared at. (*Caldwell*) 17. The din in the entrance hall continued, and more vehicles could be heard arriving at the door. (*Murdoch*) 18. She heard the musicians tuning up in the back parlour. (*Stone*)

**Exercise 10. Translate into English, using the Objective or the Subjective Participial Construction.**

(A) 1. Была тихая летняя ночь. Мы сидели в саду и наблюдали, как луна медленно поднимается из-за деревьев. 2. Мы услышали, что кто-то поет вдали. 3. В детстве я часто слышал, как моя мать пела эту песню. 4. Мы увидели, что по дорожке сада идет сын нашего соседа. 5. Мы не видели его уже много лет, но часто слышали, как его имя упоминалось в доме его родителей. Мы не раз слышали, как его мать говорила о нем и его работе.

(B) 1. Полчаса спустя Лаврецкий стоял уже перед калиткой сада (garden gate). Он нашел ее запертой и принужден был перепрыгнуть через забор. (*Тургенев*) 2. Слышно было, как он быстро встал... (*Л. Толстой*) 3. Подходя к церкви, увидел он, что народ уже расходился (to come out). (*Пушкин*) 4. Я видел, как вы сажались на пароход (to come on board). (*А. Толстой*) 5. Видно было, как по переулку подбегали (to run up the alley) люди. (*А. Толстой*)

**Exercise 11. Translate into English, using the verb to have or to get followed by the Objective Participial Construction.**

1. Я переделала свое зимнее пальто. 2. Когда вы, наконец, настроите свой рояль? Он совсем расстроен (to be out of tune). 3. Я не починил вчера часы, так как мастерские были закрыты. 4. Когда вы оклеили комнату? 5. Вам уже побелили потолок? 6. Где вы снимались? 7. Вам следует переплести свои книги 8. Где вы делали себе это платье? 9. Я выкрасила свое платье, и теперь оно совсем как новое (выглядит совсем новым). 10. Где вы почи-; нили велосипед?

**Exercise 12. Point out the Nominative Absolute Participial Construction. State what kind of adverbial modifier it expresses. Translate into Russian.**

1. The weather being dark and piercing cold, he had no great temptation to loiter. (*Dickens*) 2. Out in the shadow of the Japa-| nese sunshade she [Irene] was sitting very still, the Jace on her! white shoulders stirring with the soft rise and fall of her bosom. (*Galsworthy*) 3. His tale told, he put his head back and laughed. (*Stone*) 4. She had put some order into the drawing-room by now, her housewifely instincts having got the better of her dismay, j

(*Maugham*) 5. This being understood, the conference was over and' Lufkin got up to join his guests. (*Snow*) 6. The next morning, it] being Sunday, they all went to church. (*Buck*) 7. They went downj the stairs together, Aileen lingering behind a little... (*Dreiser*) 8. For the moment the shop was empty, the mechanic having] disappeared into a room at the back. (*Hansford Johnson*) 9. She | paused listlessly, her head dropping upon her breast. (*Crown*) 10. No one having as yet expressed any such opinion, this was the more readily assented to. (*Galsworthy*) 11. Sir Henry was deep in his papers, his long, white, unringed hands moving nervously in rhythm with his thoughts. (*Greene*) 12. The constraint caused by Timothy's presence having worn off a little, conversation took a military turn. (*Galsworthy*) 13. This done, and Sikes having satisfied his appetite, the two men laid themselves down on chairs for a short nap. (*Dickens*) 14. She rose from the bed and removed her coat and stood motionless, her head bent, her hands clasped before her. (*Faulkner*) 15. There being nothing eatable within his reach, Oliver replied in the affirmative. (*Dickens*)

**Exercise 13. Point out the Absolute Constructions and state what kind of adverbial modifier they express. Translate into Russian.**

1. Mrs. Maylie being fatigued, they returned more slowly home. (*Dickens*) 2. Then she [Becky] sprang away and ran around the desks and benches, with Tom after her, and took refuge in a corner at last, with her little white apron to her face. (*Twain*) 3. In the afternoon, with the wind from the south, the big canoes... had come drifting across the waters. (*Lawrence*) 4. The concert over, the lottery... came next. (*Ch. Bronte*) 5. Dinner being over, Bathsheba, for want of a better companion, had asked Liddy to come and sit with her. (*Hardy*) 6. Now he sat down in an armchair opposite Charlie, sat bolt upright, with his hands on his knees, and looked hard at Charlie. (*Priestley*) 7. Abraham too looked well, his cheeks filled out, his eyes cheerful. (*Stojie*) 8. Then, with her heart beating fast, she went up and rang the bell. (*Galsworthy*) 9. She sat on the steps, with her bare arms /crossed upon her knees. (*Wilson*) 10. Mr. Pickwick's mouth and chin having been hastily enveloped in a large shawl, his hat having been put on his head and his great coat thrown over his arm, he' replied in the affirmative. (*Dickens*) 11. With the watch in her hand she lifted her head and looked directly at him, her eyes calm and empty as two holes. (*Faulkner*) 12. He stood shamefully, hesitating, the strength of his resolution exhausted in his words. 13. With Lowell closely watching, he slowly removed a paper and spread it carefully on his desk. (*Lindsay*) 14. The door of the opposite parlour being then opened, I heard some voices. (*Dickens*) 15. Catherine looked at me all the time, her eyes happy. (*Hemingway*) 16. I admired her, with love dead as a stone. (*Hansford Johnson*) 17. They lived the life of normal suburban children, school and holidays passing in a gentle rhythm. (*Shute*) 18. The first bustle of installation over, time hurig heavy on his hands. (*Galsworthy*) 19. The child lay on the bed, its eyes shut, flushed and sweating, breathing in short, whistling gasps. (*Faulkner*) 20. Now this Miss Barbary was extremely close... for a female; females being generally rather given to conversation. (*Dickens*)

**Exercise 14. Translate into English, using Absolute Constructions.**

(A) 1. Так как было очень тепло, дети спали на открытом воздухе. 2. Когда все приготовления были закончены, пионеры отправились в поход. 3. Корабль медленно плыл вдоль берегов Белого моря; сотни птиц кружились над ним. 4. Было очень темно, так как на небе не было ни одной ззездочки. 5. Когда солнце село, туристы развели костер. 6. Когда торжественное заседание (grand meeting) окончилось, начался концерт.

(B) 1. Вулич молча вышел в спальню майора, мы за ним последовали. (*Лермонтов*) 2. Меня лечил полковый цырюльник, ибо в крепости другого лекаря не было. (*Пушкин*) 3. Тут Иван Кузмич оборотился к нам, и все его внимание устремилось (to give) на неприятеля. (*Пушкин*) 4. Час спустя Павел Петрович уже лежал в постели с искусно забинтованной ногой. (*Тургенев*) 5. Я лежал на диване, уставив глаза в потолок... когда Вернер вошел в мою комнату. (*Лермонтов*) 6.

Оглянешься на (I would look round...) Карла Ивановича, а он сидит себе с книгой в руке и как будто ничего не замечает. (Л. Толстой)

**Exercise 15. State the function of the Participle and Participial Constructions.**

1. Philip limped to the door, turned there, meaning to say something, saw Adele Gerry sitting in her chair, looking blankly at the floor, with her face a ruin of sorrow... and age. (*I. Shaw*) 2...the girl being really weak and exhausted, dropped her head over the back of a chair and fainted. (*Dickens*) 3. Poor luck pursuing him, he had secured but ten cents by nightfall. (*Dreiser*) 4. Vincent glanced over at Christine knitting by the fire. (*Stone*) 5. At that moment footsteps were heard coming across the hall. (*Murdoch*) 6. He had discovered the loss of his pound when taking his coat off, and had at once suspected Loo; but then he had wondered if he hadn't had his pocket picked at the pub. (*Lindsay*) 7. She frowned a little as though puzzled. (*Greene*) 8. His meal over, and numerous questions from his mother answered, he turned from the table to the hearth. (*Ch. Bronte*) 9...he came in quietly, cap and coat on, and sat down, looking at the candles. (*Llewellyn*) 10. I imagine that she saw her husband installed in a luxurious suite of rooms, dining at one smart restaurant after another, and she pictured his days spent at race-meetings and his evenings at the play. (*Maugham*) 11. She looked at me slyly, as if concealing something. (*Hansford Johnson*) 12. A man could be seen advancing from the outskirts towards them. (*Hardy*) 13. But is a man not equally attractive when married? (*Wilde*) 14. She found Abraham pacing the- house, his head down, his hands clasped behind his back. (*Stone*) 15. In the night, going slowly along the crowded roads we passed troops marching under the rain, guns, horses pulling wagons, mules, motor trucks, all moving away from the front. (*Hemingway*) 16. I never saw a woman so altered. (*Wilde*) 17. Collingwood did not usually utter a word unless spoken to. (*Snow*) 18. Rosa's voice could now be heard rising above the din. (*Murdoch*) 19. This thought broke her down and she wandered away, with the tears rolling down her cheeks. (*Twain*) 20. Having closed it [the door] on him, Fledgeby returned to Lammle, standing with his back to the bedroom fire, with one hand under his coat-skirts, and all his whiskers in the other. (*Dickens*) 21. The floor, though regularly swept every evening, presented a littered surface. (*Dreiser*) 22. When next he comes he'll find everything settled. (*Maugham*) 23. The city lay around Central Park in a deep hush, the four-o'clock-in-the-morning sky mild with stars and a frail softly rising mist. (*I. Shaw*) 24. As if touched by wand, Annette and Rainborough froze into a silent immobility, arrested in wild gestures of the struggle. (*Murdoch*) 25. She went to the front window to see if the rain had stopped; there coming down Eighth Street, a carpet bag in one hand, an unopened umbrella in the other, with his coat-tails flying in the breeze, and his head craned forward, was Abraham. (*Stone*) 26. He listened as though brooding... (*Snow*) 27. Those days are finished. They are blotted out. (*Du Maurier*) 28. Temple held the child, gazing at the woman, her mouth moving... (*Faulkner*) 29. One evening he was seen... going into this very house, but was never seen coming out of it. (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 30. They now had all her telephone calls intercepted. (*Snow*) 31. She was understanding. Educated. Well situated in New York. (*Bellow*) 32. He sat alone, with hate curled inside him, and envied them all, the shouting children, the barking dogs, the lovers whispering. (*Greene*) 33. She saw Abraham coming up the street carrying a blue cotton umbrella. (*Stone*) 34. And still she sat there, her hands lying loosely in front of her, staring at the wall. (*Lessing*) 35. Having finished dinner, he sat with his cigar in a somewhat deserted lounge, turning over weekly papers... (*Galsworthy*) 36. Giano had hesitated with the answer, not wanting to lie, yet not quite knowing how to tell the truth. (*Baum*)

**Exercise 16. Translate into English.**

(A) 1. М. В. Ломоносов, родившийся в семье бедного крестьянина, с самого детства проникся любовью (to be inspired with love) к своему народу и своей родине. 2. Когда он был мальчиком, он часто ездил с отцом на Белое море и в Северный Ледовитый океан; постоянные морские путешествия развивали в нем волю и



упорство. 3. Покинув в возрасте девятнадцати лет родную деревню, он пешком пошел в Москву учиться. 4. Прибыв в Москву, он поступил в Славяно-греко-латинскую академию (the Slavonic-Greek-Latin Academy). 5. Так как Ломоносов был одним из лучших студентов, его послали за границу, чтобы усовершенствовать свои знания. 6. Назначенный профессором химии Петербургской академии наук, Ломоносов повел борьбу за самостоятельное развитие русской науки и культуры. 7. Многие ученые, приехавшие из Европы, презирали русскую культуру. 8. Ломоносов занимался (to be concerned with) вопросами, относящимися к различным областям естествознания, истории и филологии. 9. Он предполагал написать работу, охватывающую (to embrace) все отрасли естествознания. 10. В своей лаборатории Ломоносов делал химические анализы солей и руд, присылаемых в академию. 11. Опыты, проведенные Ломоносовым, привели к многочисленным открытиям; самым важным среди них является закон сохранения материи (the law of preservation of matter). 12. Основанный Ломоносовым университет сделался центром передовой науки.

**(B)** Based on an episode from *The Pickwick Papers* by Ch. Dickens.

1. Джентльмена, пригласившего мистера Пиквика и его друзей, звали мистер Уордль. 2. Разбуженный ярким утренним солнцем, мистер Пиквик встал очень рано. 3. Он подошел к окну, выходящему в сад (to overlook the garden). 4. Мистер Пиквик увидел, что в саду стоит мистер Уордль с ружьем в руке. 5. Дожидаясь мистера Пиквика и его друзей, мистер Уордль тщательно осмотрел ружье. 6. Когда все приготовления были закончены, друзья отправились в грачевник. 7. Зарядив ружье, мистер Уинкль выстрелил (to fire). 8. Так как мистер Тапмен выглянул в этот момент из-за дерева, заряд попал ему в руку (the charge hit his arm). 9. Мистер Уинкль подбежал к мистеру Тапмену, лежавшему на земле с закрытыми глазами. 10. Рана мистера Тапмена не была серьезной, так как ружье было заряжено дробью (small shot). 11. Мистер Тапмен медленно шел домой, поддерживаемый всеми своими друзьями. 12. Увидев мистера Тапмена с перевязанной рукой, мисс Рейчел лишилась чувств.

**(C)** Based on an episode from *David Copperfield* by Ch. Dickens.

1. Окруженный грубыми и жестокими людьми, Давид очень страдал и, наконец, решил бежать к своей тетушке, жившей в Дувре (Dover). 2. Выйдя из дома, Давид увидел, что на улице стоит долговязый парень с маленькой тележкой, запряженной ослом (donkey-cart). 3. Схватив чемодан и деньги Давида, долговязый парень вскочил в тележку и поехал с такой быстротой, что Давид не мог его догнать. 4. Когда Давид шел в Дувр, он часто думал о своей матери и о том, что она ему рассказывала о мисс Бетси. 5. Оставшись без денег (penniless), он очень страдал от голода и холода. 6. Он провел ночь у ограды, окружавшей Салемскую школу (Salem House). 7. Когда он пришел, наконец, в Дувр, он спросил у рыбака, где живет мисс Бетси Тротвуд. 8. Дрожа от страха и усталости, Давид подошел к хорошенькому домику, окруженному садом. 9. Увидев грязного, одетого в лохмотья мальчика, мисс Бетси велела ему уйти из ее сада. 10. Подойдя к ней, Давид робко сказал, что он сын ее покойного племянника. 11. Услышав эти слова, мисс Бетси посмотрела на него с величайшим изумлением да так и присела на дорожку. 12. Рассказав ей свою печальную историю, Давид не выдержал и разразился слезами.

**(D)** 1. Генерал ходил взад и вперед по комнате, куря свою... трубку. (*Пушкин*) 2. Денисова отвели в приготовленную для него комнату... (Л. Толстой) 3. Старик, сидевший с ним, уже давно ушел домой. (Л. Толстой) 4. Все жители находились тут же, ожидая самозванца (the Pretender). (*Пушкин*) 5. И он посмотрел кругом, как бы желая понять, как можно не сочувствовать природе (to have no feeling for nature). (*Тургенев*) 6. Она [Анна Сергеевна] стояла к нему спиной. Услышав шаги, она тихонько обернулась. (*Тургенев*) 7. Однажды он [Базаров], гуляя с ней по саду,

внезапно промолвил угрюмым голосом, что намерен скоро уехать в деревню, к отцу (to his father's place). (*Тургенев*) 8. Базаров обернулся и увидел бледное лицо Николая Петровича, сидевшего на дрожках (droshky). (*Тургенев*) 9. Обед, хотя наскоро сготовленный, вышел очень хороший, даже обильный... (*Тургенев*) 10. Она [Кити] заметила, что, расспрашивая про ее родных, мадам Шталь улыбнулась презрительно. (*Л. Толстой*) 11. Оставшись один с Марьей Николаевной, Левин обратился к ней. (*Л. Толстой*) 12. Увидав мужа, она [Долли] опустила руки в ящик шифоньерки, будто отыскивая что-то... (*Л. Толстой*) 13. Вронский внимательно слушал Левина..., очевидно интересуясь его словами. (*Л. Толстой*) 14. Анна, взглянув вниз, узнала тотчас же Вронского. (*Л. Толстой*) 15. Прочтя письмо, он поднял на нее глаза. (*Л. Толстой*) 16. Наконец, как бы сделав усилие над собой, она [Анна] поднялась и оттолкнула его. (*Л. Толстой*) 17. Он [Вронский] приказал подбежавшему к нему из второго класса немцу-лакею взять вещи и ехать, а сам подошел к ней. (*Л. Толстой*) 18. И мать, сопровождаемая доктором, вошла в гостиную к Кити. (*Л. Толстой*) 19. Войдя в маленький кабинет Кити..., Долли вспомнила, как убирала (to decorate) они вместе прошлого года эту комнатку, с каким весельем и любовью. (*Л. Толстой*) 20. И покрытое слезами милое лицо спряталось в юбке платья Дарьи Александровны. (*Л. Толстой*) 21. У ней [Долли] похолодело (turned cold) сердце, когда она увидела Кити, сидевшую на низеньком... стуле и устремившую неподвижные глаза на угол ковра. (*Л. Толстой*) 22. Часто, читая вслух, когда он доходил до патетического места, голос его начинал дрожать... (*Л. Толстой*)

## THE GERUND

### Exercise 1. Insert the appropriate form of the gerund.

1. Stark sat down without \_\_ (to speak) (*Jones*) 2. He did not go without \_\_ by Amy. (to congratulate) (*Dickens*) 3. After \_\_ more closely than usual and \_\_ his hair, he [Herzog] took the bus uptown, (to shave, to brush) (*Bellow*) 4. At South Square, on \_\_ that Michael and Fleur were out, he -did not dress for dinner, but went to the nursery, (to discover) (*Galsworthy*) 5. I had to sound as if I didn't mind \_\_, as though I had no temper of my own. (to insult) (*Snow*) 6. She kept on \_\_, her voice low and controlled, (to talk) (*Braine*) 7. In the morning light, she was, ashamed of herself for \_\_ so \_\_ the night before, (to elate) (*Snow*) 8. The house wanted \_\_ (to do up) (*Galsworthy*) 9. Even a criminal must be told the nature of his crime before \_\_ (to convict) (*Stone*) 10. She showed none of the usual feminine pleasure at \_\_ hard to understand, inscrutable, mysterious, (to be) (*Priestley*) 11. I still reproached myself for not \_\_ open with Douglas Osbaldiston from the start, when he had invited me to do so. (to be) (*Snow*) 12. No woman looks her best after \_\_ up all night, (to sit) (*Shaw*) 13. His legs were somewhat stiff from not \_\_ or \_\_ for days, (to hike, to climb) (*Baum*) 14. I'm tired of \_\_ like a silly fat lamb, (to treat) (*Coppard*) 15. I know everyone who's worth \_\_ (to know) (*Maugham*) 16. After \_\_ this, he; cursed himself for not \_\_ the opposite, so that he might have used the expected guest as a lever to get rid of Misha. (to say, to say) (*Murdoch*) 17. There is vivid happiness in merely \_\_ alive, (to be) (*Coppard*) 18. "Your tie needs—," Mrs. Simpson said, (to straighten) (*Greene*) 19. The attempt is at least worth \_\_ (to make) (*Collins*) 20. Mr. Creakle then caned Tommy Traddles for \_\_ in tears, instead of cheers, on account of Mr. Mell's departure... (to discover) (*Dickens*) 21. He apologized to Hooker for \_\_ so late, (to be down) (*Priestley*) 22. One could not walk or drive about Philadelphia without \_\_ and \_\_ with the general tendency toward a more cultivated and selective social life, (to see, to impress) (*Dreiser*) 23. I just couldn't stand \_\_ away from you any longer, (to be) (*Stone*) 24. I remember \_\_ him with her and Marnier going away from church, (to see) (*Eliot*) 25. When I told him that I meant to live in Paris for a while, and had taken an apartment, he reproached me bitterly for not \_\_ him know, (to let) (*Maugham*) 26. He had a flat smooth face with heavy-lidded green eyes that gave the impression of \_\_ at a slant, (to set) (*Braine*) 27. His latest craze was to discover her age, which he cursed himself for not \_\_ when he had her passport in his hands, (to

observe) (*Murdoch*) 28. Let me tell you whose house you've come into without \_\_\_ or \_\_\_ (to ask, to want) (*Faulkner*) 29. I'm tired of \_\_\_ to you. (to talk) (*Maugham*) 30. They soon discovered that the gate was securely locked. They looked at one another in a mixed fashion, a trifle disappointed at \_\_\_, but still triumphant at \_\_\_ the place, (to hold up, to find) (*Priestley*)

**Exercise 2. Point out the Gerundial Construction and comment on the way the nominal element is expressed. Translate into Russian.**

1. You must excuse my being so breathless, I'm not really breathless, it's just the excitement. (*Leacock*) 2. These happy events occurred without any recommendation having been made by Rainborough, and indeed without his having been officially informed. (*Murdoch*) 3. The maid said something about the American lady's having come back to Rodnik. (*Heym*) 4. It was easy to imagine Cave sitting silent. (*Snow*) 5. She was interrupted by her father's voice and by her father's hat being heavily flung from his hand and striking her face. (*Dickens*) 6. He brought in a portmanteau with him, which he doubted its being worth while to unpack. (*Dickens*) 7. Besides, there's no danger of it happening again. (*Hansford Johnson*) 8. "It's no good you staying," Jack Burton said. (*Aldridge*) 9. Jack laughed. Their being bothered amused him. (*Lawrence*) 10. He was wakened by someone knocking at the door. (*Faulkner*) 11. There is something so inexpressibly absurd to me in the idea of Caddy being married. (*Dickens*) 12. I was not surprised by Caddy's being in low spirits. (*Dickens*) 13. You knew young Pyle well didn't you? I can't get over a thing like that happening to him. (*Greene*) 14. She laughed at the thought of her husband and Johnny looking after the house. (*Priestley*) 15. He felt almost a gloomy satisfaction at the thought of all these disasters happening at once. (*Murdoch*)

**Exercise 3. Translate into English using the gerund where possible.**

(A) 1. Увидев карикатуры, все рассмеялись. 2. Вы ничего не имеете против того, чтобы я открыл окно? 3. Врач приказал больному бросить курить. 4. Мальчик не отрицал, что потерял книгу, взятую в библиотеке. 5. Извините, что я заставил вас ждать. 6. Детям доставляло удовольствие играть в саду. 7. Эту книгу стоит почитать. 8. Читая этот рассказ, мы не могли не смеяться. 9. Я предпочитаю сделать эту работу сегодня. 10. Я надеюсь, что ничего не помешает мне пойти на концерт. 11. Преподаватель возражал против того, чтобы студенты пользовались словарем, переводя этот текст. 12. Преподаватель настаивал, чтобы новые выражения записывались. 13. Преподаватель настаивал, чтобы студенты записывали новые выражения. 14. Я устала от того, что со мной обращаются как с ребенком. 15. Я не возражаю против того, чтобы помочь вам, но я возражаю против того, чтобы мне мешали, когда я занят. 16. Мы слышали, что ваша сестра уехала в Англию. 17. Мне не хочется (to feel like) гулять. 18. Было невозможно достать билет, и мне пришлось отказаться от мысли послушать знаменитого пианиста. 19. Я не одобряю того, что вы пропускаете лекции. 20. Похоже на то, что будет дождь. 21. Вы можете рассчитывать на то, что я достану вам эту книгу. 22. Декан не согласился, чтобы собрание отложили. 23. Мать горячо благодарила доктора за то, что он спас ее ребенка. 24. Не упустите случая посмотреть эту выставку. 25. Все были удивлены, что этот трудный вопрос был так быстро разрешен. 26. Мы уверены, что письмо будет получено вовремя. 27. Мы уверены, что письмо было получено вовремя. 28. Я горжусь тем, что была в состоянии помочь вам. 29. Мне стыдно, что я сделала так много ошибок в последней диктовке.

**(B) Based on an episode from The Adventures of Tom Sawyer by M. Twain.**

1. Том никогда не упускал случая убежать из школы и поиграть с товарищами. 2. Он был уверен, что сумеет скрыть от тети Полли свои проказы. 3. Том отрицал, что ходил купаться, по тетья Полли узнала об этом. 4. Она была недовольна тем, что Том обманул ее. 5. Том был единственным сыном ее покойной сестры; она очень любила мальчика и избегала наказывать его. 6. Однако на этот раз она решила

наказать Тома за то, что он ходил купаться без разрешения. 7. Надо было побелить забор, и тетя Полли велела Тому белить его в субботу. 8. Мальчику не улыбалась мысль работать в такое чудесное утро, и он просил тетю Полли простить его за то, что он ее ослушался. 9. Тому не; удалось заставить Джима работать вместо себя: пришла тетя Полли и запретила Джиму белить забор. 10. Он осмотрел свои сокровища, но их было немного, и ему пришлось отказаться от мысли уговорить мальчиков помочь ему белить забор. 11. Но вскоре ему пришла в голову блестящая мысль, и он принялся за работу (to set to work) с таким видом, как будто он ничего не имел против того (to mind), чтобы белить забор в это солнечное утро. 12. Когда пришел Бен, Том продолжал работать, не обращая внимания на товарища. 13. Бен смотрел на Тома с удивлением: Том работал в субботу, и Бену казалось, что он работает с удовольствием (to enjoy the work). 14. Наконец, Том повернулся к Бену и сказал, что все зависит от того, нравится ли тебе работа или нет. 15. После этого дело представилось в новом свете (that put the thing in a new light), и Бен не мог не позавидовать приятелю. 16. Он попросил, Тома позволить ему поработать. «Ты можешь положиться на то, что я сделаю это хорошо», — сказал он. 17. Том ответил, что тетя Полли будет возражать против того, чтобы Бен белил забор. 18. Но Бен упорно просил (to keep on) Тома дать ему поработать, и тот, наконец, согласился. 19. Бен гордился тем, что Делает такую трудную работу. 20. Тетя Полли была уверена, что Том давно уже перестал (to leave off) работать и убежал на речку. 21. Она была очень удивлена, что Том так хорошо и быстро побелил забор. 22. Она сказала, что мальчик заслуживает награды, и дала ему большое яблоко.

(С) 1. Марья Ивановна скоро перестала со мной дичиться (to be shy of somebody). (Пушкин) 2. Между тем Палаша взяла у нас наши шпаги и отнесла в чулан. Я не мог не засмеяться. (Пушкин) 3. Кирила Петрович гордился сим прекрасным заведением и никогда не упускал случая похвастаться оным. (Пушкин) 4. «Простите..., что я пришла к вам», — сказала она. (Л. Толстой) 5...я только удивляюсь, как ты из полка приехал (to get away from the regiment). (Л. Толстой) 6. В конце января княжна Марья уехала в Москву, и граф настоял на том, чтобы Наташа ехала с нею, с тем чтобы посоветоваться с докторами. (Л. Толстой) 7. Наташе совестно было ничего не делать в доме, тогда как все были так заняты. (Л. Толстой) 8. «Папа, ничего (to mind), что я раненых пригласила в дом?» — сказала ему Наташа. (Л. Толстой) 9. Володя заметно важничал... (to put on airs); он гордился тем, что приехал на охотничьей лошади (to ride a hunter). (Л. Толстой) 10. «Благодарствуйте, что сдержали слово», — начала она... (Тургенев) 11. Она [Анна Сергеевна] до обеда не показывалась и все (to keep) ходила взад и вперед по комнате. (Тургенев) 12. С Фенечкой ему не удалось проститься: он только переглянулся с нею из окна (to exchange glances with somebody). (Тургенев) 13. Он [Базаров] перестал (to give up) гулять в одиночку и начал искать общества... (Тургенев) 14. Катя ничего не отвечала, но перестала (to cease) глядеть на Аркадия. (Тургенев) 15. И она стала говорить с Кити (Л. Толстой) 16. Он [Каренин] любил говорить о Шекспире, Рафаэле, Бетховене, о значении новых школ поэзии и музыки... (Л. Толстой) 17. Алексей Александрович за правило поставил каждый день видеть жену... (to make it a rule to do something); но избегал обедов дома. (Л. Толстой) 18. Юн не стоит того, чтобы ты страдала из-за него» (to grieve over somebody), — продолжала Дарья Александровна... (Л. Толстой)

#### **Exercise 4. State the function of the gerund and Gerundial Constructions. Translate into English.**

1. Nobody can go on living without some belief. (Greene) 2...she did not like being plunged back into a slave state. (Stone) 3. He greeted me noisily, but I cut him short by giving him the telegram. (Snow) 4. "She cannot sleep without seeing and speaking to you once more," I said. "She does not like the thought of leaving you." (Ch. Bronte) 5. Without putting anything into words, they bade each other farewell. (Wilson) 6. I remember laughing

aloud, and the laugh being carried by the wind away from me. (*Du Maurier*) 7. There came the sound of the door closing then being locked. (*Priestley*) 8. Upon awakening she dressed quickly and left the house. (*Stone*) 9. He felt better for having written the letter. (*Cronin*) 10. "It's no good you hating it," said Mr. Bunting, becoming didactic. (*Greenwood*) 11. Do you mind giving me your name and telephone number, please? (*Priestley*) 12. Peter Saward only replied by staring at the paper knife and shaking his head slowly to and fro, and twisting his long legs into knots under the desk. (*Murdoch*) 13. Mr. Dorrit positively trembled in addressing the great man. (*Dickens*) 14. Unfortunately this fruitful silence was ruined by the sound of a door being banged. (*Priestley*) 15. He never ceased talking. (*Coppard*) 16. Well, it's no use my telling you a lie. (*Shaw*) 17. Life seemed worth fighting for. (*Dreiser*) 18. Petra sat through her first lesson without saying a word and without paying much attention to the lecture and the examples on the blackboard. (*Heym*) 19. But now a difficulty arose — hostile Indians could not break the bread of hospitality together without first making peace, and this was a simple impossibility without smoking a pipe of peace. (*Twain*) 20. Only the other day they had been talking about something happening, and now it had happened to him. (*Snow*) 21. I was torn between the fear of hurting a nice woman's feelings and the fear of being in the way. (*Maugham*) 22. She cursed herself for not having thought to bring a visiting card. (*Murdoch*) 23. It is awfully hard work doing nothing. (*Wilde*) 24. He was angry with me for bringing the news. (*Snow*) 25. He went on talking to my wife. (*Hemingway*) 26. She was listening hard all the time for any sound of Jan Lusiewicz descending the stairs. (*Murdoch*) 27. After washing his heavy stone cup and tin plate..., he stretched himself wearily on the bed. (*Dreiser*) 28. She enjoyed giving parties. (*Stone*) 29. He knew that I, or any competent man would not have denied a point so specific without being dead sure. (*Snow*) 30. I wish I'd never told you the truth, but it's no use denying it. (*Braine*) 31. He meant to begin his investigation by seeing the church. (*Galsworthy*) 32. But outside it kept on raining. (*Hemingway*) 33. They could not understand how he had so nearly succeeded in deceiving them. (*Priestley*) 34....in ] passing under a lamp, Graham encountered my eye. (*Ch. Bronte*) 35. Stephen was absorbed the greater part of the time in wishing he were not forced to stay in town yet another day. (*Hardy*) 36. Why was going with Joseph any different from going with Elinor? (*Heym*) 37. She tried, by staring into the glass, to see what the expression was on the man's face. (*Murdoch*) 38....little Hans nodded and smiled, and felt very proud of having a friend with such noble ideas. (*Wilde*) 39. "You can't: have a war," said Douglas, "without someone getting hurt." (*Snow*) 40. She was not conscious of having shown any special interest in Mr. Lincoln. (*Stone*) 41. I began... by explaining the situation in the North. (*Greene*) 42. Being alone in your own country is worse than being alone anywhere else. (*Heym*) 43. Mr. Bumble's conduct on being left to himself was rather inexplicable. (*Dickens*) 44. He could stand behind the door and take a chance at surprising Joseph. (*Priestley*) 45. She seemed a little self-conscious now and she avoided meeting his eyes. (*Wilson*) 46. At night... I would imagine him going up my stairs, knocking at my door, sleeping in my bed. (*Greene*)

**Exercise 5. Insert the correct preposition before the gerund where required.**

1. "I hated the idea \_\_ your going," he said simply. (*Greene*) 2. She said: "Excuse me \_\_ coming in \_\_ knocking." (*Lessing*) 3. The others insisted \_\_ accompanying them. (*Lessing*) 4. I am tired \_\_ being old and wise. (*Greene*) 5. We'll look forward \_\_ seeing you. (*Hansford Johnson*) 6. Why were you so anxious to prevent anybody. \_\_ leaving the house? (*Maugham*) 7. I'm afraid I shan't succeed \_\_ being as sympathetic as you have the right to expect. (*Maugham*) 8. I was afraid \_\_ saying the wrong thing. (*Maugham*) 9. Look here, it may sound funny, but I'm terrifically grateful to you \_\_ saying it. (*Hansford Johnson*) 10. Both windows needed \_\_ cleaning. (*Hansford Johnson*) 11. I've paid very heavily \_\_ being a romantic girl. (*Maugham*) 12. She could not bear \_\_ lying. (*Priestley*) 13. I suppose nothing is gained \_\_ delaying. (*Maugham*) 14. They were in the habit \_\_ coming up to I ondon for the season. (*Maugham*) 15. We wouldn't mind \_\_ being poor again. (*Hansford Johnson*) 16. I didn't at all like

the idea \_\_\_ going to the station in the luggage cart. (*Maugham*) 17. He looked at me for a long time \_\_\_ answering. (*Clark*) 18. He felt he was going to be denounced \_\_\_ daring to suggest such a thing. (*Priestley*) 19. I thought you had just been blaming me \_\_\_ being neutral. (*Snow*) 20. If you won't tell me what's wrong, what's the use \_\_\_ my being here? (*Braine*)

### Exercise 6. Insert not+participle or without+gerund.

1. Dr. Wallace filled a pipe from the bowl on his desk, then put it down \_\_\_ it. (to light) (*Stone*) 2. \_\_\_ what he wanted, he looked slowly about the room, (to find) (*Priestley*) 3. Zee drew a breath and leaned against the birch for a moment \_\_\_ anything. (to say) (*Aldridge*) 4. I won't go abroad \_\_\_ you. (to see) (*Gatsworthy*) 5. \_\_\_ what to reply, I remained silent, (to know) (*Maugham*) 6.... on the street he would look directly at friends \_\_\_ them, (to see) (*Stone*) 7. Only then..., \_\_\_ what further to say, had he become silent, (to know) (*Stone*) 8. We walked \_\_\_ for a short while, (to speak) (*Hansford Johnson*) 9. Would she have gone away \_\_\_ you if she loved you? (to see) (*Heym*) 10. Then she saw Lise and turned away, \_\_\_ to talk with her. She went hastily to cross the road \_\_\_ and was almost run over by a bus. (to want, to look) (*Lindsay*) 11. \_\_\_ to leave him in the club, I offered to take him home to my wife, or to go with him to his own house, deserted now. (to like) (*Snow*) 12. He returned the salutes of several privates \_\_\_ them, (to see) (*Jones*) 13. He stopped, \_\_\_ how to continue and stood shifting from one foot to the other, (to know) (*Greene*) 14. Miss Casement stood for a moment, \_\_\_ whether to be pleased or not at this unforeseen familiarity, (to know) (*Murdoch*) 15. He sat down, \_\_\_ his mackintosh, (to take off) (*Snow*) 16. \_\_\_, the driver rudely shrugged his shoulders, (to turn around) (*Salinger*) 17. \_\_\_ I any sale to take place I told Evan I wanted a chat with him and took him downstairs, (to wish) (*Hansford Johnson*) 18. They sat there \_\_\_ for several minutes. (to talk) (*Mailer*) 19. \_\_\_ him greatly, she could not be jealous in a disturbing way. (to love) (*Dreiser*)

### Exercise 7, Translate into English, using not + participle or without -(gerund).

1. Смотритель (postmaster), не отвечая, вошел в залу. (*Пушкин*) 2. Не получая ответа, Дуня подняла голову... и с криком упала на ковер. (*Пушкин*) 3. Маша по целым дням, не осушая глаз (to dry one's eyes) плакала... (Л. Толстой) 4. Не закончив своей речи, он побежал за уходившею (retreating) девушкой. (*Тургенев*) 5. Не зная пароля (password), я хотел молча проехать мимо них. (*Пушкин*) 6. Не имея привычки (to be in the habit) кокетничать с прохожими офицерами, она [Лиза] перестала глядеть на улицу, и шила около двух часов, не приподнимая головы. (*Пушкин*) 7. Но Василий Иванович, не оборачиваясь, только рукой махнул и вышел. (*Тургенев*) 8. Но обойдя кругом (to make the round of...) палубу, и не найдя Даши, Иван Ильич взволновался, стал заглядывать (to search) повсюду. Даши нигде не было. (А. Толстой) 9. Берг еще что-то говорил, но Ростов, не дослушав его (to hear somebody to the end), уже поехал дальше. (Л. Толстой) 10. Соня, Наташа спали не раздеваясь, в диванной. (Л. Толстой) 11. Наташа подошла к нему и спросила, что с ним. Он [князь Андрей] не ответил ей и, не понимая ее, посмотрел на нее странным взглядом. (Л. Толстой) 12. Алексей Александрович вздохнул, и не сказав больше ничего, отправился в спальню. (Л. Толстой) 13. Он... оглянулся своими сощуренными (half-shut) глазами и, взглянув на князя Андрея, видимо не узнав его, зашагал... к крыльцу (the steps). (Л. Толстой) 14. Княгиня Бетси, не дождавшись конца последнего акта, уехала из театра. (Л. Толстой) 15. Анна, не отвечая мужу, подняла бинокль и смотрела на то место, где упал Вронский... (Л. Толстой)

### Exercise 8. Translate into English, using the gerund where possible. (A) Based on an episode from *The Pickwick Papers* by Ch. Dickens.

1. После завтрака мистер Уордль сказал, обращаясь к своим гостям: «Вы ничего не имеете против того, чтобы покататься на коньках? Погода прекрасная, и времени у нас хватит». 2. Все охотно согласилось, и дамы стали просить мистера Уинкля присоединиться к ним. Они были уверены, что он великолепный спортсмен,

так как он никогда не упускал случая похвастаться своим искусством. 3. Но мистер Уинкль сказал, что он давно не практиковался (to be out of practice): ему не улыбалась мысль показать в присутствии дам, что он не умеет кататься на коньках. 4. Дамы стали настаивать, чтобы он пошел с ними и показал им свое искусство. 5. Было бесполезно говорить, что у него нет коньков: ему тотчас же предложили несколько пар. 6. После этого мистер Уинкль не мог не пойти на каток. 7. Когда они подошли к озеру, мистер Боб Сойер надел коньки и стал описывать круги (to make circles) на льду, не останавливаясь ни на минуту, чтобы перевести дыхание. 8. Бедный мистер Уинкль постоял несколько минут с коньками в руках и, не зная, как их надеть, стал привинчивать их острыми концами назад (with the points behind). 9. Наконец, коньки были надеты. Прежде чем подняться на ноги, мистер Уинкль попросил Сэма помочь ему. 10. Он начал с того, что заметил, что очень скользко: он не мог даже стоять на льду, если кто-нибудь не поддерживал его. 11. Вдруг мистер Пиквик, не зная, что его молодой друг не может стоять на льду без посторонней помощи (unassisted), позвал Сэма с другого берега озера. 12. Сэм смог вырваться из рук мистера Уинкля (to disengage oneself from somebody's grasp), только оттолкнув его от себя. 13. Несчастный мистер Уинкль упал и сидел на льду, даже не делая попытки подняться. 14. Мистер Пиквик был возмущен тем, что его друг говорил всем, что он хороший спортсмен. 13. Он выразил свое негодование тем, что назвал мистера Уинкля хвастуном и обманщиком (humbug).

**(В)** 1. Увидя меня, она [Маша] вздрогнула и закричала. (Пушкин) 2. Мысль увидеть императрицу лицом к лицу так устарила ее, что она с трудом могла - держаться (to stand) на ногах. (Пушкин) 3. Тут он остановился и стал набивать свою трубку. (Пушкин) 4. «Извините меня, — сказал он мне по-французски, — что я без церемонии прихожу с вами познакомиться». (Пушкин) 5. Ты уже оскорбил казаков, посадив дворянина им в начальники (to set a nobleman over somebody); не пугай же дворян, казня их по первому наговору (accusation). (Пушкин) 6. Единственное развлечение мое состояло в наездничестве (to ride). (Пушкин) 7. Ибрагим не мог не улыбнуться. (Пушкин) 8. За сим он почтительно поцеловал ее руку и уехал, не сказав ей ни слова о решении Кирилы Петровича. (Пушкин) -9. Написавши несколько писем... Лаврецкий отправился кКалитиным. (Тургенев) 10. Впрочем, он [Лаврецкий] скоро догадался, что никто не мешал ему уединиться... (Тургенев) 11. Как все женщины, которым не удалось полюбить, она [Анна Сергеевна] хотела чего-то, сама не зная, чего именно. (Тургенев) 12.... ее самолюбие (vanity) было глубоко уязвлено тем, что ни тот, ни другой (neither of them) не обратил на нее внимания. (Тургенев) 13. Девушка извинилась, что вошла... (Л. Толстой) 14. Услыхав это, Анна быстро села и закрыла лицо веером. (Л. Толстой) 15. Теперь же Анна, в надежде увидеть Вронского, пожелала ехать. (Л. Толстой) 16. Левин любил своего брата, но быть с ним вместе всегда было мученье. (Л. Толстой) 17. Левин нахмурился и, не отвечая ей, сел опять за свою работу... (Л. Толстой). 18. Поговорив о своей старой гувернантке, о ее странностях, она [Кити] спросила его о его жизни. (Л. Толстой) 19. «Дарья Александровна, — сказал он, краснея до корней волос (to blush up to the roots of one's hair), — я удивляюсь даже, что вы... не чувствуете этого». (Л. Толстой) 20.... она [Долли] не могла не говорить себе, что у нее прелестные дети... и была счастлива ими (in them) и гордилась ими. (Л. Толстой) 21. Он [Левин] сошел вниз, избегая подолгу смотреть на нее... но он видел ее... и не глядя. (Л. Толстой) 22. Она [Анна] плакала о том, что мечта ее об уяснении, определении (to be made clear and definite) своего положения разрушена навсегда. (Л. Толстой) 23. Варвара Ивановна говорила, что чуть не убил ее народ за то, что она по-французски заговорила. (Л. Толстой) 24. Солдаты ели, не обращая внимания на Пьера. (Л. Толстой) 25. Получив приказание (orders), он... поскакал вдоль -линии фронта. (Л. Толстой) 26. И Николай... стал рассказывать о возможности в весьма скором времени выкупить (to buy back)

Отрадное. (Л. Толстой) 27. Сказав с Карлом Ивановичем еще несколько слов о понижении (fall) барометра... папа... послал нас учиться (to our lessons). (Л. Толстой) 28....через несколько минут в доме все пришло в прежнее движение (to resume its former course), как будто никто не знал и не думал о том, что я сижу в темном чулане. (Л. Толстой) 29. Когда привезено было известие о взятии в плен Мюрата и штабные (the members of the staff) поздравляли Кутузова, он улыбнулся. (Л. Толстой)

**Exercise 9. Point out the gerund, the participle, and the Predicative Constructions, and state their function. Translate into Russian.**

1. She thought of her father sitting on the veranda..., a palm-leaf in his hand, watching the Negro mow the lawn. (Faulkner) 2. She was woken out of her fevered doze by Harry shaking her, holding her arm. (Lindsay) 3. On trying the door of the girl's room, she found it still locked. (Hardy) 4. I wouldn't say such a thing without being sure. (James) 5. "You are young yet, you could go back to the cities and better yourself without lifting more than an eyelid," he said. She didn't move leaning lightly against the wall, her arms folded. (Faulkner) 6. Lying back on the cushioned seat, the warm air flying at his face, Felix contemplated with delight his favourite country-side. (Galsworthy) 7. You must go and lie down. It's no good making yourself ill. (Maugham) 8. The old man walked away, and Cowperwood heard his steps dying down the cement-paved hall. He stood and listened, his ears being greeted occasionally by a distant cough, a faint scraping of some one's feet..., or the iron scratch of a key in a lock. (Dreiser) 9. In the heart of the forests great trees grew almost a hundred yards high, their lowest limbs sprouting out two hundred feet from the ground. Through the densest portions a man would lose an hour in moving a few hundred steps. (Mailer) 10. I've got your drawing framed and hung above my bureau, and very jolly it looks. (Galsworthy) 11. He took the Taylor road, increasing speed. He drank again from the jar without slowing down. (Faulkner) 12. Seeing me he stood irresolute, his eyes dark and mournful. (Hansford Johnson) 13. The idea of anybody wasting his time was obnoxious to him. (Dreiser) 14. She listened to the tapping for a while before she finally got up, grumbling for being disturbed when she felt so comfortable in bed. (Caldwell) 15. As if summoned from a long distance, Sir Lawrence galvanitically refixed his monocle. (Galsworthy) 16. When immersed in a book, she was, as her husband had put it, its slave. (Cronin) 17. Mechanically he went to the telephone. He found the number with difficulty, his eyes being misty. (Galsworthy) 18. He stopped angrily, as if looking for words. (Mailer) 19. Being your husband is only a job for which one man will do as well as another. Being my wife is something quite different. (Shaw) 20. For six years now... she had watched these slave gangs being pushed along the road. (Stone) 21. From somewhere toward the rear they could hear a dinner table being set, and a woman's voice singing obviously to a small child. (Faulkner) 22. Then came the loud ringing of a bell, mingled with the noise of fire-arms, and the sensation of being carried over uneven ground. (Dickens) 23. I distinctly recalled hearing someone moving about in the lounge on entering after my morning walk with Kitty. (Clark) 24. Firing the machine gun had partially deafened him. (Mailer) 25. Although they loved each other, their minds were like two countries at war, with the telegraph wire down and the rails torn up. (Greene) 26. Nessie fiddled with her teaspoon, dropped it, then blushed shamefully as though discovered in a wicked act. (Cronin) 27. I got into the dinghy, and found William and Christopher sitting in it, staring bad-temperedly at one another. (Snow) 28. I'll have you watched as long as you stay in Lewes. (Greene) 29. The man remained standing, with his hands in his pockets... (Dickens) 30. Please, do make an effort at entertaining her. (Heym) 31. Being a doctor he knows that he won't live much longer and he's afraid of dying; which, being a doctor, he ought not to be. (Baum) 32. After prolonging his visit by every conceivable excuse in his power, he summoned courage, and offered her his hand and his heart. Being in no way disinclined to him,... and her uncle making no objection to the match, she consented to share his fate... (Hardy) 33. There was no getting a word more out of him on the matter of the Moonstone. (Collins) 34. They had



thought the question settled. (*Galsworthy*) 35. Now there's just one thing I feel I ought to say, Mrs. Atwood, and you mustn't mind my saying it. (*Priestley*) 36. Cursing himself for not having learned to drive a car, he woke up Toni and swept him down to the garage. (*Baum*)

37. I could feel the sense of disquiet growing rapidly. (*Clark*).

38. It's terribly disappointing. (*Walpole*) 39. Dale was near jumping with pride and satisfaction... (*Cronin*) 40. His eyes on the window, he ran on tiptoe across the bare space between the coppice and the wall. (*Greene*) 41. On descending, I found Paulina seated at the breakfast table... (*Ch. Bronte*) 42. But it was lovely walking in the woods. (*Hemingway*) 43. His footsteps could be heard descending the stairs at a run. (*Murdoch*) 44. She was angry with herself for letting her voice become hoarse. (*Stone*) 45. Warden looked over at him, almost startled, without moving, a look of actual real hurt coming on his face. (*Jones*)

**Exercise 10, Translate into English, using the gerund or the participle where possible.**

(A) Based on *David Copperfield* by Ch. Dickens.

1. Мисс Бетси не могла простить племяннику того, что он женился на восковой кукле (a wax doll), как она называла миссис Копперфильд. 2. Женившись, мистер Копперфильд никогда больше не встречался со своей тетушкой. 3. Однажды вечером миссис Копперфильд сидела у камина, думая о себе и о своем покойном муже. 4. Подойдя к окну, она увидела, что по дорожке сада (along the garden path) идет незнакомая дама. 5. Заходящее солнце озаряло своими лучами (to glow on somebody) незнакомку, которая направлялась к дверям дома. 6. Приблизившись к дому, незнакомка, не позвонив, подошла к окну и стала глядеть в него, прижав нос к стеклу (against the glass). 7. Увидев это, миссис Копперфильд поняла, что это мисс Бетси: только она могла вести себя подобным образом. 8. Мисс Бетси начала разговор с того, что спросила, почему усадьба называется «Грачи» (Rookery). 9. Она удивилась тому, что усадьба называется «Грачи», так как ни одного грача в саду не было. 10. Мисс Бетси приехала с намерением усыновить ребенка; она надеялась, что это будет девочка. 11. Узнав, что у миссис Копперфильд родился мальчик (to give birth to a boy), она немедленно уехала. 12. Раннее детство Давид провел со своей матушкой и Пеготти. В зимние сумерки (in the winter twilight) миссис Копперфильд очень любила играть и танцевать со своим маленьким сыном. 13. Однажды вечером Пеготти сидела с Давидом в гостиной. Услышав голос матери, Давид побежал встретить ее. 14. Взяв мальчика на руки, миссис Копперфильд поблагодарила джентльмена, который пришел с нею, за то, что он проводил ее до дому. 15. Пеготти не одобряла того, что миссис Копперфильд так часто уходит из дому по вечерам. 16. Она обвиняла миссис Копперфильд в том, что она забывает своего маленького сына ради нового знакомого, 17. Слова верной служанки не помешали миссис Копперфильд почти каждый вечер встречаться с мистером Мердстоном. 18. Миссис Копперфильд не возражала против того, чтобы Давид поехал с Пеготти в Ярмут. 19. Мальчик уехал туда, не зная, что его матушка собирается выйти замуж. 20. Хэм встретил их в Ярмуте, и они отправились в путь; Хэм нес Давида на спине. 21. На берегу стояла старая черная баржа; указывая на нее, Хэм сказал, что это их дом. 22. Давид был доволен, что Пеготти взяла его в Ярмут; ему очень нравилась мысль, что он будет жить в старой барже, ходившей много раз в море (to be in the open sea). 23. Мальчику понравилась дверь, вырезанная в одном боку баржи. 24. Когда зажгли свечи, в комнате стало очень уютно. 25. Преодолев (to overcome) свою застенчивость, маленькая Эмили села рядом с Давидом. 26. Давид слышал, как завывает в море ветер, и думал о том, как приятно в такую погоду сидеть в теплой, уютной комнате. 27. Гуляя с маленькой Эмили по берегу моря (upon the beach), Давид часто рассказывал ей о своей матушке. 28. Не зная, что миссис Копперфильд вышла замуж, Давид возвращался домой полный радостных ожиданий. 29. Он был очень удивлен, что миссис Копперфильд не вышла встретить его. 30. Войдя в комнату, мальчик увидел, что подле его матушки сидит мистер Мердстон. 31.

Оставшись один в своей комнатке, Давид разразился слезами. 32. Миссис Копперфильд избегала ласкать Давида в присутствии мужа, обвинявшего ее в том, что она балует ребенка. 33. Мистер Мердстон не был в состоянии понять свою жену, так как это был черствый и жестокий человек. 34. Он был уверен, что сумеет изменить ее характер и сделать ее такой же черствой, как он сам. 35. Мистер Мердстон был чрезвычайно недоволен тем, что Пеготти называет его жену миссис Копперфильд. 36. Ему пришлось отказаться от мысли уволить Пеготти, так как миссис Копперфильд была к ней очень привязана. 37. Миссис Копперфильд жаловалась на то, что мисс Мердстон ведет хозяйство, не советуясь с ней. 38. Мистер Мердстон настаивал на том, чтобы его жена давала уроки Давиду в его присутствии. 39. Мальчику никогда не удавалось ответить хорошо уроки в присутствии отчима. 40. Мистер Мердстон старался заставить Давида хорошо учиться тем, что наказывал его. 41. Беседуя с мисс Бетси, мистер Мердстон отрицал, что с Давидом плохо обращались.

**(B)** Based on *Vanity Fair* by W. Thackeray.

1. Бекки, гостившая некоторое время у своей подруги, поехала, наконец, в имение сэра Питта Кроули, предложившего ей место гувернантки. 2. Получив письмо, извещавшее (to announce) о приезде Бекки, сэр Питт поехал в город, чтобы встретить ее. 3. По дороге в город с Бекки не случилось ничего интересного, ничего заслуживающего упоминания. 4. Проехав большую площадь, карета остановилась у большого мрачного дома. 5. Дверь открыл старик, одетый в грязный сюртук. Не зная, кто это, Бекки велела ему взять ее вещи. 6. Когда Бекки спросила, где сэр Питт, старик рассмеялся и сказал, что он и есть сэр Питт Кроули. 7. Войдя в столовую, Бекки с любопытством оглянулась вокруг. Это была большая мрачная комната с окнами на улицу (to overlook the street). 8. Покрытые коричневой бумагой портреты и картины, засунутый под буфет ковер, сдвинутые в угол стулья (to put all in a heap in a corner) — все это говорило о том, что семья Кроули не живет здесь. 9. Сэр Питт начал с того, что выразил надежду, что Бекки уже пообедала. 10. Он был очень доволен, что Бекки отказалась принять участие в его скудной трапезе. И. Разговаривая с Бекки, сэр Питт не делал ни малейшей попытки (to make an attempt at) исправить первое впечатление, которое он произвел на нее. 12. Ее присутствие не помешало ему вступить в пререкания (to start an argument) с миссис Тинкер по поводу какого-то пропавшего фартинга. 13. Сэр Питт настаивал на том, чтобы фартинг был ему немедленно возвращен. 14. Приказав Бекки быть готовой в 5 часов утра, сэр Питт пожелал ей спокойной ночи. 15. На рассвете они тронулись в путь. Когда они ехали в дилижансе (to drive in the coach), Бекки несколько раз слышала, как упоминалось имя сэра Питта Кроули. 16. Скоро они доехали до ворот Королевского Кроули (Queen's Crawley), и Бекки увидела длинную аллею, ведущую к дому. 17. Она заметила церковь, возвышавшуюся над старыми вязами парка, и красный дом, покрытый плющом, с сверкавшими на солнце окнами. 18. Мистер Ходсон, встретивший баронета у ворот парка, рассказал ему обо всем, что случилось в имении в его отсутствие. 19. Сэр Питт был очень доволен, что его старого арендатора отправили в работный дом. 20. Увидев, что два маленьких мальчика собирают хворост в парке, сэр Питт велел мистеру Ходсону наказать их. 21. Слушая разговор сэра Питта с мистером Ходсоном, Бекки была удивлена, что баронет говорит, как неграмотный человек. 22. Ночью, когда Бекки писала письмо Эмили, она услышала стук в дверь. 23. В комнату вошел сэр Питт. Схватив свечу, он приказал девушке немедленно ложиться спать. 24. Сэр Питт требовал (to insist), чтобы все свечи гасились не позднее одиннадцати часов. 25. Чувствуя, что спорить с ним бесполезно, Бекки не произнесла ни слова. 26. Очень скоро Бекки удалось завоевать расположение сэра Питта (to win somebody's favour). 27. Когда баронет сделал ей предложение, она поняла, что совершила ошибку, выйдя замуж за Родона.

Она жалела, что упустила случай сделаться леди Кроули.

(С) 1....Дмитрий Степанович любил поговорить утром... о политике (to discuss politics). (А. Толстой) 2. После обеда Дарья Александровна, сидя с ним одна на балконе, заговорила о Кити. (Л. Толстой) 3. Она [Кити] внимательно посмотрела на него, как бы желая понять причину его смущения. (Л. Толстой) 4. «Простите меня, что я приехал, но я не мог провести дня, не видав вас», — продолжал он [Вронский]... (Л. Толстой) 5. Дарья Александровна между тем, успокоив ребенка... вернулась опять в спальню (Л. Толстой) 6. Вронский, взглянув на часы, поспешно уехал. (Л. Толстой) 7. На другое утро, во вторник, Алексей Александрович, проснувшись, с удовольствием вспомнил вчерашнюю победу (his triumph of the previous day) и не мог не улыбнуться. (Л. Толстой) 8. В присутствии ее он [Вронский] не имел своей воли: не зная причины ее тревоги, он чувствовал уже, что та же тревога невольно сообщалась и ему (to pass over to somebody). (Л. Толстой) 9....проходя через залу, она [Долли] увидела сцену, наполнившую такую радостью ее сердце, что слезы выступили ей на глаза... (tears came into her eyes). (Л. Толстой) 10. Он [Каренин] вошел в комнату и, не поздоровавшись с нею, прямо направился к письменному столу и, взяв ключи, отворил ящик. (Л. Толстой) 11. Вошел Сережа, предшествуемый гувернанткой. (Л. Толстой) 12. Сам Левин, увидав Кити Щербацкую, понял, что он не переставал любить ее; но он не мог ехать к Облонским, зная, что она там. (Л. Толстой.) 13. Швабрин, услышав предложение Пугачева, вышел из себя. (Пушкин) 14. Мысль о переведении (to transfer) моем из Белогорской крепости меня ужасала. (Пушкин) 15. Я спрашиваю о нем у вас как человек, недавно сюда приехавший, как родственник. (Тургенев) 16. Марфа Тимофеевна сидела у себя в комнате, окруженная своим штатом. (Тургенев) 17. Увидев Лаврецкого, старушка... проворно встала и начала ходить туда и сюда по комнате (about the room), как будто отыскивая свой чепец. (Тургенев) 18....романтическая мысль жениться на крестьянке и жить своими трудами пришла ему в голову... (Пушкин) 19. Читая ее романы, я нахожу его замечания... писанные карандашом... (Пушкин) 20. Оставшись один, Пьер продолжал улыбаться. (Л. Толстой) 21. Пьер с толпами солдат... дошел до перевязочного пункта (ambulance tent) и, увидав кровь и услышав крики и стоны, поспешно пошел дальше... (Л. Толстой) 22.... слезы радости, подступившие ему к горлу (to rise in one's throat), помешали ему говорить. (Л. Толстой) 23. Девушка что-то кричала, но узнав (to perceive) чужого, не взглянув на него, со смехом побежала назад. (Л. Толстой) 24. И, переменив разговор (the subject), Кутузов начал говорить о турецкой войне. (Л. Толстой) 25....Ростов не мог не заметить, что Наполеон дурно и не твердо сидел на лошади (to have a bad and uncertain seat on horseback). (Л. Толстой) 26. Приехав в Петербург, -Пьер никого не известил о своем приезде. (Л. Толстой) 27. Поужинав, граф, не раздеваясь, прилег на канapé... (Л. Толстой) 28. Никто уже не обращал внимания на Пьера. Раза два на него сердито крикнули (to shout at) за то, что он был на дороге. (Л. Толстой) 29....Наташа начала доставать из ящика завернутые в бумаги блюда и тарелки. (Л. Толстой) 30. Отдав эти и другие приказания, он [Наполеон] вернулся в свою ставку (quarters). (Л. Толстой)

## THE INFINITIVE

### Exercise 1. Insert the appropriate form of the infinitive.

1. But there was nothing now \_\_\_ for. (to wait) (Wilson) 2. She put on the cape, and turned round \_\_\_ (to admire) (Cain) 3. He appeared \_\_\_ (to listen) (Lessing) 4. He appeared \_\_\_ plenty of money, which was said \_\_\_ in the Californian goldfields. (to have, to gain) (Conan Doyle) 5. "When I seemed \_\_\_ a long while, the Master of Salem House unscrewed his flute into the three pieces, put them up as before, and took me away, (to doze) (Dickens) 6. Every feature seemed \_\_\_ since he saw her last, (to sharpen) (Galsworthy) 7. This fellow seemed \_\_\_ a famous explorer or something of that sort, (to be) (Priestley) 8. The house appeared \_\_\_ recently... (to repair) (Hardy) 9. Nobody seemed \_\_\_ his entry, but there he certainly was. (to perceive) (Hardy) 10. Paula would be the first concentration camp \_\_\_ by American troops,

(to liberate) (*Heym*) 11. Willoughby was not the man \_\_\_ the lessons of his predecessor. (to overlook) (*Heym*) 12. A twelve year old girl, Patience Barlow, was the first \_\_\_ his attention or \_\_\_ by him. (to attract, to attract) (*Dreiser*) 13. One might guess Mr. George \_\_\_ a trooper once upon a time, (to be) (*Dickens*) 14. I suppose Mr. Jelleby had been more talkative and lively once; but he seemed \_\_\_ long before I knew him. (to exhaust). (*Dickens*) 15. Dave seemed \_\_\_ Stephanie, waiting for her to make the first move, (to watch) (*Saxton*) 16. For the last few days she seemed \_\_\_ to nobody but strange men. (to talk) (*Priestley*) 17. I lack the will-power \_\_\_ anything with my life, — my position by hard work, (to do, to better) (*Durrell*) 18. There's no time \_\_. (to lose) (*Clark*) 19. And, in a 140 very little while, the Murdstone and Grinby life became so strange to me that I hardly believed in it, while my present life grew so familiar, that I seemed \_\_\_ it a long time, (to lead) (*Dickens*) 20. Roger Quaife was a youngish Conservative member who was beginning \_\_\_ about, (to talk) (*Snow*) 21. He is said \_\_\_ a small fortune, (to put away) (*Durrell*) 22. That Jolyon seems \_\_\_ in 1710, son of Jolyon and Mary, (to be born) (*Galsworthy*)

**Exercise 2. Insert to before the infinitive where required. Translate into Russian.**

1. Do you think I plan \_\_\_ spend the rest of my life in the same situation? I would rather \_\_\_ die! (*Monsarrat*) 2. She could not help but \_\_\_ feel a little choked for breath. (*Dreiser*) 3. Why not \_\_\_ come down to my place? (*Wilson*) 4. He gave a quick grin that made his lean twisted face \_\_\_ look more lean and twisted than ever. (*Priestley*) 5. Ever since I came into this silly house I have been made \_\_\_ look like a fool. (*Shaw*) 6. He did nothing from morning till night but \_\_\_ wander at random. (*Maugham*) 7. I'm the cook, and I won't have anyone \_\_\_ come interfering in my kitchen. (*Maugham*) 8. Abe let the hammer \_\_\_ drop out of his hands and \_\_\_ fall on the step. (*Caldwell*) 9. You'd better \_\_\_ take me back to Oxford. (*Faulkner*) 10. They ought. \_\_\_ have asked my advice. They ought \_\_\_ have. (*Snow*) 11. The poor boy was absolutely broken up. It made my heart \_\_\_ bleed. I couldn't \_\_\_ let him \_\_\_ go without a word of comfort. (*Maugham*) 12. I've got nothing \_\_\_ do but \_\_\_ talk, talk. (*Greene*) 13. I would — die sooner than \_\_\_ ask him for another penny. (*Shaw*) 14. Your mother's gone to some friends — they do nothing but \_\_\_ play bridge. (*Galsworthy*) 15. I know... there's nobody in the world I would rather \_\_\_ work with or \_\_\_ have greater respect for. (*Dreiser*) 16. Conrad had never known her \_\_\_ talk so much. (*Greene*) 17. But Elfride knew Mrs. Jethway \_\_\_ be her enemy, and \_\_\_ hate her. (*Hardy*) 18. Then why not \_\_\_ try \_\_\_ save yourself? (*Shaw*) 19. She opened the iron gateway and bade me \_\_\_ enter. (*Maugham*) 20. You'd better \_\_\_ get some sleep. (*Hemingway*) 21. English women in our station have duties... but we, strangers in a strange land, have nothing \_\_\_ do but \_\_\_ enjoy ourselves. (*Maugham*) 22. I want \_\_\_ look at him and hear him \_\_\_ talk. (*Heym*) 23. The key of the door below was now heard in the lock, and the door was heard \_\_\_ open and close. (*Dickens*) 24. She felt herself \_\_\_ be tall and slim and fresh. (*Murdoch*) 25. I felt my blood \_\_\_ freeze. (*Cain*) 26. And if you say you gave me no encouragement I cannot but \_\_\_ contradict you. (*Hardy*) 27. When she reached the front steps, she heard the taxi \_\_\_ drive away. She turned around and watched the red tail-light \_\_\_ disappear in the darkness. (*Caldwell*) 28. Tommy really does nothing but \_\_\_ propose to me. (*Wilde*) 29. I thought that I had better \_\_\_ try \_\_\_ speak openly myself. (*Snow*) 30. Arthur could not but \_\_\_ glance at Daniel Doyce in the ensuing silence. (*Dickens*) 31. Why not \_\_\_ write to her? (*Hardy*) 32. At first I tried. \_\_. excuse myself, for the present, on the general ground of having occupation \_\_\_ attend to, which I must not \_\_\_ neglect. I then said that I had much \_\_\_ learn myself before I could \_\_\_ teach others. For these reasons, I thought it best \_\_\_ be as useful as I could, and \_\_\_ render what kind services I could to those about me: and \_\_\_ try \_\_\_ let that circle of duty gradually \_\_\_ expand itself. (*Dickens*)

**Exercise 3. Translate into English, using the to-infinitive or the bare infinitive.**

1. Я чувствовал/ что его рассказ правдив. 2. Я почувствовал, что кто-то тронул меня за плечо. 3. «Вы выглядите утомленным, вы бы лучше пошли домой». «Нет, я бы предпочел закончить работу». 4. Почему бы не поговорить с деканом? 5. Ему

ничего не оставалось делать, как признать свою вину (to admit one's fault). 6. Она только и делает, что ворчит. 7. Я не могу не согласиться с вами. 7....Степан Аркадьевич тонко (subtly) улыбался. Левин тоже не мог не улыбнуться. (Л. Толстой) 8. Надевайте же коньки, и давайте кататься вместе. (Л. Толстой) 9. Что ж, он прекрасный жених (match)... Зачем не выдти за него?... (Пушкин) 10....Я три дня занимался только тем, что... наслаждался чтением какого-нибудь романа... (Л. Толстой) 11. «Ты опять заснешь, Николенька? — говорит мне папан. — Ты бы лучше шел наверх». (Л. Толстой) 12. Я никогда не видел (to know), чтобы ты сказал неправду. (Л. Толстой) 13. Я не мог не подивиться странному сцеплению (chain) обстоятельств. (Пушкин)

**Exercise 4. State the function of the infinitive. Translate into Russian.**

1. A man must have something bigger than himself to believe in. (Jones) 2. It was impossible not to invite the Butiers for both afternoon and evening. (Dreiser) 3. The heat and dust were enough to strangle you. (Cain) 4. To cut a long story short, the infant that's just gone out of the room is not your son. (Maugham) 5....the next thing to be done is to move away from this house. (Eliot) 6. All the deep maternity in her awoke, never to sleep again. (Buck) 7. He paused as if to find a way to phrase his next thoughts. (Mailer) 8. Nobody asked you to come out here. I didn't ask you to stay. I told you to go while it was daylight. (Faulkner) 9. It was too hot to go out into the town. (Hemingway) 10. The prospective buyer is someone who is not, to put it mildly, a supporter of female emancipation. To consent to this sale would be to consent to change the character of the newspaper altogether. (Murdoch) 11. He had been one of the first to become interested in the development of the street-car system. (Dreiser) 12. The floor of the forest was soft to walk on. (Hemingway) 13. He was a man to attract immediate sympathy. (Maugham) 14. He knew he must say anything at all in order to establish communication with her. (Horgan) 15. After all, you're young enough to be my son. (Clark) 16. To begin with, he did not like the way his editor... had spoken to him that morning. (Priestley) 17. To make the real decisions, one's got to have the real power. (Snow) 18. To know all is to forgive all. (Priestley) 19. Other people, men particularly, found it difficult to face Cowperwood's glazed stare. (Dreiser) 20. It must be awful to have a brilliant future behind you. (Snow) 21. She makes a gesture as if to touch him. (Shaw) 22. Indeed, she had nowhere to go. (Murdoch) 23. To speak frankly, I am not in favour of long engagements. (Wilde) 24. He found the sky so pallid as to be almost invisible. (Baum) 25. He dropped back, so as to let me get on a level with him. (Collins) 26. When he met Savina at the station, she came to him with a joyous expression of anticipation to find his troubled silence. (Wilson) 27. Rubin did not, in any case, find it easy to be as direct as Roger. (Snow) 28. True insincerity is hard to find. (Priestley) 29. She leaned forward with kindled eyes as if to impress the word on the inspector. (Lindsay) 30. She's a spoiled child not to be trusted. (Galsworthy) 31. It is against all ethical concepts of medical science to pronounce a death verdict to a gravely ill person. (Baum) 32. His age was difficult to guess. (Wilson) 33. They were the last to come. (Maugham) 34. I awoke a little after sunrise to find Evan gone. (Hansford Johnson) 35. Truth to tell, he wanted to say a great deal. (Dreiser) 36. Her large eyes were of a blue so pale as to be almost white. (Murdoch) 37. Her first proceeding... was to unlock a tall press, bring out several bottles, and pour some of the contents of each into my mouth. (Dickens) 38. To lie is not my custom. Too much complication and uncomfot. (Baum) 39. I had many weary hours still to wait through. To while away the time, I looked at my letters. (Collins) 40. To begin with, Mrs. Anderson is a pleasanter person to Hye with than Mrs. Dudgeon. (Shaw) 41. With another look round at the furniture, as if to gauge his sister's exact position, Soames went out towards Piccadilly. (Galsworthy) 42. Three or four plans suggested themselves, only to be ruled out by their self-evident absurdity. (Hansford Johnson) 43. But the heat of the afternoon was, to say the least, oppressive. (Salinger)

**Exercise 5. Translate into English, using the infinitive.**

1. Было приятно гулять в лесу в такой жаркий день. 2. По правде говоря, я читал эту книгу в переводе. 3. Он достаточно хорошо знает английский язык, чтобы

перевести эту статью. 4. Первое, что надо сделать, — это выписать новые слова из текста. 5. Бесплезно противоречить вам; вы очень упрямы, чтобы не сказать больше. 6. Никогда не поздно признать свою ошибку. 7. Она уехала на Дальний Восток и больше не вернулась в свой родной город. 8. Мягко выражаясь, он не сказал вам всей правды. 9. Я чувствую себя слишком плохо, чтобы поехать с вами за город. 10. Короче говоря, их вина осталась недоказанной.

**Exercise B. Point out the infinitive attributes. Translate into Russian.**

1. It's a chance not to be missed. (*Murdoch*) 2. No one liked to be the first to move. (*Lindsay*) 3. I have a word to say to my daughter. (*Shaw*) 4. There was not a moment to lose. (*Dreiser*) 5. There is no time to be lost. (*Wilde*) 6. We are going to find a place to phone from, and maybe have some refreshment! (*Salinger*) 7. Davy was never one to promise and not keep his word. (*Llewellyn*) 8. So you've got nothing to reproach yourself with. (*Wilson*) 9. There was so much to do. (*Lessing*) 10. He was quickwitted, unpompous, the easiest man to do business with. (*Snow*) 11. He was the first to speak again. (*Hardy*) 12. I haven't any time to spare. (*Dreiser*) 13. I promise you there's nothing to fear. (*Maugham*) 14. I won, but it's no victory to be proud of. (*Wilson*) 15. We came into Spezia looking for a place to eat. (*Hemingway*), 16. Haviland was really someone to admire. (*Wilson*) 17. I told the driver the address to drive to. (*Hemingway*) 18. There was no taxi to be seen outside the hotel... (*Priestley*) 19. I have dreadful news to break to her. (*Dickens*) 20. She had a long way to go. (*Hansford Johnson*) 21. Strickland isn't the man to make a woman; happy. (*Maugham*) 22. One should always have something sensational to read in the train. (*Wilde*) 23. But I haven't much to be proud of in that respect. (*Snow*)

**Exercise 7. Translate into English, using infinitive attributes,**

(A) 1. Он первый прервал молчание. 2. Он ушел из лаборатории последним. 3. У нее есть ребенок, о котором ей надо заботиться. 4. Мне надо вам кое-что сказать. 5. Вот книга, которую хорошо почитать в поезде. 6. Мне надо о многом поговорить с вами. 7. У меня есть друзья, которые могут мне помочь. 8. У меня не было времени прочитать эту статью. 9. Он не такси человек, чтобы забыть о своем обещании. 10. Я знал, что нельзя терять времени. 11. Вот статья, которую вы должны прочитать. 12. У меня есть хорошая новость, которую я должен вам рассказать.

(B) 1. Василий Иванович первый поднялся. (*Тургенев*) 2. Поверьте мне — я имею право это говорить: я дорого заплатил за это право, (*Тургенев*) 3...она тотчас почувствовала, что он имеет сообщить ей что-то. (*Тургенев*) 4... дадим себе слово признаваться во всем друг другу. (*Л. Толстой*) 5. Меня Мавра Кузьминишна послала, тут раненых привезли... а им некуда деваться. (*Л. Толстой*) 6... я сказал, что мне нужно готовить уроки, и ушел наверх. (*Л. Толстой*) 7. Первое лицо, встретившее Анну дома, был сын. (*Л. Толстой*)

**Exercise 8. Point out the Objective-with-the-Infinitive and the Subjective Infinitive Constructions. Translate into Russian.**

1. Never once had she been seen to cry. (*Mansfield*) 2. It was the first time he had ever seen her weep. (*Buck*) 3. He didn't mean this to be a long meeting. (*Snow*) 4. There was a rumour that at last they were likely to be married, (*Snow*) 5... without remonstrance she suffered me to have my own way. (*Ch, Bronte*) 8. Irving proved to be a long, sallow-faced butler chap, solemn as an undertaker. (*Priestley*) 7. Mr. Worthing is sure to be back soon. (*Wilde*) 8. I came to get someone to tell me the truth. (*Hansford Johnson*) 9. I'll have Bertha bring you breakfast. (*Stone*) W. Unfortunately, at this moment he chances to catch sight of Judith's face. (*Shaw*) 11. I have never known Hector Rose behave like this. (*Snow*) 12. His "office" turned out to be in one of the back streets close by Olympia. (*Snow*) 13. Conrad pulled out a chair and made her sit down. (*Greene*) 14. He... looked at his watch, rang the bell, and ordered the vehicle to be brought round immediately. (*Eliot*) 15. Paul felt his heart lift as at a great victory. (*Croniri*) 16... people took an oath, a pledge, when they were married, and that was supposed to hold them together. (*Lindsay*) 17. You make me think of

spring flowers... (*Braine*) 18. At thirteen he began to read books that were said to be evil. (*Saroyan*) 19. She watched him go up the street and enter a door. (*Faulkner*) 20. He [Cowperwood] appeared to be an ideal home man. (*Dreiser*) 21. Young men of this class never do anything for themselves that they can get other people to do for them. (*James*) 22. He said he wouldn't suffer a word to be uttered to him in his uncle's disparagement. (*E. Bronte*) 23. She doesn't seem to want to do anything I suggest. (*Dreiser*) 24. Cecily and Gwendolen are perfectly certain to be extremely great friends. (*Wilde*) 25. He heard the town clock strike twelve. (*Faulkner*) 26. Nearly a year ago, I chanced to tell him our legend of the nun... (*Ch. Bronte*) 27. Harriet, pale and trembling... suffered her to go on uninterrupted. (*Dickens*) 28. "You will not allow this base newspaper slander to shorten your stay here, Mr. Winkle?" said Mrs. Pott, smiling through the traces of her tears. (*Dickens*) 29. He turned out to have no feeling whatsoever for his nephew. (*Snow*) 30. I don't like him to be so long alone. (*Hansford Johnson*) 31. From the extreme freshness and purity of her complexion I estimated her age to be sixteen, or less perhaps. (*Clark*) 32. This appeared to amuse the policeman. (*Priestley*) 33. I can't bear any one to be very near me but you. (*Eliot*) 34. At any moment he was expecting Erik to pull a gun and rob him. (*Wilson*) 35. He decided to write her... and ask for an explanation, as well as have her meet him. (*Dreiser*) 36. You can easily get in through a window if the door happens to be locked. (*Priestley*) 37. You are sure to be there to-morrow night, aren't you, Professor Engelfield?... (*Priestly*) 38. He was said to be one of the most promising of nuclear physicists. (*Snow*) 39. Why can't he get a valet to stay with him longer than a few months? (*Shaw*) 40. The peasants did not seem to see her, (*Hemingway*) 41. He then ordered her horse to be put into the gig. (*Hardy*) 42. Mrs. Merridew instantly permitted herself to be taken by the arm, and led into the garden... (*Collins*)

**Exercise 9. Translate into English, using the Objective-with-the-Infinitive Construction where possible.**

(A) 1. Я не ожидал, что вы уедете так скоро. 2. Я не выношу, когда с детьми плохо обращаются. 3. Она почувствовала, что кто-то коснулся ее плеча. 4. Она почувствовала, что его слова неискренни. 5. Он попросил подать машину. 6. Я всегда считал их своими друзьями. 7. Библиотекарь разрешил переписать рукопись. 8. Отец хотел, чтобы его сын стал врачом. 9. Я не люблю, когда ребенок остается один. 10. Я слышал, как декан несколько раз упомянул ваше имя на собрании. 11. Вчера на собрании я слышала, как ваше имя упомянули несколько раз. 12; Я никогда не слышал, как она говорит по-английски. 13. Я слышал, что она говорит по-английски очень хорошо. 14. Я видел, как она вошла в читальный зал, взяла книги и принялась за работу (to set to work). 15. Я видел, что она не поняла правила, и объяснил его еще раз. 16. Добейтесь, чтобы он обратился к врачу (to consult a doctor). 17. Дождь заставил их вернуться домой. 18. Я заставил его снять пальто и выпить чашку чаю. 19. Он распорядился, чтобы телеграмму послали немедленно. 20. Преподаватель сказал, чтобы студенты выписали слова из текста.

(B) Based on an episode from *David Copperfield* by Ch. Dickens.

1. Пеготти знала, что мистер Мердстон черствый и жестокий человек, и не хотела, чтобы миссис Копперфильд выходила за него замуж. 2. Мистер Мердстон заставил жену повиноваться ему во всем. 3. Давид чувствовал, что рука его матушки дрожит. 4. Пеготти не могла выносить, чтобы с Давидом плохо обращались. 5. Мистер Мердстон и его сестра считали Давида ленивым и упрямым мальчиком. 6. Мистер Мердстон приказал, чтобы Давида заперли в его комнате. 7. Давид проснулся, услышав, что кто-то шепотом зовет его. 8. Пеготти слышала, что мистер Мердстон собирается отдать Давида в школу. 9. Мистер Мердстон не хотел, чтобы Давид жил дома, и добился того, что миссис Копперфильд отдала его в школу. 10. Пеготти видела, что миссис Копперфильд несчастна, но не могла ничего сделать, чтобы помочь ей. 11. Мистер Мердстон хотел, чтобы Пеготти отказали от места (to dismiss), но миссис Копперфильд не могла допустить, чтобы ее верная служанка

ушла от нее. 12. Мисс Бетси увидела, что в сад вошел грязный оборванный мальчик. 13. Мисс Бетси чувствовала, что Давид говорит правду (что рассказ Давида правдив).

**Exercise 10. Translate into English using the Subjective Infinitive Construction.**

1. Известно, что римляне построили на Британских островах хорошие дороги и много крепостей. 2. Полагают, что поэма «Беовульф» была написана в VIII веке. 3. Вальтер Скотт считается создателем исторического романа. 4. Сообщают, что экспедиция достигла места назначения. 5. Едва ли его назначат главным инженером, ведь он кончил институт всего два года тому назад. 6. Он, по-видимому, хорошо знает английский язык; наверное, он изучал его в детстве? 7. Я случайно знаю номер его телефона. 8. Он оказался хорошим спортсменом. 9. Шум, казалось, все приближался. 10. Я случайно проходил мимо вокзала, когда в Ленинград Приехали артисты Шекспировского мемориального театра (Shakespeare Memorial Theatre). 11. Певицу заставили повторить арию. 12. Он, кажется, пишет новую статью; кажется, он работает над ней уже две недели. 13. Его статья, несомненно, будет напечатана. 14. Я случайно встретил его в Москве. 15. Обязательно прочитайте эту книгу; она вам, несомненно, понравится. 16. Говорят, что это здание было построено в XVII веке.

**Exercise 11. Translate into English, using the Objective-with-the-Infinitive or the Subjective Infinitive Construction.**

1. Мы хотим счастья всем русским. Мы хотим, чтобы каждый человек был свободен. (Л. Толстой) 2. У нас в полку я считался одним из лучших стрелков. (Пушкин) 3. Извини меня, мой ангел, но твое патетическое письмо рассмешило меня. (Пушкин) 4. Герман слышал, как хлопнула дверь в сенях (porch), и увидел, что кто-то опять поглядел к нему в окошко (through the window into his room). (Пушкин) 5. Заря сияла на востоке, и золотые ряды облаков, казалось, ожидали солнца... (Пушкин) 6. «Не ожидала я, чтобы ты была такая злая (spiteful)»,—сказала Любочка. (Л. Толстой) 7. Охота (the shooting) оказалась хуже, чем ожидал Левин. (Л. Толстой) 8. Тугилово от нас недалеко, всего три версты: подите погулять в ту сторону... вы, верно, встретите его. (Пушкин) 9. Алексей Александрович велел подать чай в кабинет... (Л. Толстой) 10... как только случилось нам быть одним, мы усаживались в уютный уголок и начинали рассуждать, забывая все на свете. (Л. Толстой) 11. Ему было около тридцати пяти лет, и мы за то почитали его стариком. (Пушкин) 12. Она [Кити] была прекраснее, чем он воображал ее. (Л. Толстой) 13. Она [Кити] ждала, что он пригласит ее на вальс (to ask somebody for a waltz), но он не пригласил, и она удивленно взглянула на него. (Л. Толстой) 14. Вечером... они пошли на мол (pier), чтобы посмотреть, как придет пароход. (Чехов) 15. Письма из дому приходили тихие, добрые, и, казалось, все уже было прощено и забыто. (Чехов) 16. Я хочу быть артисткой, я хочу славы, успехов, свободы, а вы хотите, чтобы я продолжала жить в этом городе, продолжала эту пустую (dull) бесполезную жизнь, которая стала для меня невыносимой. (Чехов)

**Exercise 12. Translate into English, using the infinitive or Infinitive Constructions where possible. (Based on Uncle Tom's Cabin by H. E. Beecher-Stowe.)**

1. Когда Джордж бежал от своего хозяина и пробирался в Канаду, он случайно встретил мистера Вильсона, владельца фабрики, где он раньше работал, и рассказал ему всю историю своей жизни. 2. Говорили, что покойный отец Джорджа был богатый знатный джентльмен. 3. Казалось, он любил своих детей, но он был слишком легкомысленным человеком, чтобы подумать об их будущем, и после его смерти все его дети были проданы, чтобы уплатить его долги. 4. Джордж слышал, как кричала и плакала его мать, когда его брали от нее. 5. Джордж и его старшая сестра были случайно куплены одним и тем же рабовладельцем, и первое время ребенок не чувствовал себя одиноким. 6. Но он часто видел, как хозяин бьет его сестру, и от этого мальчик жестоко страдал (и это заставляло мальчика жестоко



страдать). 7. Он не мог не плакать, когда слышал стоны и рыдания несчастной девушки. 8. Вскоре хозяин приказал отвезти сестру Джорджа в Новый Орлеан и продать ее там на рынке. 9. Мальчик остался один; не было никого, кто мог бы позаботиться о нем, кто мог бы сказать ему ласковое слово. 10. Когда Джордж вырос, его послали работать на фабрику мистера Вильсона, который оказался очень добрым человеком и хорошо обращался со своими рабочими. 11. Джордж изобрел очень ценную машину, которая, как было известно, приносила его хозяину большую прибыль. 12. Вскоре Джордж встретил Элизу и женился на ней. Она была очень красивая и добрая, и Джордж считал себя самым счастливым человеком на земле. 13. Но счастье его было недолговечно (to be of short duration): его хозяин был не такой человек, который мог бы допустить, чтобы его негр был счастлив. 14. Джорджа заставили уйти с фабрики, бросить работу, которую он так любил, и вернуться к хозяину. 15. Чтобы унижить Джорджа еще больше, хозяин приказал ему бросить Элизу и жениться на другой женщине. Этому Джордж уже вынести не мог, и он решил бежать в Канаду.

**Exercise 13. State the function of the /or-to-Infinitive Construction. Translate into Russian.**

1. There was no home for him to go to. (*J. Shaw*) 2. He waited for me to sit down. (*Hemingway*) 3. It seemed almost a shame for anyone to be as pretty as she was tonight. (*Snow*) 4. And it is not for you to make terms. It is for you to accept them. (*Wilde*) 5. There's nothing for us to do but amuse ourselves. (*Maugham*) 6. But the pain in James' head asserted itself too cruelly for him to think of anything else for the moment. (*Young*) 7. He cordially extended one forefinger for Erik to shake. (*Wilson*) 8. Some trouble with the authorities had made it necessary for him to be much abroad. (*Maugham*) 9. There were plenty of papers for him to read, but he left them alone. (*Priestley*) 10. Since you are so anxious for me to distinguish myself I have concluded to do so. (*Stone*) 11. It is impossible for me to write about that time in detail — I can't bear to. (*Hansford Johnson*) 12. He opened the door of his room for her to go out. (*Murdoch*) 13. Buttonwood street, where he spent the first ten years of his life, was a lovely place for a boy to live. (*Dreiser*) 14. She longed for night to come to bring sleep to her. (*Cronin*) 15. It was really warm for May, and still light enough for him to see his cows in the meadow beyond the river. (*Galsworthy*) 16.... the idea is for us to give a special concert at the Festival Hall. (*Lessing*) 17. My house is always ready for anyone to come into. (*Shaw*) 18. My dear, this isn't the time for us to quarrel. (*Hansford Johnson*) 19. Erik saw that she was impatient for him to be gone. (*Wilson*) 20. He waited for Bert to say something. (*Caldwell*)

**Exercise 14. Translate into English, using the /or-to-Infinitive Construction where possible.**

(A) 1. Первое, что мы должны сделать — это заказать билеты. 2. Вопрос был слишком неожиданным, чтобы я мог на него ответить. 3. Я подчеркнула эти предложения, чтобы вы проанализировали их. 4. Он попросил принести бумагу и перо. 5. Этот текст достаточно легкий, чтобы вы могли прочитать его без словаря. 6. Мне очень хочется, чтобы вы поступили в университет. 7. Ему ничего не оставалось делать, как немедленно выехать в Москву. 8. Сделать это должен был он. 9. Было бы неразумно, если бы он сейчас уехал из Ленинграда. 10. Самое лучшее, что вы можете сделать,—это поехать в санаторий.

(B) Based on an episode from *David Copperfield* by Ch. Dickens.

1. Каждый вечер мистер Пеготти ставил свечу на подоконник, чтобы маленькая Эмили знала, что он ее ждет. 2. Когда мистер Пеготти нашел Эмили, он решил, что самое лучшее, что они могут сделать,—это уехать в Австралию. 3. Давид купил поваренную книгу (cookery book), чтобы Дора пользовалась ею. 4. Дора использовала поваренную книгу, чтобы Джим стоял на ней. 5. Дора сказала, что первое, что она должна сделать, — это дать Джиму хороший ужин. 6. Дора

понимала, что Давиду необходимо поехать с мисс Бетси в Кентербери, и сказала, что ей будет даже полезно (beneficial) побыть одной. 7. Мистер Микобер попросил Трэдльса помочь ему, так как разоблачение (exposure) Урии Гипа было слишком трудным делом, чтобы он мог с ним справиться один (to cope with). 8. Мисс Бетси и Давид сели завтракать, с нетерпением ожидая, когда придет мистер Микобер. 9. Мистер Микобер попросил, чтобы принесли бумаги и конторские книги (account-books) Урии Гипа. 10. Урии Гипу ничего не оставалось делать, как сознаться во всех своих преступлениях. 11. Мистер Дик с нетерпением ожидал, когда Давид вернется из-за границы. 12. Мисс Бетси очень хотелось (to be anxious), чтобы Давид женился на Агнес, но она никогда ему об этом не говорила.

(С) 1. Левин не слушал больше и ждал, когда уедет профессор. (Л. Толстой) 2. «Неужели (can it be that) вы не чувствуете, как вам легко оскорблять меня?» — сказала она. (Л. Толстой) 3. Константин Левин чувствовал, что ему остается только покориться... (Л. Толстой) 4. «Ты слишком уж подчеркиваешь (to lay too much stress on) свою нежность, чтоб я очень ценила», — сказала она... (Л. Толстой) 5. Одним словом, мне невыразимо тяжело было иметь с ним какие бы то ни было отношения (to have anything to do with somebody). (Л. Толстой) 6. Я был необыкновенно кроток, слушал их особенно ласково, почтительно просил передать мне квасу. (Л. Толстой) 7. Бабушка в спальне дожидалась, чтобы Володя пришел показаться ей. (Л. Толстой) 8. «Мне необходимо тебя видеть», — сказала она... (Л. Толстой)

**Exercise 15. State the function of the infinitive and Infinitive Constructions. Translate into Russian.**

1. It was then an easy matter for me to go to Paul's room and make an appropriate signal to Kitty, and she turned back, up the street to disappear round the corner into Church Square. (Clark) 2. She made a curious, fumbling gesture towards me, as if to convey a sort of affection. (Hansford Johnson) 3. It was charming to see him play with the two children. (Maugham) 4. To tell you the truth, Mr. Butler, I did not want Aileen to leave your home at all. (Dreiser) 5. I happen to know that he was supposed to come to the wedding. (Salinger) 6. Gertrude gave a long soft exhalation. It made the young man smile at her again; and this smile made her blush a little. To take refuge from blushing she asked him if, after his long walk, he was not hungry and thirsty. (James) 7. Charles Lomax's exertions are much more likely to decrease his income than to increase it. (Shaw) 8. Your shortest way will be to follow the boulevard, and cross the park... but it is too late and too dark for a woman to go through the park alone. (Ch. Bronte) 9. In spite of herself the colour fled from her cheeks instantly, only to come back in a hot, defiant wave. (Dreiser) 10. They hardly expect him to recover consciousness; it was a terrible knock. But if he does, he's sure to want to see you, even if he can't speak. (Galsworthy) 11. Some of the rumours we knew to be nonsense, but not all. (Snow) 12. Addy and Ellie look beautiful enough to please the most fastidious man. (Shaw) 13. It was something to be sitting like this in the front of a box in one of the biggest theatres in London. (Priestley) 14. Anyway, just to begin with, don't you think you might treat me as a moral equal? (Snow) 15. He was said to be bearing Roger no malice, to be speaking of him with dispassion. (Snow) 16. Paul waited for Harriet to say something about the bar, but she didn't even seem to notice it. (I. Shaw) 17. Idleness is a great sin, and I certainly don't like any of my friends to be idle or sluggish. (Wilde) 18. The only way to guard his future and retain his financial friends was to stand trial as quickly as possible and trust them to assist him to his feet in the future. (Dreiser) 19. To keep his attention engaged, she talked with him about his wardrobe.. (Dickens) 20. To accept too many favors from Ramona was dangerous. He might have to pay with his freedom. (Bellow) 21. To be frank with you, he didn't pay. That's the truth. (I. Shaw) 22. There was a sandy little garden and a stone wall high enough to keep the children safe but not too high for her to lean upon and pierce the distance with her gaze. (Buck) 23. Her heart sank; she felt on a sudden a cold chill pass through her limbs and she shivered. (Maugham) 24. He appeared

to be a man of considerable wealth, and was reputed to be a bachelor. (*Coilian Doyle*) 25. The thing to do is to gain time. (*Dreiser*) 26. Now I don't choose her to be grateful to him, or to be grateful to anybody but me. (*Dickens*) 27. Mr. Weller left the room, and immediately afterwards was heard to shut the street door. (*Dickens*) 28. He felt lonesome the minute he left Bert and heard the screen door slam behind him. (*Caldwell*) 29. It was not customary for her father to want to see her in his office. (*Dreiser*) 30. The appearance of Frank Cowperwood at this time was, to say the least, prepossessing and satisfactory. (*Dreiser*) 31. I happen to be pretty comfortably placed. (*Snow*) 32. Was Aileen in any way to blame? (*Dreiser*) 33. Go and get Bessie to give you some tea, Tony. (*Maugham*) 34. There's only one thing for her to do, and that's to divorce him. (*Maugham*) 35. I have devised my own system and have never known it fail. (*Maugham*) 36. His salary was fifty dollars a week, and he was certain soon to get more. (*Dreiser*) 37. It was often naïf to be too suspicious, much more naïf than to believe too easily. (*Snow*) 38. Like all women, she was there to object and be convinced. It was for him to brush the doubts away and clear the path if he could. (*Dreiser*) 39. He's thought to be lucky to have gone as far as this... (*Snow*) 40. Our final decision is to have a conference tomorrow afternoon, before which each one is to think the matter over. (*Benchley*) 41. She longed so much for people to be happy. (*Buck*) 42. He turned out to be the most efficient clerk that the house of Waterman and Co. had ever known. (*Dreiser*) 43. The delay didn't seem to affect him. (*Salinger*) 44. A sudden rattle on his right hand caused him to start from his reverie and turn in that direction. (*Hardy*)

**Exercise 16. Memorize the following expressions and use them in examples, of your own.**

1. He is hard to please. (Ему трудно угодить.) 2. He is difficult to deal with. (С ним трудно иметь дело.) 3. The book is! difficult to translate. (Эту книгу трудно перевести.) 4. She is pleasant (beautiful, pretty) to look at. (Она хорошенькая, у нее привлекательная внешность.) 5. I have something to tell you. 1 (Мне надо вам кое-что сказать.) 6. There is nothing to be gained;) by it. (Этим ничего не достигнешь.) 7. There is nothing to be done. (Ничего не поделаешь.) 8. There are many things to be done. (Надо многое сделать.) 9. The house is to let. (Дом сдается в наем.) 10. Who is to blame? (Кто виноват?) 11. Be sure to come. (Неприменно приходите.) 12. There is nothing left for him to do but wait. (Единственное, что ему остается, — это ждать.)

**Exercise 17. Translate into English, using the infinitive.**

1. Стихи трудно переводить. 2. Ничего не поделаешь, придется идти пешком. 3. Я уезжаю завтра, а многое еще надо сделать. 4. Кому писать протокол? 5. Доклад начнется ровно в пять; непременно приходите вовремя. 6. Уже поздно посылать письмо. Единственное, что нам остается делать, — это послать телеграмму. 7. Не уходите. Мне надо вам кое-что сказать. 8. Роман Герцена! «Кто виноват?» написан в 1846 году. 9. Перестаньте спорить, этим ничего не достигнешь. 10. Некоторым людям трудно угодить. 11. Он очень умный человек, но с ним трудно иметь дело. 12. Эта актриса очень красива.

**Exercise 18. Translate into English, using the infinitive where possible.**

(A) 1. Я рад, что послушался вашего совета. 2. Я рад, что вы послушались моего совета. 3. Мне жаль, что я не видела эту пьесу. 4. Мне жаль, что вы не видели эту пьесу. 5. Я доволен, что поступил в университет, Я доволен, что моя сестра поступила в университет. 7. Мне жаль, что я не застала ее дома 8. Мне жаль, что вы не застали ее дома. 9. Он был счастлив что получил путевку в санаторий. 10. Он был огорчен, что не достал билет на концерт.

(B) 1. «Здравствуй, здравствуй, мой милый cousin! — кликнула она... — как я рада вас видеть!» (*Тургенев*) 2. «Как я рада, что вы приехали», — сказала Бетси. (*Л. Толстой*) 3. Она [Долли] так рада будет тебя видеть. Она совсем одна, бедная (*Л. Толстой*) 4. Герасим... казалось, был доволен, что ему был кому услуживать (to wait upon). (*Л. Толстой*) 5. Поздравляю тебя, мой ангел, с новым образом жизни. Радуюсь,

что он тебе понравился. (Пушкин) 6...он стал расспрашивать брата о делах его; и Левин был рад говорить о себе, потому что он мог говорить не притворяясь. (Л. Толстой) 7. «А я доволен тем, что похвастал вам этот журнал», — говорил Лаврецкий... (Тургенев) 8. «Я очень рада, что он меня терпеть не может», — говорила она о нем [Левине]. (Л. Толстой) 9. Ко узнав, что Нарумов не инженер, а конногвардеец (horse-guardsman), она сожалела, что... высказала свою тайну ветреному Томскому. (Пушкин) 10. Во все время дороги и Лемм и Лаврецкий мало говорили друг с другом: каждого из них занимали собственные мысли, и каждый был рад, что другой его не беспокоит. (Тургенев)

**Exercise 19. Translate into English, using the infinitive or Infinitive Constructions where possible.**

**(A)** Based on an episode from *The Old Curiosity Shop* by Ch. Dickens.

1. Маленькая Нелл и ее дедушка были очень одиноки (to lead a solitary life); у них не было никого, кто мог бы о них позаботиться. 2. Говорили, что старик был когда-то богат. 3. Предполагали, что он проиграл все свое состояние в карты (to lose one's fortune in gambling). 4. Когда дед Нелл разорился, он решил уйти с девочкой из дома. Они уехали из Лондона с тем, чтобы никогда туда больше не возвращаться. 5. Они долго ходили из деревни в деревню и, наконец, случайно пришли в большой промышленный город. 6. Наступил вечер, а они все еще бродили по городу (all about the town). Казалось, они бродили уже целую вечность. 7. Огни в домах и магазинах, казалось, насмехались (to mock) над ними, и от этого они чувствовали (это заставляло их чувствовать) себя еще более одинокими. 8. Они жалели, что пришли в этот город, где они никого не знали и где не было никого, кто мог бы им помочь. 9. Увидев темный подъезд (doorway), они решили провести там ночь; они знали, что едва ли найдут лучшее убежище. 10. В этот момент они увидели, что какой-то человек вышел из дома. 11. Он был первым, кто обратил на них внимание в этом большом промышленном городе. 12. Он сам был очень беден, но у Нелл и ее деда, был такой несчастный и усталый вид (они выглядели такими несчастными и усталыми), что он не мог допустить, чтобы они провели ночь на улице. 13. «Погода такая плохая, что ребенок не может оставаться на улице (погода слишком плохая, чтобы ребенок оставался на улице)»,—сказал он. 14. Он не стал ждать, пока они ответят ему, и взял Нелл на руки. 15. Нелл не возражала: она чувствовала, что он добрый человек, и она была слишком утомлена, чтобы идти дальше. 16. Незнакомец привел их на фабрику, где он работал. Он поправил (to arrange) кучу теплой золы, которая лежала в углу, чтобы они могли провести на ней ночь. 17. Утром Нелл и старик ушли с фабрики. Они не прошли и нескольких шагов, когда услышали, что кто-то бежит за ними. 18. Нелл почувствовала, что кто-то тронул ее за руку. 19. Их новый друг оказался очень великодушным человеком: он отдал им все деньги, которые у него были.

**(B)** Based on an episode from *Vanity Fair* by W. Thackeray.

1. Было известно, что мистер Осборн обязан (to owe) своим богатством мистеру Седли. 2. Мистер Осборн хотел, чтобы его сын женился на Эмили, отец которой был очень богат. 3. Когда мистер Седли разорился, мистер Осборн приказал, чтобы его имя никогда не упоминалось в его доме. 4. Он жалел, что разрешал сыну ухаживать за Эмилией, и приказал ему забыть ее. 5. Он не мог допустить, чтобы его сын женился на девушке, у которой не было ни связей (connections), ни состояния. 6. Осборны случайно познакомились с богатой наследницей, и отец решил, что было бы хорошо, если бы Джордж женился на ней. 7. Его дочери делали все, что могли, чтобы заставить Джорджа забыть Эмилию. 8. Они только и делали, что превозносили мисс Роду Сварц до небес (to praise somebody to the skies). 9. С утра до ночи Джордж слышал, как они говорили о достоинствах и талантах (perfections and accomplishments) мисс Роды. 10. Они

уговаривали брата жениться на ней. «Ты, несомненно, будешь счастлив с ней», — не раз говорили они. 11. Мисс Рода считала Джорджа очень милым молодым человеком, и ей очень хотелось (to be anxious), чтобы он женился на ней. 12. Однажды случилось так, что Рода пела любимую песенку Эмили. 13. Она ждала, что Джордж попросит ее повторить песню, и сидела, перелистывая страницы нот (music). 14. Вдруг Рода увидела, что на обложке нот написано имя Эмили. 15. Она не знала, что это было имя, которое нельзя было произносить в доме Осборнов, и попросила девушек рассказать ей все, что они знали об Эмили. 16. «Лучше не упоминайте ее имени! — закричали испуганные девицы. — Ее отец опозорил себя и всю свою семью». 17. Когда Джордж услышал, что его сестры плохо отзываются об Эмили (to speak ill of somebody), он пришел в негодование и сказал, что она самая добрая и красивая девушка во всей Англии. 18. Он не заметил, что мистер Осборн вошел в комнату. 19. Старик был очень недоволен тем, что Джордж ослушался его приказания. 20. За обедом он много пил и с нетерпением ждал, когда дамы уйдут из комнаты. 21. Джордж открыл дамам дверь и, вернувшись к столу, сказал, что его сестры первые заговорили об Эмили. 22. Мистер Осборн приказал сыну, порвать с Эмилией (to break with somebody altogether). «Мисс Сварц — вот девушка, на которой тебе следует жениться», — сказал он. 23. «Восемь тысяч в год — это слишком большая сумма, чтобы ты мог отказаться от нее», — продолжал старик. 24. «Я лучше останусь холостяком на всю жизнь, чем женюсь на мисс Сварц», — ответил Джордж. 25. Старик пришел в ярость и закричал, что лишит сына наследства (to disinherit). Он был уверен, что, зная это, Джордж едва ли ослушается его.

(С) 1. Когда Ростов вошел в комнату, княжна опустила на мгновение голову, как бы предоставляя (to give) время гостю поздороваться с теткой. (Л. Толстой) 2...Я искренно любил Ивана Петровича; да нельзя было и не любить молодого человека столь кроткого и честного. (Пушкин) 3. Он, казалось, был очень стыдлив (bashful), потому что каждая малость (trifle) заставляла его краснеть до самых ушей. (Л. Толстой) 4...чтобы быть истинными друзьями, нужно быть уверенными друг в друге. (Л. Толстой) 5. Против меня была дверь в кабинет, и я видел, как туда вошли Яков и еще какие-то люди... (Л. Толстой) 6. Аркадий первый вышел на крыльцо (the steps)... (Тургенев) 7. «Я виновата, — промолвила она вслух, — но я это не могла предвидеть». (Тургенев) 8. Только Лизавета Ивановна успела снять капот и шляпу, как уже графиня послала за нею и велела опять подавать (to bring round) карету. (Пушкин) 9. Он вошел... и остолбенел. Лиза... нет, Акулина, милая смуглая Акулина сидела перед окном и читала его письмо; она была так занята, что не слыхала, как он и вошел. (Пушкин) 10. Гости почитали обязанностью восхищаться псарней (kennels) Кирилы Петровича. (Пушкин) 11. Муж всегда виноват, сударыня... когда жена нехорошо ведет себя (to misbehave). (Тургенев) 12. Лаврецкий объявил, что проводит гостей до полдороги (to see somebody halfway down the road), и велел оседлать себе лошадь. (Тургенев) 13. Лиза тотчас села за фортепьяно и разобрала романс. Увы! музыка оказалась запутанной и неприятно напряженной... (Тургенев) 14. Народ стал расходиться (to disperse), а она все стояла; казалось, она ожидала ухода Лаврецкого. (Тургенев) 15. Слова кондуктора разбудили (to rouse) его и заставили вспомнить о матери и предстоящем свидании (approaching meeting) с ней. (Л. Толстой) 16. Каренина опять вошла в вагон, чтобы проститься с графиней. (Л. Толстой) 17. Ему казалось, что он первый открыл это удовольствие, и он наслаждался своим открытием. (Л. Толстой) 18. И я тебе говорил и говорю: нехорошо (not right), что ты не едешь на собрания и вообще устранился от земского дела (to keep out of the district business). (Л. Толстой) 19. А вот что (I tell you what): если ты хочешь их видеть, они, наверное, нынче в зоологическом саду от четырех до пяти. Кити на коньках катается. (Л. Толстой) 20. Я настолько горда, что никогда не позволю себе любить человека, который меня не

любит. (Л. Толстой) 21. Все ждали, когда он [Левин] кончит, и он чувствовал это. (Л. Толстой) 22. После чая он [Левин] вышел в переднюю велеть подавать (to put in) лошадей... (Л. Толстой) 23. Он [Каренин] видел, что она вела себя неприлично (unbecomingly), и считал своим долгом сказать ей это. Но ему очень трудно было не сказать более, а сказать только это. (Л. Толстой) 24. В 1816 году, в мае месяце случилось мне проезжать через \*\*\*скую губернию... (Пушкин)

**Exercise 20. Analyse the Predicative Constructions. Translate into Russian.**

1. The sound of the door opening again made him start like a guilty thing. (Murdoch) 2. He really strolled about, thinking, and then, the weather being cold, stepped into a hotel. (Dreiser) 3. He heard her answer him, words dropping with a soft, tender, cooling touch into the heat of his brain. (Greene) 4. I can't imagine your coming to see me at a time when you are fully satisfied with your life and work. (Caldwell) 5. After all these years it really is not worth while for you to play hide-and-seek with one another. (Maugham) 6. Calvin... departed laughing, and could be heard laughing and sneezing all the way down the stairs. (Murdoch) 7. He was afraid of the strike continuing a few days longer, of more taxes, of a "Government defeat. (Greene) 8. Day after day through the spring no rains fell, and farmers, waiting for the floods of the rainy season to fill their rice-fields, saw their young crops dry up before their eyes. (Buck) 9. He watchend her at evening, sitting by the lamp, with the mending on her lap, in the shabby livingroom. (Lessing) 10. I won't have Carl talk that way. (Hemingway) 11. Every night the old man would have a fire of logs lit in the great stone fire-place. (Buck) 12. Cn his will being opened, after a decent interval, it was found to consist of two portions. (James) 13....we had heard planes coming, seen them pass overhead, watched them go far to the left and heard them bombing on the main high road. (Hemingway) 14. The film was not bad, but I could feel impatience radiating from her and knew she was longing for it to end. (Hansford Jchnson) 15. She was moving towards the door, her head reverted, her heels clattering. (Faulkner) 16. I never knew, when' we planned to meet, in what, mood I should be likely to find her. (Hansford Johnson) 17. You can have no idea of... how I have missed the thought of your being near me somewhere! (Horgan) 18. I had heard these topics argued between the Americans and ourselves for years. (Snow) 19. She appeared to be very rich and important... (Priestley) 20. The sound of Mistress Affery cautiously chaining the door before she opened it, caused them both to/look that way. (Dickens) 21. The sun rose higher and soon it would be time for the others to come home for the noon meal. (Buck); 22. She heard Miss Reba's voice booming from somewhere and listened to her toiling slowly up the stairs. (Faulkner) 23. We both knew that her marriage to Skidmore was supposed to have **been** an abnormally happy one. (Snow) 24. Carefully and slowly, with his eyes fixed on her, he stepped down. (Greene) 25. Our little country newspaper is sure to chronicle the fact next week. (Wilde)

**Exercise 21. State the function of the verbals and Predicative Constructions. Translate into Russian.**

1. He and the poet are now in the office, with him trying to make the poet go to bed, and the poet refusing. (Faulkner) 2. Once or twice only he looked round to see her sitting like something dead, so white and motionless (Galsworthy) 3. The man in the football jersey moved back to the side of the road, leaving room for the bicycles to pass. (/ Shaw) 4. He passed by with studied indifference, his face averted, eyes fixed straight ahead, as though to avoid seeing him. (Croniri) 5. Deafened by the noise of the traffic, splashed with mud from the grinding wheels, he still kept on plodding along the gutters. (Croniri) 6. Arthur had managed to get his way. It had been easy to coax Margaret into inviting them to stay with us for a week. It had not been so easy for Penelope to accept. (Snow) 7. Rebecca stood serene, with her lips parted, the faint breeze blowing her hair back from her wide brows. An inner glow seemed to merge with the sunlight blandly brushing her cheeks. (Lindsay) 8....she loved receiving at formal parties. Her pleasure at being surrounded by these close friends made her eyes sparkle. (Stone) 9. It hardly does much good to have a complex mind

without actually being a philosopher. (*Bellow*) 10. Her first season passed without the perfect suitor presenting himself, and the second also; but she was young and could afford to wait. Mrs. Garstin told her friends that she thought it a pity for a girl to marry till she was twenty-one. (*Maugham*) 11. Tom, wiping his eyes with his sleeve, began to blubber out something about a resolution to escape from hard usage and lack of sympathy at home by roaming abroad into the great world, never to return. (*Twain*) 12. Reading that article had not caused Mr. Bunting to stop drinking tea after dinner. (*Greenwood*) 13. She was thinking of Roger coming to her, marrying her. (*Snow*) 14. Hawkins at once goes briskly to the table and takes the chair nearest the sofa, Christy having left the inkstand there. (*Shaw*) 15. Waiting for his turn, he stared out at the vague rows of faces and found his thoughts wandering. (*Lindsay*) 16. We happened then to cross the street, and the traffic prevented us from speaking. (*Maugham*) 17. It might be easier to be out of work without having a wife and a child... (*Wilson*) 18. He's got sense enough to know that there's nothing to be gained by making a scandal. (*Maugham*) 19. I have the honour of knowing more distinguished men, my poor child, than you are likely to see in a lifetime. (*James*) 20. Kate sat in absolute dismay, waiting for the other woman to recover herself. (*Lawrence*) 21. Old Todd... disliked his married sons calling unless told to come. (*Lindsay*) 22. The sound of the telephone ringing seemed to have woken every nerve in my body. (*Du Maurier*) 23. No child of his thought of running to him to have a shoe tied or a button fastened. (*Buck*) 24. It must be very peaceful, he [Tom] thought, to lie and slumber and dream for ever and ever, with the wind whispering through the trees and caressing the grass and the flowers of the grave, and nothing to bother and grieve about, ever any more. (*Twain*) 25. He had stopped to look in at a picture shop. (*Galsworthy*) 26. He stopped speaking. He glanced up to see the chairman watching him. (*Wilson*) 27. He arose very cautiously, as if fearing to find every bone broken. (*Hansford Johnson*) 28. And, after that dance, she stole away home having no heart to see him dance with his water-nymph. (*Galsworthy*) 29. Enders turned and stared full at Miss Zelinka, trying, with the deep intensity of his glance, to get her to look at him, smile at him... (*J. Shaw*) 30. I walked up to the wood, but it was too wet for me to go inside; so I went down to the gate, hoping to see a human soul, someone quite ordinary and cheerful. (*Hansford Johnson*) 31. I was afraid of hurting Mr. Micawber's feelings, or, at all events, Mrs. Micawber's, she being very sensitive... (*Dickens*) 32. But I don't like to think of you going into danger. (*Galsworthy*) 33. Miss Folgers readily confessed to having taken the child, whom she claimed to have found playing in Elysian Park, to her farm. (*Baüm*) 34. It was customary for Aileen to drive alone almost every afternoon a spirited pair of bays, or to ride a mount. (*Dreiser*) 35. The General... listened that evening to the Japanese artillery bombarding the field. It seemed impossible to maintain any sort of order. (*Mailer*) 36. I lit a cigarette and watched the red end mirrored in the water. (*Snow*) 37. When Paul entered tentatively, after knocking and getting no reply, he found her lying in her old dressing-gown, her eyes averted, her face flushed and exhausted. (*Lessing*) 38. Uncle Titus promptly marks his approval of her action by rising from the sofa, and placing a chair for her to sit down upon. (*Shaw*) 39. She had something to say to him, but she kept it back for fear of irritating him. (*James*) 40. But being in love, and recently engaged, Shelton had a right to be immune from discontent of any kind... (*Galsworthy*) 41. Erik saw their eyes meet for a moment, and Fabermacher allowed the silence to grow with brutal relentlessness. (*Wilson*)

### **Exercise 22. Follow the direction for Exercise 21.**

1. He was extremely considerate; he was very attentive to her comfort; she never expressed the slightest wish without his hastening to gratify it. When she happened to feel ill no one could have been kinder or more thoughtful. She seemed to do him a favour when she gave him the opportunity of doing something tiresome for her. And he was always exceedingly polite. He rose to his feet when she entered a room, he gave her his hand to help her out of a car; if he chanced to meet her in the street he took off his hat, he was solicitous to open the door for her when she left a room... He treated her not as Kitty had

seen most men treat their wives, but as though she were a fellow-guest in a country house. (*Maugham*) 2. Wilson looked around and saw Goldstein sitting alone at the next tent, writing a letter. Abruptly, it seemed shameful to Wilson for them to drink without including anyone else in the squad. For a few seconds he watched Goldstein scribbling busily with a pencil, moving his lips soundlessly... (*Mailer*) 3. That angry afternoon appeared to have happened so long ago that to apologize now for what had been said was foolish. Haviland seemed to have forgotten the bitterness entirely. "The thing to do now, Erik," he said, "is to close up, go home and sleep for a day or two." (*Wilson*) 4. Next morning, meeting me in the hall, she told me that she was too tired to go out with the guns. It was the first time I had known her energies flag. She was still enough herself to give me instructions. (*Snow*) 5. The tongue of Fleur's dog licking his dabbled hand interrupted this somewhat philosophic reflection. Animals were too human nowadays, always wanting to have notice taken of them... (*Galsworthy*) 6. Perhaps having written this to you I may never show it to you or leave it for you to see. But yet I must write it. Of all conceivable persons you, when you have grown to manhood, are the most likely to understand. (*Wells*) 7. He lay in bed, dressed, with the light burning, until he heard the clock strike three. Then he left the house, putting his watch and his tobacco pouch into his pocket. (*Faulkner*) 8. That evening the instinct vouchsafed at times to lovers in place of reason caused him to pack his bag and go to Cannes. (*Galsworthy*) 9. He sat there in the little waiting room, wearing an old cloth cap that Ronnie had found at the back of the car and insisted upon his taking. The only other people, a sleepy elderly country couple... did not seem to notice anything surprising about his appearance. (*Priestley*) 10. He followed the direction of her glance. They stood facing the windows that led out on the verandah. They were shuttered and the shutters were bolted. They saw the white china knob of the handle slowly turn. They had heard no one walk along the verandah. It was terrifying to see that silent motion. A minute passed and there was no sound. Then, with the ghastliness of the supernatural in the same stealthy, noiseless and horrifying manner, they saw the white china knob of the handle at the other window turn also. It was so frightening that Kitty, her nerves failing her, opened her mouth to scream; but, seeing what she was going to do, he swiftly put his hand over it and her cry was smothered in his fingers. Silence. She leaned against him, her knees shaking, and he was afraid she would faint. Frowning, his jaw set, he carried her to the bed and sat her down upon it. (*Maugham*) 11. He [Francis] would not appear to be encouraging his daughter to marry a fortune. It amused me, having known Francis since we were both young. I had seen him, less orthodox than now, marrying for love, but also marrying into a rich family. (*Snow*) 12. Erik wanted them to like each other because he cared for them both, but he suddenly dreaded the thought of their becoming friendly because he had a conviction that they could form a friendship which would have no real need of him. He interrupted to make Mary talk shop. (*Wilson*)

### **Exercise 23. Translate into English, using verbals where possible.**

1....когда княжна Марья, опустив шторы, хотела выйти, Наташа позвала ее к себе. (*Л. Толстой*) 2. Она [Наташа] высунула голову в сырой воздух ночи, и графиня видела, как тонкая шея ее тряслась от рыданий... Наташа знала, что стонал не князь Андрей... но этот страшный неумолкавший (*never-ceasing*) стон заставил зарыдать ее. (*Л. Толстой*) 3. Ростов, не желая навязывать свое знакомство княжне (*to force something on somebody*), не пошел к ней, а остался на деревне, ожидая ее выезда (*to drive out*). (*Л. Толстой*) 4....в голове его [Пьера] мелькнула мысль, что действительно хорошо бы было, даже ежели бы и взяли Москву, ему остаться в ней... (*Л. Толстой*) 5. Проснувшись от своей болезни (*to come to oneself after one's illness*), Пьер увидел... своих двух людей, приехавших из Москвы, — Терентия и Ваську, и старшую княжну, которая... узнав о его освобождении и болезни, приехала к нему, чтобы ходить за ним. (*Л. Толстой*) 6. Высокий, плешивый старый человек... стоял в передней; увидев Пьера, он сердито пробормотал что-то и ушел в коридор. (*Л. Толстой*) 7. Гости



отправились в комнаты для них отведенные. (Пушкин) 8. Но Дефорж стоял уже перед нею. «Благодарю вас, — сказал он ей тихим и печальным голосом, — что вы не отказали мне в моей просьбе...» Марья Кириловна отвечала заготовленную фразой: «Надеюсь, что вы не заставите меня раскаяться в моей снисходительности». (Пушкин) 9. Взволнованная свиданием с Дубровским, Марья Кириловна возвращалась из сада. (Пушкин) 10. Обед, продолжавшийся около трех часов, окончился. (Пушкин) 11. Между тем лошади пришли, и смотритель (postmaster) приказал, чтоб тотчас... запрягали их в кибитку (to harness to) проезжего; но, возвратясь, нашел он молодого человека почти без памяти лежащего на лавке: ему сделалось дурно, голова разболелась, невозможно было ехать. (Пушкин) 12. Постояв (to stand still) несколько секунд, она [Анна] вошла в вагон и села на свое место. (Л. Толстой) 13. Он обнял Левина и, говоря с ним, не замечал Вронского, который встал и спокойно дожидался, когда князь обратится к нему. (Л. Толстой) 14. Когда он [Левин] увидел, что его ожидания сбылись, что ничто не мешает ему высказаться (to speak), лицо его сделалось мрачно. (Л. Толстой) 15. Он [Левин] встал, чтобы идти к письменному столу, и Ласка, лежавшая у его ног... тоже встала и оглядывалась на него, как бы спрашивая его, куда идти. (Л. Толстой) 16. Кити знала, что княгиня была оскорблена тем, что госпожа Шталь как будто (to seem) избегала знакомиться с нею. (Л. Толстой) 17. Он [Левин] сел опять, ожидая приезда гостей, чтобы уехать незаметно (unnoticed). (Л. Толстой) 18. Ему так хорошо удалось уговорить брата посоветоваться (to consult) с доктором и ехать па воды за границу (foreign watering-place)... что в этом отношении он был собой доволен. (Л. Толстой) 19. «Извините меня, княгиня, — сказал он [Каренин], учтиво улыбаясь, по твердо глядя ей в глаза,—но я вижу, что Анна не совсем здорова, и желаю, чтоб она ехала со мною». (Л. Толстой) 20...шаги лакея заставили ее очнуться (to rouse oneself), и, скрыв от него свое лицо, она притворилась, что пишет. (Л. Толстой) 21 \_\_ Анна села с письмом Бетси к столу и, не читая, приписала внизу (to write below): «Мне необходимо вас видеть. Приезжайте к саду Вреде. Я буду там в 6 часов». (Л. Толстой) 22. Он (Вронский)... радовался тому, что благодаря этому дождю наверное застанет ее дома и одну, так как знал, что Алексей Александрович, недавно вернувшийся с вод (foreign watering-place), не переезжал из Петербурга. (Л. Толстой) 23. Она [Анна] вышла в столовую... и нарочно громко говорила, ожидая, что он придет сюда; но он не вышел, хотя она слышала, как он выходил к дверям кабинета, провожая (to take leave) правителя канцелярии (chief secretary). (Л. Толстой) 24. Он любил удить рыбу и как будто (to seem) гордился тем, что может любить такое глупое занятие. (Л. Толстой) 25. Павел Петрович улыбнулся и, положив руку на плечо брату, заставил его снова сесть. (Тургенев) 26. Ее случайно увидел некто Одинцов, очень богатый человек лет сорока шести...; влюбился в нее и предложил ей руку. (Тургенев) 27. Разговаривая вечером с Катей, Аркадий совершенно позабыл о своем наставнике. (Тургенев) 28... они, кажется, взаимно презирали друг друга... (Л. Толстой) 29. Посмотрев на часы, увидел он, что время ехать. (Пушкин) 30. Герман был сын обрусевшего немца, оставившего ему небольшой капитал (fortune). (Пушкин) 31...однажды Лизавета Ивановна, сидя под окошком за пальцами, нечаянно (to happen) взглянула на улицу и увидела молодого инженера, стоящего неподвижно и устремившего глаза к ее окошку. (Пушкин) 32. На стене висели два портрета, писанные (to paint) в Париже m-me Lebun. (Пушкин) 33. Старуха молча смотрела на него и, казалось, его не слышала. Герман вообразил, что она глуха, и, наклонясь над самым ее ухом, повторил ей то же самое. (Пушкин) 34. Случилось так, что в числе горничных Анны Павловны находилась одна очень хорошенькая девушка... (Тургенев) 35. Лиза вошла в комнату и, увидев Лаврецкого, покраснела. (Тургенев) 36. Лаврецкий походил около сада в смутной надежде встретиться с Лизой, но не увидел никого. (Тургенев) 37. Они сидели возле Марфы Тимофеевны и, казалось, следили за ее игрой (the game)... (Тургенев) 38. “Я желаю, чтобы вы меня простили», — проговорила

Варвара Павловна, не поднимая глаз. (*Тургенев*) 39. М-me Schoss, ходившая к своей дочери, еще больше увеличила страх графини рассказами (to describe) о том, что она видела на Мясницкой улице... (*Л. Толстой*) 40....оставшись один в маленькой комнатке, он долго ходил в ней взад и вперед... (*Л. Толстой*) 41. Забыв опасность быть узанным, Ростов подвинулся... к самому крыльцу (the steps). (*Л. Толстой*) 42. В соседней избе лежал раненый адъютант Раевского с разбитой кистью руки, и страшная боль...заставляла его жалобно... стонать. (*Л. Толстой*) 43. Княжна Марья произвела на него приятное впечатление под Смоленском. То, что он встретил ее тогда в таких особенных условиях, и то, что именно на нее одно время указывала ему мать, как на богатую партию, сделали то, что он обратил на нее особенное внимание. (*Л. Толстой*) 44. Наполеон стоял... на Поклонной горе и смотрел на открывавшееся (to lie) перед ним зрелище. Москва... казалось, жила своей жизнью. (*Л. Толстой*) 45. Переодевшись в придворный мундир, monsieur de Beaussset приказал нести впереди себя привезенную им императору посылку... (*Л. Толстой*)

## THE ADVERB

### Exercise 1. State the morphological composition of the following adverbs

Where, abroad, too, tenfold, nowadays, inside, quickly, underneath, once, homeward, seldom, nowhere, heartily, afoot, headlong, twice, beyond, then, eastward, otherwise, upstairs, rarely, late, outside, ahead, forever, so, beneath, forward, fast, scarcely, 'inquiringly, sometimes, good-naturedly.

### Exercise 2. Point out the adverbs and define the group each belongs to.

1. She talked to them naturally, sang a little song to them... And gave them their Sunday toys. (*Buck*) 2. He [Jolyon] was free to go off with his easel where and when he liked. (*Galsworthy*) 3. The man must have had diabolically acute hearing. (*Wells*) 4. Patients insist on having microbes nowadays. (*Shaw*) 5. As soon as Annette found herself outside, she began to run. (*Murdoch*) 6. I never felt better in my life. (*Saroyan*) 7. I think sometimes there is nothing before me but hard work... (*Galsworthy*) 8. It was as if his soul had been cramped and his eyes bandaged from the hour of his birth. Why had he lived such a life? Why had he submitted to things, blundered into things? (*Wells*) 9. Yes, George had lived too fast, or he would not have been dying twenty years before his time — too fast! (*Galsworthy*) 10. She consulted her husband at once. (*Galsworthy*) 11. Fleur having declared that it was "simply too wonderful to stay indoors," they all went out. (*Galsworthy*) 12. And she lived at Mapledurham a jolly name, too, on the river somewhere. (*Galsworthy*) 13. A week later I am visited by a very stylishly dressed young woman. (*Saroyan*) 14. They had been dancing together. (*Dreiser*) 15. He (Soames) remembered her birthday well — he had always observed it religiously. (*Galsworthy*) 16. The driver, was ordered to take the car to the pool, and Jates and Karen went afoot. (*Heym*) 17. The only thing is to cut the knot for good. (*Galsworthy*) 18. Why, you've hardly started, it isn't fair to bother you. (*Cronin*) 19. Twice I doubled round corners, thrice I crossed the road and came back on my tracks. (*Wells*) 20. They went eyeing each other askance.. (*Galsworthy*) 21. He took a few steps towards her and looked less at her than at the open doorway behind her... (*Greene*) 22. In another moment Adyl was leading the way downstairs. (*Wells*) 23. Soames looked at her hard (*Galsworthy*) 24. The boy was due to go to-morrow. (*Galsworthy*) 25. She seems to be simple enough. (*This is America*) 26. It [the cry] came from the terrace below. (*Galsworthy*) 27. They are quiet at-present. (*Galsworthy*) 28. I must get the money somehow. (*Shaw*) 29. He [Soames] had never had a love of music. (*Galsworthy*) 30. He spoke little and listened much. (*Horgan*)

### Exercise 3. Use the comparative or superlative degree of the adverbs.

1. Then the bus... began to run, \_\_\_ still, through a long avenue, (fast) (*Faulkner*) 2....moreover, he was \_\_\_ educated than the others, (well) (*Buck*) 3. She was the one who was being hurt \_\_\_. (deeply) (*Wilson*) 4. He contrived to get a glimpse of Montanelli once or \_\_\_ in every week, if only for a few minutes. (often) (*Voynich*) 5. Driving \_\_\_ now, she arrived

between four and five, (slowly) (*Galsworthy*) 6. However, I must bear my cross as \_\_\_ I may. (well) (*Shaw*) 7. Then he dismissed the thought as unworthy and impossible, and yielded himself \_\_\_ to the music. (freely) (*London*) 8. He followed her mental process \_\_\_ now, and her soul was no \_\_\_ the sealed wonder it had been, (clearly; long) (*London*) 9. Felix's eyebrows rose \_\_\_ than ever, (high) (*James*) 10. It was a comfort to Margaret about this time, to find that her mother drew \_\_\_ and \_\_\_ towards her than she had ever done since the days of her childhood, (tenderly; intimately) (*Gaskell*)

## MODAL WORDS

### Exercise I. Point out all the modal words and define their meaning.

1. Over the ridge she would find him. Surely she would find him. (*Wells*) 2. He had stopped their mouths, maybe, but at what a cost. (*Galsworthy*) 3. She is just engaged to him. Of course she is frightfully excited about it, and naturally he wants her to come away and marry. [*Wells*] 4. Winifred could barely get a word out of him, he ate nothing, but he certainly took his liquor and his face kept getting whiter. (*Galsworthy*) 5. She was probably dissatisfied just as he was. (*Dreiser*) 6. Knowledge of something kept from her made him, no doubt, unduly sensitive. (*Galsworthy*) 7. The Buccaneer, watching him go so sadly, felt sorry perhaps for his behaviour to the old man. (*Galsworthy*) 8. Thorp was actually too sick to see anybody. (*Heym*) 9. "Allow me, Sir, the honour of grasping your hand — permit me, Sir, to shake it," said the grave man. "Certainly," said Mr. Pickwick. (*Dickens*) 10. My dear Ma'am, you deserve a very excellent husband—you do indeed. (*Dickens*) 11. Bertine and I are just on our way home, truly. (*Dreiser*) 12. He saw Fleur, standing near the door, holding a handkerchief which the boy had evidently just handed to her.. (*Galsworthy*)

## THE INTERJECTION

### Exercise 1. Point out all the interjections and say whether they are emotional or imperative.

1. "The Boers are a hard nut to crack, uncle James." "H'm!" muttered James. "Where do you get your information? Nobody tells." (*Galsworthy*) 2. "Oh! My eye!" he said looking very lowspirited, "I am sorry for that." (*Galsworthy*) 3. "Good Lord!" said Fleur. "Am I only twenty-one? I feel forty-eight." (*Galsworthy*) 4. "Good Heavens!" cried my mother, "you'll drive me mad!" (*Dickens*) 5. Heavens! How dull you are! (*Sheridan*) 6. "Oh, Karen," he said, "it's good to have you around!" (*Heym*) 7. Alas! The white house was empty and there was a bill in the window. (*Dickens*) 8. A man jumped on top of the barricade and, waving exuberantly, shouted. "Americans! Hurrah." (*Heym*) 9. Hallo, Michael! I'm rather late; been to the club and walked home. (*Galsworthy*) 10. Ah! you are both of you good-natured. (*Sheridan*) 11. "Hark!" cried the Dodger at this moment, "I heard the tinkler," catching up the light, he crept softly upstairs. (*Dickens*) 12. "Who is that?" she cried. "Hush, hush!" said one of the women, stooping over her... (*Dickens*) 13. Well, I don't like those mysterious little pleasure trips that he is so fond of taking. (*Voynich*) 14. Now, Maria, here is a character to your taste... (*Sheridan*) 15. Here! I've had enough of this. I'm going. (*Shaw*)

## THE PREPOSITION

### Exercise 1. State the morphological composition of the following prepositions:

In, below, with regard to, during, concerning, till, in front of, without, behind, under, in view of, outside, off, into, until, across, according to, with, along, up, inside, out of, owing to, at, regarding.

### Exercise 2. Insert prepositions and define their meaning where possible.

1. The life \_\_\_ the Dutch settlement now began to be built into the life \_\_\_ the American nation. These people did consciously and \_\_\_ their own will, although there were — the older ones some who longed, as did even Mijnheer Stulting \_\_\_ times, \_\_\_ the comfort and security \_\_\_ his old home. It had been a sad blow \_\_\_ him when the pastor died \_\_\_ the early years and he was never again satisfied altogether \_\_\_ any who tried to take his place. (*Buck*) 2. Bitterly tired, he lay down \_\_\_ the sofa \_\_\_ his fur coat and fell asleep.

(Galsworthy) 3. \_\_\_ the appointed time \_\_\_ the evening Mr. Micawber reappeared. (Dickens) 4. They were \_\_\_ earnest conversation. \_\_\_ time \_\_\_ time they would halt and one \_\_\_ them would, it seemed, explain something \_\_\_ the other, who \_\_\_ turn would nod his head sagely. (Clark) 5. There was only one other event \_\_\_ this half-year,... that made an impression \_\_\_ me which still survives. (Dickens) 6. He reached his house \_\_\_ midnight. (Galsworthy) 7. He looked \_\_\_ his watch. \_\_\_ half an hour the doctor would be back. (Galsworthy) 8. Bing went \_\_\_ the soldier, who had the serious face \_\_\_ a child thrown \_\_\_ the world too soon. (Heym) 9. He stared \_\_\_ her \_\_\_ amazement. He had forgotten that she was ignorant \_\_\_ his story and \_\_\_ his flight \_\_\_ Carlion. (Greene) 10. \_\_\_ these studies the excellent Mrs. O'Dowd was \_\_\_ great assistance \_\_\_ him. (Thackeray) 11. A child \_\_\_ 1901, he had come \_\_\_ consciousness when his country, just over that bad attack \_\_\_ scarlet fever, was preparing \_\_\_ the Liberal revival \_\_\_ 1906. (Galsworthy) 12. Mrs. Reed's hands still lay \_\_\_ her work inactive, her eyes \_\_\_ ice continued to dwell freezingly \_\_\_ mine. (Ch. Bronte) 13. When \_\_\_ the first week \_\_\_ December he decided to go \_\_\_ Paris, he was far \_\_\_ admitting that Irene's presence was influencing him. (Galsworthy) 14. Stroeve was, of course, delighted \_\_\_ her. He could not do enough to show his gratitude \_\_\_ the whole hearted devotion \_\_\_ which she had accepted the burden he laid \_\_\_ her. (Maugham) 15. Just before Christmas, Reggie Burnside passed \_\_\_ London \_\_\_ his way \_\_\_ Murren. He dropped \_\_\_ Elizabeth's studio ir \_ tea. (Aldington) 16. One autumn morning I was \_\_\_ my mother \_\_\_ the front garden, when Mr. Murdstone, I knew him \_\_\_ that name now, came by \_\_\_ horseback. (Dickens) 17. He was proud \_\_\_ this enlistment; proud \_\_\_ his boy forgoing off to fight \_\_\_ the country. (Galsworthy) 18. An accidental circumstance cemented the intimacy \_\_\_ Steerforth and me, \_\_\_ a manner that inspired me \_\_\_ great pride and satisfaction though it sometimes led \_\_\_ inconvenience. (Dickens)

### Exercise 3. Insert by or with.

1. The Germans, he had been assured \_\_\_ everybody, were on the run, and it was unlikely that they would stop running so soon... (Heym) 2. He was busy making entries \_\_\_ a lead pencil in a book which lay open before him. (Dreiser) 3. Both men were loaded down \_\_\_ field equipment and the bottles contributed \_\_\_ the grateful people of Paris. (Heym) 4. They dined in the small restaurant, which had been "decorated" \_\_\_ rather feeble pictures \_\_\_ young artists. (Aldington) 5. But the nearer he came to the center of the town, the more difficult it was to walk; the road was strewn \_\_\_ stones and bricks and rubble. (Heym) 6. I remember being met at the Zoo station \_\_\_ one of their scholars. (Snow) 7. He sat down vigorously and lighted a cigarette \_\_\_ trembling hands. (Murdoch) 8. The streets, crowded \_\_\_ people, still reminded Yates of the first days in Paris, the honeymoon of liberation. (Heym) 9. She had been appointed \_\_\_ one of Rainborough's predecessors. (Murdoch) 10. The hills around Rollingen, usually illuminated \_\_\_ the fires in the blast furnaces, were crowded \_\_\_ the lightning of far-off guns. (Heym)

## THE CONJUNCTION

### Exercise 1. State the morphological composition of the following conjunctions:

For, as well as, unless, now that, and, neither... nor, while, although, not only... but also, provided, as though, supposing, no sooner... than, or, so that, if, both... and, as long as, so, either... or, as... as, when, until, before, after, as if, as soon as, lest, for fear that, notwithstanding, nor.

### Exercise 2. Point out all the coordinating conjunctions and define the group each belongs to.

1. The stranger had not gone far, so he made after him to ask the name. (Dickens) 2. Be quick, or it may be too late. (Dickens) 3....real accuracy and purity she neither possessed, nor in any number of years would acquire. (Ch. Bronte) 4....Mrs. Septimus Small let fall no word, neither did she question June about him. (Galsworthy) 5. The river was not high, so there was not more than a two or three mile current. (Twain) 6. It seemed to him that he could contrive to secure for her the full benefit of both his life insurance and his fire insurance... (Wells) 7. Karl is solid and extremely certain of himself, while Joseph on the

other hand, though no less certain of himself, is a good deal less solid. (*Saroyan*) 8. He could see no one, and he began to believe that either his instinct had deceived him, or else that the shadowing was over. (*Greene*) 9. But for a long time we did not see any lights, nor did we see the shore, but rowed steadily in the dark riding with the waves. (*Hemingway*)

**Exercise 3. Point out all the subordinating conjunctions and say what kind of subordinate clauses they introduce.**

1. She stood quite silent while Butler appealed to her. (*Dreiser*) 2. Since Miss Wilfer rejected me, I have never again urged my suit. (*Dickens*) 3. Whenever I looked at Susan she gave me a frank full-hearted smile. (*Braine*) 4. So the tiny woman closed the shutter of the cottage window and fastened the door, and trembling from head to root for fear that any one should suspect her, opened a very secret place, and showed the Princess a shadow. (*Dickens*) 5. And yet tired though he was after his three long days, Soames dreaded the moment when the car should stop. (*Galsworthy*) 6. I extinguished my taper, locked my bureau, and left her, since she would not leave me. (*Ch. Bronte*) 7. Once they reached the open country the car leapt forward like a mad thing. (*Murdoch*) 8. He was a tall fellow with a very wide mouth and prematurely bald in front, so that he appeared to have a colossal forehead. (*Priestley*) 9. The reference was as plain as it was unexpected. (*Clark*) 10. Early as he was, another man was there before him. (*Dreiser*) 11. We're as we're made. (*Maugham*) 12. They were all smiling wid'ely at me as I came toward them. (*J. Shaw*) 13. He was a fattish, worried, untidy man, always looking as if he had slept in the expensive clothes he wore. (*Priestley*) 14. Mr. Pancks has come down into the Yard to-night, on purpose that you should hear him. (*Dickens*) 15. The most I can say now is that it is very cold in San Francisco, and I am freezing. (*Saroyan*) 16. Give me your promise that this shall be done. (*Priestley*) 17. In that small room he seemed even bigger than I remembered him. (*Maugham*) 18. Whatever I intend to do I'll do without advice from the outside. (*Dreiser*) 19. Breakfast was not yet over before the men came to put up the marquee. (*Mansfield*) 20. He prized the pencil, because it had been a gift from his mother. (*Warren*) 21. As soon as he had gone, I looked at the clock. (*Snow*) 22. After a sleepless night, he [Cowperwood] wrote his resignation to the chairman of the board of directors, in order that he should be prepared to hand it to him at once. (*Dreiser*)

## THE PARTICLE

**Exercise 1. Point out the particles and define the group each belongs to.**

1. It is just because I want to save my soul that I am marrying for money. (*Shaw*) 2. Rosa feared this power, but she enjoyed it too. (*Murdoch*) 3. Oh, doctor, do you think there is any chance? Can she possibly survive this last terrible complication? (*Shaw*) 4. We merely want to see the girl and take her away. (*Dreiser*) 5. I shall also try to be there at ten. (*Wells*) 6. Don't come any nearer. You're at just the right distance. (*Bennett*) 7. He had taken up with it solely because he was starving. (*London*) 8. Soames was but following in the footsteps of his father. (*Galsworthy*) 9. I am interested only in man. Life I love and before death I am humble. (*Saroyan*) 10. Just then the telephone rang. (*Snow*) 11. Tom, you'll manage it and if you do I'll give you something ever so nice. (*Twain*) 12. He needed the peculiar sympathy that a woman alone can give. (*Locke*) 13. She ought to have written at once and told him exactly what had happened. (*Wells*) 14. I think, he's been a simply perfect father, so long as I can remember. (*Galsworthy*) 15. They did not even look at him. (*Faulkner*) 16. Not a career for a man of his ability. (*Galsworthy*) 17. We followed him along the corridor... He never looked back, he never hesitated. (*Collins*)

## GRAMMATICAL HOMONYMS

**Exercise 1. State whether the boldfaced word is an adverb, a modal word, or a particle.**

1. Miss Whitmore was **truly** taken by surprise. (*Dreiser*) 2....the time had come in which she must speak to him **truly**. (*Trollope*) 3. The hall looked **exactly** as it did when he used to dine there with Jack Herring. (*Galsworthy*) 4. My mother knew so **exactly** how to

dress. 5. You are coming **right** out into life — facing it all. (*Wells*) 6. She would never persuade them that she had done **right**. (*Wells*) 7. "You will be sure to come?" said Mr. Snodgrass. "Oh, **certainly**." (*Dickens*) 8. Soames smiled. **Certainly** Uncle James had a way with him. (*Galsworthy*) 9. Lammlein rose. "We have fulfilled our obligations," he said pompously, and yet not quite **certainly**. (*Heym*) 10. Tom, you'll manage it and if you do I'll give you something **ever** so nice. (*Twain*) 11. I don't think I shall ever be afraid of you again, Bessie. (Сн. *Bronte*) 12. Fleur having declared that it was "**simply** too wonderful to stay indoors," they all went out. (*Galsworthy*) 13.-She looked at him **simply**, directly... (*Dreiser*) 14. They **just** came in. They are sitting in number 7 booth. (*This is America*) 15. I'll **just** tap and ask them to come out. (*Dreiser*) 16. I don't know **just** what to do. (*Dreiser*) 17. What are they that they should judge us? **Yet** they do unhesitatingly. (*Shaw*) 18. There was **yet** another source of difference between us. (*Dickens*) 19. But the gentleman had not finished his requests **yet**. (*Priestley*) 20. "I had another reason for suspecting the deceased woman," he said, "which appears to me to have been stronger **still**." (*Collins*) 21. He had no purpose in going about the room, but he was not **still** a moment. (*Dickens*) 22....Charlie felt sure that she was **still** somewhere in London. (*Priestley*) 23. Old Mr. Ablewhite **never** made his appearance that night. (*Collins*) 24. Mrs. Reed was blind and deaf on the subject. She **never** saw him strike or heard him abuse me. (*Ch. Bronte*) 25. To be loved beautifully was **surely** the crown and climax of her being. (*Wells*) 26. Slowly, **surely**, with the secret inner process that works the destruction of an old tree, the poison of the wounds to his happiness, his will, his pride, had corroded the comely edifice of his philosophy. (*Galsworthy*) 27. In turn, each of these brothers was very different from the other, yet they, **too**, were alike. (*Galsworthy*) 28. They said of him that he was **too** serious. (*This is America*)

### Exercise 2. State whether the boldfaced word is an adverb or a preposition.

1. Somebody **outside** pulled at the door. (*Greene*) 2. **Outside** it was getting dark. (*Hemingway*) 3. It was a nice little place and he liked the high mountain hauling up **beyond**. (*Hemingway*) 4. **Outside**, and **beyond** the road, lay the Park. (*Murdoch*) 5. There, just **inside** the door, stood a wide, shallow tray full of pots of pink lilies. (*Mansfield*) 6. It was dark **inside**. (*Hemingway*) 7. He wandered **down** the street again. (*Lindsay*) 8. He dressed for dinner early and was first **down**. (*Galsworthy*) 9. I drove back **up** the narrow road. (*Hemingway*) 10. They mounted **up** and **up**, through the musty smell of an old close house, little used, to a large garret bedroom. (*Dickens*) II. It was just that he had never really looked into a human face **before**. (*Warren*) 12. The afternoon **before** the attack was spent in putting the boats ready.

### Exercise 3. State whether the boldfaced word is an adverb, a conjunction, a preposition, or a postposition.

1. They were reluctant to interfere **in** their niece's private affairs. (*Lindsay*) 2. A cool March air came **in** through the revolving door whenever the page-boy passed the guests in or out. (*Baum*) 3. She came back with a package and got in and we drove **on**. (*Hemingway*) 4. Bertine and I are just **on** our way home, truly. (*Dreiser*) 5. **After** dinner they sat about and smoked. (*Aldington*) 6. **After** she had left me I brooded on my situation. (*Clark*) 7. A little **before** midnight the thick fog that had been falling over the city became rain. (*Saroyan*) 8. She thought for a moment **before** she replied. (*Trollope*) 9. You have never worked at anything like this **before**, have you? (*Dreiser*) 10. I was born there, but have never been there **since** I was a baby. (*Trollope*) 11. I knew him well, but it was some years **since**, and I valued him as a man of singular probity and spirit. (*Trollope*) 12. On one point they were in agreement — George had degenerated terribly **since** joining the army. (*Aldington*) 13. At other times he was working in his vineyard from dawn till the heat drove him to rest and then again, when it was a trifle cooler **till** dusk. (*Maugham*) 14. After tea she fulfilled that promise to herself and took Jon **up** the hill. (*Galworthy*) 15. Rinaldi picked **up** the candle, lit it and went on reading. (*Hemingway*) 16. He glanced **up** reproachfully, caught the comic lift of her eyebrow just like their father's, laughed and felt better. (*Galsworthy*) 17. Lady Anna stood at the open window, looking across at the broad field and the river bank **beyond**...

(Trollope) 18....there was a little hill and **beyond** a stone wall, an apple orchard. (Hemingway) 19. What, after all, did an extra five minutes matter? But he would pretend to himself that they mattered **beyond** measure. (Mansfield) 20. But he missed Fleur, who came **down** last. (Galsworthy) 21. The sun was going **down** and the day was cooling off. (Hemingway)

#### **Exercise 4. Define the part of speech the boldfaced words belong to.**

1. The **only** thing is to cut the knot for good. (Galsworthy) 2. I have **only** just come. I have not seen him yet. (Shaw) 3. Carrie said nothing, **but** bent over her work. (Dreiser) 4. It seemed to him that life was hollow, and existence **but** a burden. (Twain) 5. You never talk anything **but** nonsense. (Wilde) 6. He could not go on living here **alone**. (Galsworthy) 7. For your suggestion **alone** I could have you court-martialed. (Heym) 8. Clare had made **one** of her greatest efforts. (Galsworthy)- 9. With age one suffered from the feeling that **one** might have enjoyed things more. (Galsworthy) 10. The lieutenant's exile was to be only a temporary **one**. (Lindsay) 11. He steeled himself with **that** phrase, and tiptoed on; but the next door was harder to pass. (Galsworthy) 12. His tone was different from **that** of his friends. (Snow) 13. The startling discovery so terrified her **that** she could hardly repress a sound. (Hardy) 14. He ate all **that** was placed before him... (Dickens) 15. Look **round** this room. (Dickens) 16. They were only five at a **round** table, and it was very pleasant indeed. (Dickens) 17. I have just returned from my **round** of medical visits... (Collins) 18. At that moment the woman at the fire turned **round**. (Mansfield) 19. Columbus intended to **round** Africa and thus find a waterway to India. 20. **Once** we got inside the dressing-room, Jack lay down and shut his eyes. (Hemingway) 21. And life, unfortunately, is something that you can lead but **once**. (Maugham)

## **Part II. SYNTAX**

### **THE SIMPLE SENTENCE**

#### **Exercise 1. Define the kinds of sentences according to the purpose of the utterance.**

Laura was terribly nervous. Tossing the velvet ribbon over her shoulder, she said to a woman standing by, "Is this Mrs. Scott's house?" and the woman, smiling queerly, said, "It is, my lass." Oh, to be away from this! She actually said, "Help me God!" as she walked up the tiny path and knocked. To be away from these staring eyes, or to be covered up in anything, one of those women's shawls even! I'll just leave the basket and go, she decided. I shan't even wait for it to be emptied.

Then the door opened. A little woman in black showed in the gloom.

Laura said, "Are you Mrs. Scott?" But to her horror the woman answered, "Walk in, please, miss," and she was shut in the passage. "No," said Laura, "I don't want to come in. I only want to leave this basket."

The little woman in the gloomy passage seemed not to hear her. "Step this way, please, miss," she said in an oily voice, and Laura followed her. (Mansfield)

#### **Exercise 2. Define the type of question**

1. "Who is he?" I said. "And why does he sit always alone, with his back to us too?" (Mansfield) 2. "Did she have a chill?" he asked, his eyes upon the floor. (Cronin) 3. You have Mr. Eden's address, haven't you, Mr. Ends? (London) 4. Is literature less human than the architecture and sculpture of Egypt? (London) 5. We shall be having some sort of celebration for the bride, shan't we, Mr. Crawley? (Du Maurier) 6. "Can I see the manager?" I said, and added politely, "alone." (Leacock) 7. When had the carriage been back from taking Miss June to the station? (Galsworthy) 8. What is the meaning of that? She is going to live in the house, isn't she? (Galsworthy) 9. He couldn't understand what Irene found wrong with him: it was not as if he drank. Did he run into debt, or gamble or swear? (Galsworthy) 10. Were you talking about the house? I haven't seen it yet, you know. Shall we all go on Sunday? (Galsworthy) 11. Don't you realize it's quite against the rules to have him. (Cronin) 12. How will you carry the bill into effect? Can you commit a whole country to their own prisons? (Byron)

**Exercise 3. Point out two-member sentences (say whether they are complete or elliptical) and one-member sentences.**

1. He stared amazed at the calmness of her answer. (*Galsworthy*) 2. We must go to meet the bus. Wouldn't do to miss it. (*Cronin*) 3. Obedient little trees, fulfilling their duty. (*Kahler*) 4. Lucretius knew very little about what was going on in the world. Lived like a mole in a burrow. Lived on his own fat like a bear in winter. (*Douglas*) 5. He wants to write a play for me. One act. One man. Decides to commit suicide. (*Mansfield*) 6. A beautiful day, quite warm. (*Galsworthy*) 7. "What do you want?" "Bandages, stuff for wounded." (*Heym*) 8. "How did he look?" "Grey but otherwise much the same." "And the daughter?" "Pretty." (*Galsworthy*) 9. And then the silence and the beauty of this camp at night. The stars. The mystic shadow water. The wonder and glory of all this. (*Dreiser*) 10. "I'll see nobody for half an hour, Macey," said the boss. "Understand? Nobody at all." (*Mansfield*) 11. "Mother, a man's been killed." "Not in the garden?" interrupted her mother. (*Mansfield*) 12. Garden at the Manor House. A flight of grey stone steps leads up to the house. The garden, an old-fashioned one, full of roses. Time of year, July. Basket chairs, and a table covered with books, are set under a large yewtree. (*Wilde*)

**Exercise 4. Point out the subject and say by what it is expressed. Translate into Russian.**

1. At that moment the postman, looking like a German army officer, came in with the mail. (*Mansfield*) 2. The clock struck eight. There was no sign of any of the other guests. (*Huxley*) 3. Now, there is something peculiarly intimate in sharing an umbrella. (*Mansfield*) 4. Together we walked through the mud and slush. (*Mansfield*) 5. Something impersonal and humble in that action seemed to reassure the Consul. (*Cronin*) 6. The sight of them, so intent and so quick, gave Bertha a curious shiver. (*Mansfield*) 7. Eight o'clock in the morning. Miss Ada Moss lay in a black iron bedstead, staring up at the ceiling. (*Mansfield*) 8. Still, the good of mankind was worth working for. (*Galsworthy*) 9. Sometimes the past injects itself into the present with a peculiar force. (*Heym*) 10. Forgetting some things is a difficult matter. (*Voynich*) 11. To cross from one end to the other was difficult because of the water. (*Heym*) 12. "A person doesn't have to be rich to be clean," Charles said. (*Braine*) 13. There was an eagerness and excitement in the faces of the men. (*Heym*) 14...and Timothy's was but one of hundreds of such homes in this City of London... (*Galsworthy*) 15. Let's get out quick. It's no good wasting time. (*Maugham*) 16. "Very well," said Soames, "then we know where we are." (*Galsworthy*) 17. Now, to go through a stormy night and with wet clothes, and, in addition, to be ill nourished and not to have tasted meat for a week or a month, is about as severe a hardship as a man can undergo. (*London*) 18. She did not know. The "No" was stronger than her craving to be in Frisco's arms and forget this dreary existence. (*Prichard*) 19. The mining industry might make wealth and power for a few men and women. But the many would always be smashed and battered beneath its giant treads. (*Prichard*) 20. Yes, that did sound rather far-fetched and absurd. (*Mansfield*) 21. This, of course, in her present mood, was so incredibly beautiful... She began to laugh. (*Mansfield*) 22. To live on good terms with people one must share their work and interests. (*Prichard*) 23. These three deemed themselves the queens of the school. (*Ch. Bronte*) 24. Who were these people? What are they? (*Galsworthy*) 25. His was the harsh world of reality. No one could walk around his drawing. (*Stone*) 26. Governing the district of Cremmen wasn't turning out to be an easy and pleasant job. (*Heym*) 27. The firing increased in volume. (*Heym*) 28. High and low all made fun of him. (*Thackeray*) 29. For a woman to look at her best is a point of discipline. (*James*) 30. Your coming home has made me as foolish as a young girl of nineteen. (*Abrahams*) 31. And now his heir and nephew, Thomas Esmond, began to bid for his uncle's favour. (*Thackeray*)

**Exercise 5. State the nature of it. Translate into Russian.**

1. It was dusky in the dining-room and quite chilly. (*Mansfield*) 2 The bell rang. It was lean, pale Eddie Warren in a state of acute distress. (*Mansfield*) 3. Oh! Oh! Oh! It was a little



house. It was a little pink house. (*Mansfield*) 4. But in her bosom there was still that bright glowing place. It was almost unbearable. (*Mansfield*) 5. She sat up, but she felt quite dizzy, quite drunk. It must have been the spring. (*Mansfield*) 6. It was marvellous to be made love to like that. (*Prichard*) 7. It is the moon that makes you talk to yourself in that silly way. (*Shaw*) 8. It is very distressing to me, Sir, to give this information. (*Dickens*) 9. He took the path through the fields: it was pleasanter than the road. (*Huxley*) 10. If this is liberty, it isn't going to mean a thing. (*Heym*) 11. It was now almost four-thirty in the afternoon. (*Dreiser*) 12. I took a good room. It was very big and light and looked out on the lake. (*Hemingway*)

**Exercise 6. Point out the predicate and say to what type it belongs.**

1. Presently she grew tired of that and looked across at her sister. (*Galsworthy*) 2. You shall have as many dances as you like. I shan't dance with anyone except you End Maxim. (*Du Maurier*) 3. Well, d'you feel any better now? (*Priestley*) 4. Harry was enjoying his dinner. (*Mansfield*) 5. Alice went on, he ought to stop doing nothing and criticising everybody. (*Lindsay*) 6. Everything is being taken down and used against you. (*Lindsay*) 7. The story will only get repeated and exaggerated. (*Du Maurier*) 8. But I've got to have a word with him. We got to do something about it. (*Prichard*) 9. She became bitter and unapproachable. (*Thorne*) 10. Her marriage was more or less fixed for the twenty-eighth of the month. They were to sail for India on September the fifth. (*Lawrence*) 11. Leila's partner gave a little gasping laugh. (*Mansfield*) 12. You are to go straight to your room. You are to say nothing of this to anyone. (*De la Roche*) 13. He was a country doctor. He died young. (*Sanborn*) 14. I began to stammer my apologies. He would not listen to me. (*Du Maurier*) 15. To walk in this way behind him seemed to Annette already a sufficient marvel. (*Murdoch*) 16. A ship — the *Vestris* — is reported to be arriving at Joppa. (*Douglas*) 17. Led was having a little new sort of weeping fit daily or every other day. (*Wescott*) 18. Even now he was able to find a thin excuse for that young idiot. (*Kahler*) 19. Do not delay, there is no time. Teacher Williams lies dead already. (*Buck*) 20. The grey house had ceased to be a home for family life. (*Buck*) 21. Kit had been told to do nothing in particular. (*Lindsay*) 22. Lately he'd made efforts to bring the matter up with Brian or Colin. (*Lindsay*) 23. The sky shone pale. (*Mansfield*) 24. These days are finished. They are blotted out. I must begin living all over again. (*Du Maurier*) 25. Next day, by noon, I was up and dressed, and sat wrapped in a shawl by the nursery hearth. (*Ch. Bronte*) 26. And all the while he felt the presence of Pat and had to keep on resisting the impulse to turn round. (*Lindsay*) 27. But Abramovici remained quiet. (*Heym*) 28. Morning broke quiet and hushed, subdued as if holding its breath. (*Abrahams*) 29. There were a number of people out this afternoon. And the band sounded louder and gayer. (*Mansfield*) 30. This has proved surprisingly difficult. (*Murdoch*)

**Exercise 7. Say where the predicate is simple and where it is compound (nominal or verbal).**

1. Two young girls in red came by. (*Mansfield*) 2. Demetrius came alive and pressed a flock of inquiries. (*Douglas*) 3. And in many ways along lines you'd more or less approve, I am coming to feel the mill apart of myself. (*Lindsay*) 4. He tried to be both firm and friendly. I've felt dependent on him. (*Lindsay*) 5. He now felt only a confused ache of memory and a growing desire to be home. (*Lindsay*) 6. No one was there to meet Dick. He felt a twinge of disappointment. (*Lindsay*) 7. There was a silence but not an uncomfortable one. (*Braine*) 8. He was vaguely aware of his father standing by kitchen-range with his coat off. (*Lindsay*) 9. The day of our wedding came. He was to call for me to choose the furniture. (*Mansfield*) 10. A good reliable husband he'd make. And our Alice is a great one for wanting a place of her own. (*Lindsay*) 11. That made all the difference. The room came alive at once. (*Mansfield*) 12. "She sounds serious," Albertine insisted. "She keeps talking about it." (*Kahler*) 13. Not even her own children had seen Ma break down. She'd keep a proud face always. (*Mansfield*) 14. My lady keeps a list of the names in a little red book. (*Mansfield*) 15. Charlie kept quiet. (*Priestley*) 16. Cedric Thompson stood a good three inches above me. (*Braine*) 17. For a moment I stood aghast, peering after her shadowy figure, and

wondering what had taken her. (*Weyman*) 18. And then they sat silent for a few moments together. (*Trollope*) 19. I sat writing letters on a piece of paper with a pencil. (*Haggard*) 20. And for some time he lay gasping on a little flock mattress, rather unequally posed between this world and the next. (*Dickens*) 21. After many adventures I and a little girl lay senseless in the Bad Lands. (*Haggard*) 22. He seemed glad to see me. (*Du Maurier*) 23. At that moment everything in her life seemed to be a source of desperate anxiety. (*Murdoch*) 24. You can smile away till you split your cheek, but you still got to do a day's work to earn a day's wages. Apples don't grow on monkey-trees. (*Lindsay*) 25. She grew to know the two elderly men better than any other member of Eden's family. (*London*) 26. Yates grew impatient. (*Heym*) 27. She turned once more to Mr. Godfrey. (*Collins*) 28. Gwendolen turned pink and pale during this speech. (*Eliot*) 29. Mr. Bruff remained to dinner, and stayed through the evening. (*Collins*) 30. Michelangelo remained silent. (*Stone*) 31. I gave up the attempt and went upstairs to unpack. (*Braine*) 32. Michelangelo's knees went weak. He sat down on his bed. (*Stone*) 33. I looked at the photograph above the mantelpiece and saw my own lace for the first time. (*Braine*) 34. Giovanni looked crestfallen. (*Stone*) 35. He was beginning to sound really angry. (*Murdoch*)

**Exercise 8. Say where the reflexive pronoun is part of the predicate and where it is an object or a predicative.**

1. On my estate, we pride ourselves on other things besides hay. (*Erskine*) 2. She paused, her eyes never leaving my face. "I shall always blame myself for the accident." (*Du Maurier*) 3. She raised herself suddenly in the tall chair, and looked straight at him. (*Erskine*) 4. Dick found himself walking in the direction of his friend Mike's place. (*Lindsay*) 5. It was a Tuesday. My lady wasn't quite herself that afternoon. (*Mansfield*) 6. He felt himself unusually on edge, unable to maintain the impersonally smug tone of Stephenson. (*Lindsay*) 7. Mrs. Danvers showed herself at last. (*Du Maurier*)

**Exercise 9. Point out the predicative and say by what it is expressed.**

1. Annette was completely dazed. (*Murdoch*) 2. Their highest concept of right conduct, in his case, was to get a job. (*London*) 3. I'm five foot eleven in my socks. (*Braine*) 4. Sally, herself, was quite content for a while to enjoy becoming acquainted with her son, washing and feeding him, taking him for walks in the bush, singing him to sleep. (*Prichard*) 5. Mr. de Morfe was as; generous and hail-fellow-well-met with them as ever.' (*Prichard*) 6. I am cold. And I always was such a one for being warm.» (*Mansfield*) 7. Your resemblance to your mother is very striking.] (*Murdoch*) 8. He did not answer. I was aware again of that feeling] of discomfort. (*Du Maurier*) 9. I hated myself. My question had been degrading, shameful. (*Du Maurier*) 10. Their interests were' hers as well as the interests of everybody. (*Prichard*) 11. He's a good chap. He makes you feel it's worth while being alive. I (*Lindsay*) 12. Arrived here, his first act was to kneel down on a large stone beside the row of vessels, and to drink a copious draught from one of them. (*Lindsay*) 13. Either course seemed unthinkable, without any connection with himself. (*Lindsay*) 14. The nightmare of my life has come true. We are in danger of our lives. We are white people in a Chinese city. (*Buck*) 15. The best thing is for you to move in with me and let the young lady stay with your mother. (*Abrahams*) 16. But she was herself again, brushing her tears away. (*Lindsay*) 17. The rest of the time was yours. (*Douglas*) 18. How do you feel physically? (*Ch. Bronte*) 19. Who are you? (*Shaw*) 20. The Irish are a philosophic as well as a practical race. Their first and strongest impulse is to make the best of a bad situation. (*Dreiser*)

**Exercise 10. Use the adjective or adverb.**

1. Catherine smiled at me very \_\_\_ (happy, happily) (*Hemingway*) 2. I felt very \_\_\_ myself, (good, well) (*Hemingway*) 3. I felt \_\_\_ when we started, (terrible, terribly) (*Hemingway*) 4. He sounded \_\_\_ and \_\_\_. (brisk, briskly; cheerful, cheerfully) (*Priestley*) 5. It wil sound \_\_\_. (strange, strangely)' (*Dickens*) 6. The hay smelled \_\_\_ (good, well) (*Hemingway*) 7. I write English \_\_\_ (bad, badly); (*Ch. Bronte*) 8. I looked at her \_\_\_ (attentive, attentively) (*Ch. Bronte*) 9. But don't look \_\_\_, my little girl. It breaks my heart, (sad, sadly) (*Ch. Sront'e*) 10. He was

looking at me \_\_\_ and \_\_\_ (grave, gravely; intent, intently) (*Ch. Bronte*) 11. It [the wine] tasted very \_\_\_ after the cheese and apple, (good, well) (*Hemingway*) 12. The brandy did not taste \_\_\_ (good, well) (*Hemingway*) 13. The pistol felt \_\_\_ on the belt, (heavy, heavily) (*Hemingway*) 14. Silas received the message \_\_\_. (mute, mutely) (*Eliot*) 15. I thought he looked \_\_\_ (suspicious, suspiciously) (*Hemingway*)

**Exercise 11. Point out the subjective and the objective predicative and say by what part of speech it is expressed.**

1. How do you feel? (*Hemingway*) 2. The half hour he had with her... left him supremely happy and supremely satisfied with life. (*London*) 3. How to be shown things and make appropriate comments seems to be an art in itself. (*Leacock*) 4. She had her arms about him, murmuring his name in a pleading question, but he held her away from him. (*Wilson*) 5. From behind the verandah she heard these words: "I don't, Annette." Did father know that he called her mother Annette? (*Galsworthy*) 6. He did not grow vexed; though I continued icy and silent. (*Ch. Bronte*) 7. John Ferrier felt a different man now. (*Conan Doyle*) 8. I would suggest that in the meantime we remain perfectly quiet and keep these matters secret even from Oliver himself. (*Dickens*) 9. He [Harper Steger] was not poor. He had not even been born poor. (*Dreiser*) 10. Gilt held him immobile for only an instant... (*Wilson*) 11. As a gesture of proud defiance he had named his son Francis Nicholas. (*Cronin*)

**Exercise 12. Translate into English, using a compound nominal predicate.**

1. Музыка звучала чудесно. 2. Этот цветок хорошо пахнет. 3. Ваши слова звучат странно. 4. Этот огурец горький на вкус. 5. Бифштекс хорошо пахнет. 6. Эта материя груба на ощупь. 7. Вода в этой местности плоха на вкус. 8. Эта нота звучит резко. 9. Я чувствую себя плохо. 10. Она выглядит хорошо. 11. Она чувствует себя хорошо. 12. Она только кажется хорошей. 13. Пирожное хорошее на вид. 14. Свисток прозвучал пронзительно. 15. Эти розы пахнут упоительно.

**Exercise 13. Point out the predicate and say to what type it belongs. Translate into Russian.**

1. "It's no use," she said quietly. "I am bound to Morris." (*Prichard*) 2. Her feet were never bound as the Chinese then bound the feet of their girls. (*Buck*) 3. "I don't want to tell you," said Galahad. "But you are bound to have it." (*Erskine*) 4. "You are not bound to answer that question," he said to Rachel. (*Collins*) 5. One of them was later sent to board in a missionary school and she was compelled to lose the foot bandages. (*Buck*) 6. When she was sixteen she was a beauty. As the result she was compelled to go to the Emperor's palace. (*Buck*) 7. I was compelled to idleness. I had to listen to her long monologues on the Japanese. (*Buck*) 8. My mother was plainly fading. I was increasingly anxious about her. (*Buck*) 9. We were anxious to cooperate. 10. My father gave it to my mother. It is the only possession I was able to save. (*Douglas*)

**Exercise 14. Point out the subject and the predicate.**

1. On her going to his house to thank him, he happened to see her through a window. (*Dickens*) 2. To describe one's character is difficult and not necessarily illuminating. (*Murdoch*) 3. The three on the sofa rise and chat with Hawkins. (*Shaw*) 4. Nothing seemed to matter. (*London*) 5. To be wanted is always good. (*Stone*) 6. Seeing you there will open up a new world. (*Murdoch*)!. Thereafter I read everything on the subject. I came to know many Negroes, men and women. (*Buck*) 8. Elaine, this ill-advised behaviour of yours is beginning to have results. (*Erskine*) 9. Presently all, was silent. They must have gone through the service doors into the kitchen quarters. (*Du Maurier*) 10. The citizens of occupied countries were to be subjugated individually. (*Wescoit*) 11. It was all wrong this situation. It ought not to be happening at all. (*Du Maurier*) 12. My way is not theirs, it is no use trying to run away from them. (*Lindsay*) 13. No one got the better of her, never, never. (*Du Maurier*) 14. Lewisham stopped dead at the corner, staring in blank astonishment after these two figures. (*Wells*) 15.... We and all the people have been waiting patient for many an hour. (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 16, One cannot help admiring the fellow. (*Dickens*) 17. Then he [Tom]

gave a low distinct whistle. It was answered from under the bluff. (*Twain*) 18. The girl [Aileen] was really beautiful and much above the average intelligence and force. (*Dreiser*) 19. This religion did give promise of creating a new society. There all men could be equally valuable as human beings. (*Buck*) 20. We must begin here and now to show. Thus we might prove our difference from those white men. (*Buck*)

**Exercise 15. Explain why the predicate — verb is used in the singular or in the plural.**

1. The family **were** still at table, but they had finished breakfast. (*Twain*) 2. There **was** a crowd of soldiers along the fence in the infield. (*Hemingway*) 3... the band **was stopped**, the crowd **were** partially **quieted**, and Horatio Fizkin, Esquire, was permitted to proceed. (*Dickens*) 4. Down by the Embankment... a band of unemployed **were trailing** dismally with money-boxes. (*Galsworthy*) 5. The multitude **have** something else to do than to read hearts and interpret dark sayings. (*Ch. Bronte*) 6. The newly married pair, on their arrival in Harley Street, Cavendish Square, London **were received** by the chief butler. (*Dickens*) 7. There **was** a dreaminess, a preoccupation, an exaltation, in the maternal look which the girl could not understand. (*Hardy*) 8. The company **are** cool and calm. (*Dickens*) 9. As of old, nineteen hours of labour a day **was** all too little to suit him. (*London*) 10. There **were** still two hours of daylight before them. (*Aldington*) 11. At last they came into a maze of dust, where a quantity of people **were tumbling** over one another... (*Dickens*) 12. Tom's whole class **were** of a pattern-restless, noisy and troublesome. (*Twain*) 13. A group of men **were standing** guarded by carabinieri. (*Hemingway*) 14. The loving couple **were** no longer happy. (*Reade*)

**Exercise 16. Use the appropriate form of the verb.**

1. Huckleberry's hard pantings \_\_\_ his only reply, (was, were) (*Twain*) 2. There \_\_\_ many a true word spoken in jest, Mr. Cokane. (is, are) (*Shaw*) 3. Each of us \_\_\_ afraid of the sound of his name, (was, were) (*Bennett*) 4. On such meetings five minutes \_\_\_ the time allotted to each speaker, (was, were) (*London*) 5. Neither his father nor his mother \_\_\_ like other people... (was, were) (*Dreiser*) 6. It was dark and quiet. Neither moon nor stars \_\_\_ visible. (was, were) (*Collins*) 7. Plenty of girls \_\_\_ taken to me like daughters and cried at leaving me... (has, have) (*Shaw*) 8. He and I \_\_\_ nothing in common, (has, have) (*Galsworthy*) 9. But I wonder no wealthy nobleman or gentleman \_\_\_ taken a fancy to her: Mr. Rochester, for instance, (has, have) (*Ch. Bronte*) 10. To be the busy wife of a busy man, to be the mother of many children ... \_\_\_, to his thinking, the highest lot of woman, (was, were) (*Trollope*) 11. Her family \_\_\_ of a delicate constitution, (was, were) (*E. Bronte*) 12. Hers \_\_\_ a large family, (was, were) 13. "Well," says my lady, " \_\_\_ the police coming?" (is, are) (*Collins*) 14. Nobody \_\_\_ I am here, (knows, know) (*London*) 15. But after all, who \_\_\_ the right to cast a stone against one who \_\_\_ suffered? (has, have; has, have) (*Wilde*) 16. There are men who \_\_\_ dominion from the nature of their disposition, and who \_\_\_ so from their youth upwards, without knowing... that any power of dominion belongs to them, (exercises, exercise; does, do) (*Trollope*) 17. Plain United States \_\_\_ good enough for me. (is, are) (*London*) 18. He half started as he became aware that someone near at hand \_\_\_ gazing at him. (was, were) (*Aldington*) 19. Fattening cattle \_\_\_ from 5 to 10 gallons of water a head daily, (consume, consumes) (*Black*) 20. She is supposed to have all the misfortunes and all the virtues to which humanity \_\_\_ subject, (is, are) (*Trollope*) 21. It was a market-day, and the country people \_\_\_ all assembled with their baskets of poultry, eggs and such things... (was, were) (*Thackeray*) 22. The precept as well as the practice of the Primitive Church \_\_\_ distinctly against matrimony, (was, were) (*Wilde*) 23...Ratterer and Heggland..., as well as most of the others, \_\_\_ satisfied that there was not another place in all Kansas City that was really as good, (was, were) (*Dreiser*) 24. Twelve years \_\_\_ a long time, (is, are) (*Galsworthy*) 25. There \_\_\_ a great many ink bottles, (was, were) (*Dickens*) 26. May and I — just friends, (is, are) (*Keating*) 27. The bread and butter \_\_\_ for Gwendolen, (is, are) (*Wilde*) 28. I am afraid it is quite clear, Cecily, that neither of us \_\_\_ engaged to be married to anyone, (is, are) (*Wilde*) 29. It \_\_\_ they that should honour you. (is, are) (*Trollope*) 30. *Great Expectations*

by Dickens \_\_\_ published in 1860, (was, were) 31. The family party \_\_\_ seated round the table in the dark wainscoted parlour... (was, were) (*Eliot*) 32. Everybody \_\_\_ clever nowadays, (is, are) (*Wilde*) 33. There \_\_\_ a number of things, Martin, that you don't understand, (is, are) (*Wilde*) 34. The number of scientific research institutes in our country \_\_\_ very large. (is, are) 35. Her hair, which \_\_\_ fine and of medium brown shade, \_\_\_ brushed smoothly across the top of her head and then curled a little at each side, (was, were; was, were) (*Priestley*) 36. After some apologies, which \_\_\_ perhaps too soft and sweet... the great man thus opened the case, (was, were) (*Trollope*) 37. It was as if the regiment \_\_\_ half in khaki, half in scarlet and bearskins: (was, were) (*Galsworthy*) 38. *Youth and Age* \_\_\_ a weekly, and it had published two-thirds of his twenty-one-thousand-word serial when it went out of business, (was, were) (*London*) 39. There \_\_\_ a number of men present, (was, were) (*Walpole*) 40...the flowers came in such profusion and such quick succession that there \_\_\_ neither time nor space to arrange them, (was, were) (*Heytn*)

**Exercise 17. Point out the kind of object and say by what it is expressed. Translate into Russian.**

1. What have you got there? (*Cronin*) 2. She pretended not to hear (*Mansfield*) 3. Marcellus found the luggage packed and strapped for the journey. (*Douglas*) 4. I know all about it, my son. (*Douglas*) 5. I have to show Dr. French his room. (*Shaw*) 6. I never heard you express that opinion before, sir. (*Douglas*) 7. Halting, he waited for the Roman to speak first. (*Douglas*) 8. He was with you at the banquet. (*Douglas*) 9. They don't want anything from us — not even our respect. (*Douglas*) 10. I beg your pardon for calling you by your name. (*Shaw*) 11. I found myself pitying the Baron. (*Mansfield*) 12. I've got it framed up with Gilly to drive him anywhere. (*Kahler*) 13. He smiled upon the young men a smile at once personal and presidential. (*Kahler*) 14. Gallio didn't know how to talk with Marcellus about it. (*Douglas*) 15. Laura helped her mother with the good-byes. (*Mansfield*) 16. Why did you not want him to come back and see me to-day? (*Mansfield*) 17. Mr. Jinks, not exactly knowing what to do, smiled a dependant's smile. (*Dickens*) 18. He found it impossible to utter the next word. (*Kahler*) 19. Marcellus issued crisp orders and insisted upon absolute obedience. (*Douglas*) 20. He's going to live his own life and stop letting his mother boss him around like a baby. (*Kahler*) 21. I will suffer no priest to interfere in my business. (*Shaw*) 22. Papa will never consent to my being absolutely dependent on you. (*Shaw*) 23. Do you know anything more about this dreadful place? (*Douglas*) 24. She hated Frisco and hated herself for having yielded to his kisses. (*Prichard*) 25. They had been very hard to please. Harry would demand the impossible. (*Mansfield*) 26. His part in the conversation consisted chiefly of yesses and noes. (*Kahler*) 27. Michelangelo could not remember having seen a painting or sculpture of the simplest nature in a Buanarrotti house. (*Stone*)

**Exercise 18. Point out the Complex Object and say, by what it is expressed. Translate into Russian.**

1. He could see the man and Great Beaver talking together. (*London*) 2. She had lied about the scullery door being open on the night of the disappearance of the bank-notes. (*Bennett*) 3. Each woman thought herself triumphant and the other altogether vanquished. (*Buck*) 4. Thus these two waited with impatience for the three years to be over. (*Buck*) 5. Sammy watched Mr. Cheviot slowly take the receiver from the girl. (*Priestley*) 6. He hated her to work in the boarding house. (*Prichard*) 7. The Consul felt his legs, give way. (*Cronin*) 8. Mother objected to Aimee being taken away from her game with the boys. (*Prichard*) 9. They had never heard him speak with such urgency, his eyes glowing like amber coals in the fading light. (*Stone*)

**Exercise 19. Translate into English.**

1. Он посвящал музыке все свободное время. 2. Объясните мне, пожалуйста, значение новых слов. 3. Мы приписываем теплomu течению мягкий климат этого острова. 4. Он открыл нам секрет своего изобретения. 5. Байрон посвятил одну из своих поэм Гете. 6. Вы видели, чтобы кто-нибудь вышел из комнаты? 7. Она

объявила нам о своем желании уехать работать на целину. 8. Не приписывайте мне того, чего я никогда не делал. 9. Он посвящает общественной работе все свое свободное время. 10. Мне вчера не починили часы. 11. Я никогда не слышал, чтобы об этом студенте плохо отзывались. 12. Я хочу перешить свое пальто. 13. Войдя в картинную галерею, я увидела мою приятельницу, стоявшую у окна. 14. Она хотела, чтобы ей сшили пальто к Новому году. 15. Спойте нам. 16. Спойте нам еще одну арию из «Евгения Онегина».

**Exercise 20. Point out the attribute and say by what it is expressed.**

1. The first day's journey from Gaza to Ascalon was intolerably tedious. (*Douglas*) 2. What do you say to a stroll through the garden, Mr. Cockane? (*Shaw*) 3. It was such a cruel thing to have happened to that gentle, helpless creature. (*Prichard*) 4. He was always the first to enter the dining-room and the last to leave. (*Mansfield*) 5. Sally hated the idea of borrowing and living on credit. (*Prichard*) 6. The two men faced each other silently. (*Douglas*) 7. It was an easy go-as-you-please existence. (*Prichard*) 8. I am not in the habit of reading other people's letters. (*Shaw*) 9. He thrust his hands deep into his overcoat pockets. (*Galsworthy*) 10. It was not a matter to be discussed even with a guide, philosopher and friend so near and trusted as the Professor. (*Kahler*) 11. Ethel, the youngest, married a good-for-nothing little waiter. (*Mansfield*) 12. He pointed to a house on a near-by shady knoll. (*Douglas*) 13. It was just one little sheet of glass between her and the great wet world outside. (*Mansfield*) 14. She had a pair of immense bare arms to match, and a quantity of mottled hair arranged in a sort of bow. (*Mansfield*) 15. Dicky heard right enough. A clear, ringing little laugh was his only reply. (*Mansfield*) 16. To think that a man of his abilities would stoop to such a horrible trick as that. (*Dreiser*) 17. There was a blackbird perched on the cherry-tree, sleek and glistening. (*Braine*) 18. A middle-aged man carrying a sheaf of cards walked into the room. (*Braine*) 19. Daniel Quilp began to comprehend the possibility of there being somebody at the door. (*Dickens*) 20. Still, Pett's happiness or unhappiness is quite a life and death question with us. (*Dickens*)

**Exercise 21. Point out the apposition and say whether it is close or loose.**

1. Maria, the mother, had not taken off her shawl. (*Cronin*) 2. One of our number, a round-faced, curly-haired little man of about forty, glared at him aggressively. (*Braddon*) 3. There are plenty of dogs in the town of Oxford. (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 4. You look all right, Uncle Soames. (*Galsworthy*) 5. James, a slow and thorough eater, stopped the process of mastication. (*Galsworthy*) 6. He felt lost, alone there in the room with that pale spirit of a woman. (*London*) 7. But the doctor — a family physician well past middle age — was not impressed. (*Carter*) 8. They, the professors, were right in their literary judgement... (*London*) 9. In consequence neither Oscar nor his sister Martha had had any too much education or decent social experience of any kind. (*Dreiser*) 10. But now he had seen that world, possible and real, with a flower of a woman... (*London*)

**Exercise 22. Point out the kind of adverbial modifier, and state by what it is expressed. Translate into Russian.**

1. Gallio slowly nodded his head. (*Douglas*) 2. He's coming Saturday at one o'clock. (*Cronin*) 3. Lucia stopped them in their tracks with a stern command. (*Douglas*) 4. Sally was sitting on the front seat of the buggy, dumb and unhappy at being ignored. (*Prichard*) 5. I feel my own deficiencies too keenly to presume so far. (*Shaw*) 6. A few miners hung on, hoping the mines would reopen. (*Prichard*) 7. The first bar of gold raised hopes sky high. (*Prichard*) 8. She had to talk because of her desire to laugh. (*Mansfield*) 9. Gallic pushed back his huge chair and rose to his full height as if preparing to deliver an address. (*Douglas*) 10. He takes a glass and holds it to Essie to be filled. (*Shaw*) 11. Morris was walking too quickly for Sally to keep up with him. (*Prichard*) 12. The poor woman was annoyed with Morris for dumping his wife on her. (*Prichard*) 13. It was quite a long narrative. (*Douglas*) 14. Of course Laura and Jose were far too grown-up to really care about such things. (*Mansfield*) 15. Now and then Gavin would stop to point out silently some rarity. (*Cronin*) 16. And for

all her quiet manner, and her quiet smile, she was full of trouble. (*Dickens*) 17. The young schoolteacher's spirits rose to a decided height. (*Dreiser*) 18. Evil report, with time and chance to help it, travels patiently, and travels far. (*Collins*)

**Exercise 23. Follow the direction for Exercise 22.**

1. At the top of the stairs she paused to wave to him. (*Douglas*) 2. Marcellus accepted this information without betraying his amazement. (*Douglas*) 3. Having knocked on his door, she firmly entered Grandpa's room. (*Cronin*) 4. After waiting for a few minutes, he marched up the steps, closely followed by Demetrius. (*Douglas*) 5. Why do you always look at things with such dreadfully practical eyes? (*London*) 6. David appeared in the open door, one hand clutching a sheaf of bills, under his other arm an account book. (*Stone*) 7. That night I could scarcely sleep for thinking of it. (*Cronin*) 8. She did feel silly holding Moon's hand like that. (*Mansfield*) 9. Then Gallio cleared his throat, and faced his son with troubled eyes. (*Douglas*) 10. We have some exceptionally fine roses this year. (*Douglas*) 11. Jonathan shook his head slowly, without looking up, his tongue bulging his cheek. (*Douglas*) 12. But it was of no use. Marcellus' melancholy was too heavy to be lifted. (*Douglas*) 13. She [Sally] never would have been able to make a success of the dining-room but for the kindness and assistance of the men. (*Prichard*) 14. On being informed of the old man's flight, his fury was unbounded. (*Dickens*) 15. To be a complete artist it is not enough to be a painter, sculptor or architect. (*Stone*) 16. Sally was furious with herself for having fainted. (*Prichard*) 17. With all her faults, she was candor herself. (*Hardy*) 18. The receiving overseer, Roger Kendall, though thin and clerical, was a rather capable man. (*Dreiser*)

**Exercise 24. Point out all the adverbial modifiers expressed by Predicative Constructions. Translate into Russian.**

1. Marcellus strode heavily to and fro before the entrance, his impatience mounting. (*Douglas*) 2. On her applying to them, reassured by this resemblance, for a direction to Miss Dorrit, they made way for her to enter a dark hall. (*Dickens*) 3. Well, women's faces have had too much power over me already for me not to fear them. (*Hardy*) 4. I almost doubt whether I ought not to go a step farther, and burn the letter at once, for fear of its falling into wrong hands. (*Collins*) 5. Michelangelo went to Jacopo's side, ran his hand carressingly over the sacrophagus, his fingers tracing out in its low relief the funeral procession of fighting men and horses. (*Stone*) 6. Michelangelo went into the yard and sat in the baking sun with his chin resting on his chest. (*Stone*) 7. That over, she sat back with a sigh and softly rubbed her knees. (*Mansfield*) 8. He opened the door for the Senator to precede him. (*Douglas*) 9. They were returning to Fogarty's; their hands full of flowers. (*Prichard*) 10. She pressed his hand mutely, her eyes dim. (*London*) 11. His being an older man, that made it all right. (*Warren*) 12. On the second of these days Granacci burst into the studio, his usually placid eyes blinking hard. (*Stone*) 13. He stood beside me in silence, his candle in his hand. (*Conan Doyle*) 14. In a room within the house, Cowperwood, his coat and vest off, was listening to Aileen's account of her troubles. (*Dreiser*) 15. There was room enough for me to sit between them, and no more. (*Collins*)

**Exercise 25. Say what parts of the sentence are introduced by the preposition with or without.**

1. Steger was beside himself with fear. (*Dreiser*) 2. Basil, let us have something iced to drink, something with strawberries in it. (*Wilde*) 3. She continued silent, leaning back, her smile now glowing with all its insolence. (*Murdoch*) 4. His friend Francesco Granacci was a nineteen year-old youth, a head taller than himself, with hay-colored hair and alert blue eyes. (*Stone*) 5. Without beauty of feature or elegance of form, she pleased. Without youth and its gay graces, she cheered. (*Ch. Bronte*) 6. The real bourgeois Ruth, with all the bourgeois failings and with the hopeless cramp of the bourgeois psychology in her mind, he had never loved. (*London*) 7. Mr. Godfrey's fine eyes filled with tears. (*Collins*) 8. The gravel paths were moist and the grass was wet with dew. (*Hemingway*) 9. There were villas with iron fences and big overgrown gardens and ditches with water flowing and green

vegetable gardens with dust on the leaves. (*Hemingway*) 10. My Anna is worth two of her, with all her beauty and talent. (*Eliot*) 11. He was standing now with the waves breaking at his feet. (*Lawrence*)

**Exercise 26. Point out all the independent elements and say by what they are expressed.**

1. In the morning, however, there was a comforting excitement in leaving the train. (*Kahler*) 2. May be, after all, there was something in that wild idea of Albertine's. (*Kahler*) 3. They gave him, in fact, a pleasant feeling of vicarious fatherhood. (*Kahler*) 4. Nicholas, unfortunately, had passed an unquiet night. (*Cronin*) 5. Nevertheless, despite this reasoning there remained in the Consul's breast that strange sense of jealousy. (*Cronin*) 6. Now fortunate to have such a reliable couple in the house. Naturally, he counted on the Burtons as an official standby. (*Cronin*) 7. I am a human being, senor, and must take advantage of my opportunities. Frankly, I am accustomed to good wine. (*Cronin*) 8. He was surprised, evidently, to find Sally so much at home and bustling about like that. (*Prichard*) 9. She was quite unconcerned, as a matter of fact, about being left alone in the camp, (*Prichard*) 10. Perhaps her colonial upbringing had something to do with it. (*Prichard*) 11. It was still too early for his ride, but he did not go back to bed, he wasn't deeply worried, to be sure, but he knew that he wouldn't be able to sleep. (*Kahler*)

**Exercise 27. Point out what parts are detached and by what they are expressed.**

1. Now their laughter joined together, seized each other and held close, harmoniously, intertwined through each other's fabric and substance. (*Stone*) 2. Huckleberry Finn was there, with his dead cat. (*Twain*) 3. We reached the station, with only a minute or two to spare. (*Collins*) 4. Blind and almost senseless, like a bird caught in a snare, he still heard the sharp slam of the door. (*Cronin*) 5. As he strode along he was conscious, within himself, of a deep, pervading sense of power. (*Cronin*) 6. With his hands by his sides, he strolled very slowly and inconspicuously, down the border. \* (*Cronin*) 7. One summer, during a brief vacation at Knocke, his visit had come to the notice of Harrington Brande. (*Cronin*) 8. We are very poor, senor, with many mouths to feed, and these fish would make a good meal for us. (*Cronin*) 9. Unbelievably, his eyes fixed, lips tightly compressed, Brande stared at the advancing youth. (*Cronin*) 10. He remembered her brave and hardy, with a small-boned eager face, enriched with weather and living. (*Sdnborn*) 11. The girls had met and were strolling, arm in arm, through the rose arbor. (*Douglas*) 12. Stout, middle-aged, full of energy, clad in a grease-stained dark blue print dress... she bustled backwards and forwards from the kitchen to the dining-room. (*Prichard*) 13. She had become very drab and unattractive, with all the hard work, no doubt. (*Prichard*) 14. But, for all that, they had a very pleasant walk. (*Dickens*)

**Exercise 28. Point out homogeneous parts, define them and say by what they are expressed.**

1. He had lived with this block for several months now, studied it in every light, from every angle, in every degree of heat and cold. (*Stone*) 2. He felt discouraged, strangely empty. (*Cronin*) 3. There were tangerines and apples stained with strawberry pink. (*Mansfield*) 4. He came in slowly, hesitated, took up a toothpick from a dish on the top of the piano, and went out again. (*Mansfield*) 5. But I was exceedingly nice, a trifle diffident, appropriately reverential. (*Mansfield*) 6. From the edge of the sea came a ripple and whisper. (*Wells*) 7. They went side by side, hand in hand, silently toward the hedge. (*Galsworthy*) 8. The light oilside had chilled, and threw a chalky whiteness on the river. (*Galsworthy*) 9. Thousands of sheets must be printed, dried, cut. (*Heym*) 10. Opening the drawer he took from the sachet a handkerchief and the framed photograph of Fleur. (*Galsworthy*) II. The Captain was mostly concerned about himself, his own comfort, his own safety. (*Heym*) 12. Her mother was speaking in her low, pleasing, slightly metallic voice. (*Galsworthy*) 13. And suddenly she burst into tears of disappointment, shame and overstrain. (*Galsworthy*) 14. She extended a slender hand and smiled pleasantly and naturally. (*Wales*) 15. Then, without a



word of warning, without the shadow of a provocation, he bit that poodle's near foreleg. (*Jerome /C- Jerome*) 16. It could be smashed by violence but never forced to fulfil. (*Stone*) 17. Never before had the friar had such power and never had his voice rung out with such a clap of doom. (*Stone*)

**Exercise 29. Analyse the following sentences.**

1. His heart felt swollen in his chest. (*Stone*) 2. The girl [Aileen] was really, beautiful and much above the average intelligence and force. (*Dreiser*) 3. Footsore and downhearted, they were making their way back to Coolgardie doing a bit of prospecting. (*Prichard*) 4. The idleness made him cranky. (*Stone*) 5. The prior's hearty, warm-cheeked face went dark at the mention of Savanarola's name. (*Stone*) 6. Ah, to be a soldier, Michelangelo, to fight in mortal combat, to kill the enemy with sword and lance, conquer new lands and all their women? That is the life! (*Stone*) 7. He said it in a very mature, man-to-man tone. (*Warren*) 8. Evidently George and the sheriff were getting along in a very friendly way, for all the former's bitter troubles and lack of means. (*Dreiser*) 9. Together they sketched the apostles, the one bald-headed, the other supporting the weeping John. (*Stone*) 10. With all his brightness and cleverness and general good qualities, Mr. Franklin's chance of topping Mr. Godfrey in our young lady's estimation was, in my opinion, a very poor chance indeed. (*Collins*) 11. Suddenly all the differences between life and death became apparent. (*Stone*) 12. Michelangelo began to see pictures in his mind: of struggles between men, of the rescue of women, of the wounded, the dying. (*Stone*) 13. I am a thousand times cleverer and more charming than that creature, for all her wealth. (*Thackeray*) 14. I'm not accustomed to having more than one drink. (*Tennessee Williams*) 15. Bertoldo, I feel the need to be solitary, to work beyond all eyes, even yours. (*Stone*) 16. Miss Fulton laid her moonbeam fingers on his cheeks and smiled her sleepy smile. (*Mansfield*) 17. Sally found it difficult to visit anybody herself. (*Prichard*) 18. And surely, no man in his senses wants the disastrous consequences of this rush to go any further. (*Prichard*) 19. To draw one does not need big muscles. (*Stone*) 20. And yet, as though overcome, she flung down on a couch and pressed her hands to her eyes. (*Mansfield*) 21. It was a simple face and could have been handsome, in spite of its saffron colouring, but for the soft, full mouth. (*Cronin*) 22. The Lieutenant, without cap, sword or gloves, and much improved in temper and spirits by his meal, chooses the lady's side of the room, and waits, much at his ease, for Napoleon to begin. (*Shaw*) 23. With his strange, hawking cry and the jangle of the cans the milk-boy went his rounds. (*Mansfield*) 24. The man and daughter, the mother being dead, brought their letter from a church in West Tennessee and were accepted forthwith into fellowship. (*Warren*) 25. He could not bring himself to face Stanek. (*Heym*) 26. There was a two-storey new wing, with a smart bathroom between each two bedrooms and almost up-to-date fittings.. (*Lawrence*) 27. Her [Aileen's] eyes gleamed almost pleadingly for all her hauteur, like a spirited collie's, and her even teeth showed beautifully. (*Dreiser*) 28. In the afternoon, leaning from my window, I saw him pass down the street, walking tremulously and carrying the bag. (*Lawrence*) 29. Amazed and amused, they watched white men scurrying about the ridge, digging and burrowing into the earth like great rats. (*Prichard*) 30. He sat down by the oak tree, in the sun, his fur coat thrown open, his hat roofing with its flat top the pale square of his face. (*Galsworthy*) 31. She was remaining upstairs to give Mary full pleasure of being hostess at her own party. (*Murdoch*) 32. It was pleasant to travel this way, all expenses paid by "the Firm". (*Warren*) 33. One of them even opened the car door for him, with the awkward deference ritually paid in Johntown to the crippled or sick. (*Warren*) 34. She was sitting there very quietly, her legs bent back under her, her yellow skirt evenly spread to make a circle on the green grass, her hands lying supine, slightly curled, and empty on her lap, in a sweet humility, her waist rising very straight and small from the spread circle of the skirt, her back very straight but her neck gently inclining to one side. (*Warren*)

## WORD ORDER

### Exercise 1. Comment on the word order and explain the cases of inversion.

1. Martin Eden had been mastered by curiosity all his days. (*London*) 2. "What did the-master say exactly?" "Well, of course, I wasn't supposed to hear." (*Christie*) 3. Well, come on, shall I go, or shan't I? Half past three—it's quite a good time. (*Christie*) 4 "Is Mrs Oliver at home?" asked Rhoda. (*Christie*) 5. There was a curious expression on her face—a mingling of grim determination and of strange indecision. (*Christie*) 6. Yes, here he was, without Savina, on his way to total disillusion about the biggest research development of his time. (*Wilson*) 7. Suddenly the door opened and admitted the Baron. Followed a complete and deathlike silence. (*Mansfield*) 8. But never, never could he have anticipated that evening, some months after the birth of their child. (*Cronin*) 9. However, not for the world would he be different from the others. (*Cronin*) 10. Not often did he unbend to his servants, but as the butler tucked the rug round his knees he spoke to him. (*Cronin*) 11. This morning, however, he was scarcely in the mood for one of those long conversations which so often beguiled the tedious hours. Nor could he bring himself to glance at the lesson books. (*Cronin*), 12. Jose did not answer. Fretfully the Consul shifted his position. (*Cronin*) 13. So immersed was the little boy that he did not hear the car. (*Cronin*) 14. No sooner had they disappeared than Nicholas heard the sound of clattering footsteps. (*Cronin*) 15. Not for an instant did he believe that Nicholas spoke the truth. (*Cronin*) 16. On they went. Once Alvin let out a sharp exclamation. (*Cronin*) 17. He'd been one of those fair babies that everybody took for a girl. Silvery fair curls he had, blue eyes and a little freckle like a diamond on one side of his nose. (*Mansfield*) 18. Outside, waiting at the back entrance, was a tall, well-proportioned youth of 19 years old. (*Cronin*) 19. Up the staircase he went, falling down, picking himself up again, feeling no hurt. (*Cronin*) 20. Yet not for the world would he have revealed the strange inexplicable bitterness which rankled within his breast. (*Cronin*) 21. So positive was his belief that he would never see his son alive that the shock almost deprived him of his reason. (*Cronin*) 22. Tall and graceful she was, in a well-made dress of dark blue silk, almost the colour of her eyes. (*Prichard*) 23. Were I less attached to you, I might pretend to gloss it over. Had I a slighter regard for your intelligence, I should perhaps withhold from you. (*Cronin*) 24. In front of the candles as at an altar stood one of my presents to her, a pair of Chinese incense holders in the form of little bronze warriors, who held aloft as spears the glowing sticks of incense. (*Murdoch*) 25. So it's you that have disgraced the family, (*Voynich*) 26. At the sides of the house were bushes of lilac entirely hiding the farm buildings behind. (*Lawrence*) 27. A fresh wrong did these words inflict. (*Ch. Bronte*) 28. Marble was the hero of his life and his fate. Not until this very moment with his hands tenderly, lovingly on the marble had he come fully alive. (*Stone*) 29. Hardly had we been in our cell half an hour, when a convict sauntered down the gallery and looked in. (*London*) 30. He did not speak: nor did I. (*Maltz*) 31. Happy she never seemed, but quick, sharp, absorbed, full of imagination and changeability. (*Lawrence*) 32. At this period came the young Skrebensky. (*Lawrence*) 33. Only once did Michelangelo go to the master of the studio for help. (*Stone*) 34. Alany a tear did I shed at night. (*Ch. Bronte*) 35. His cap was a dainty thing, his close-buttoned blue cloth roundabout was new and natty, and so were his pantaloons. (*Twain*) 36. Little did my poor aunt imagine what a gush of devout thankfulness thrilled through me... (*Collins*) 37. "I hate to leave our fine house." "So do I." (*Hemingway*) 38. A snowy white silk blouse, falling well open, showed off her long neck. (*Murdoch*) 39. Directly in front of her window was a stone parapet... (*Murdoch*) 40. Never, indeed, would he forgive her that episode. (*Cronin*)

### Exercise 2. Translate into English.

1. Когда уходит поезд в Киев? 2. Разногласия у них были только по одному пункту. 3. Больше ни одного слова не сказала она по дороге домой. 4. Он всегда был очень терпелив с детьми. Один только раз он рассердился на них. 5. Не успели мы войти в комнату, как начался дождь. 6. Когда я подошла к опушке леса, я увидела

огромный зеленый луг. Никогда я не видела такого чудесного зрелища. 7. Как ни трудна была книга, мы читали ее с удовольствием. 8. Я так устала после экскурсии, что не могла идти в театр. Напрасно сестра пыталась уговорить меня, я не соглашалась. 9. Вот идет мой автобус. До свидания. 10. Такой интересный был спектакль, что мы жалели, когда он кончился. 11. Было бы у меня больше времени, я бы стала изучать итальянский язык. 12. Только когда она была уже в поезде, она вспомнила, что оставила зонтик дома.

**Exercise 3. Comment upon the position of the objects.**

1. Titus fetches Judith her things from the rack. (*Shaw*) 2. What did you say to him? (*Douglas*) 3. I hope, contrary to your prediction, that we may meet again: though I shall certainly not offer you my company in the forceable future, nor of course will I expect any answer to this communication. (*Murdoch*) 4. Beppe told him of some sculpture and then gave it to him. (*Stone*) 5. He tore a leaf from his pocket-book, wrote a few words and gave it to me. (*Ch. Bronte*) 6. She pitied the poor young gentleman for having no one to look after him. (*Mansfield*) 7. The other candle I gave to Mr. Bruff... (*Collins*) 8. She gave him her hand. (*Dickens*) 9. To them it was the most enduring material in the world. (*Stone*) 10. Blanche, I can smell the sea air. The rest of my time I'm going to spend on the sea. (*Murdoch*) 11. He bought with his wife's money, a fairly large house in the new redbrick part of Beldover. (*Lawrence*) 12. A word about Palmer is necessary; and this I find difficult. (*Murdoch*) 13. With the wet weather Lorenzo had forbidden Contessina to leave the palace. To Michelangelo she did not seem frail. (*Stone*) 14. For me, the watches of that long night passed in ghastly wakefulness. (*Ch. Bronte*) 15. Curious joy she had of her lectures. (*Lawrence*) 16. Helen she held a little longer than me. (*Ch. Bronte*) 17. With one hand Bodkin preferred the picture to the foreign market, with the other he formed a list of private British collectors. (*Galsworthy*) 18. To him perpetual thought of death was a sin. (*Priestley*) 19. Of Mrs. Bretton I had long lost sight. (*Ch. Bronte*) 20. To kicks and curses, to hurry and dislike, it closed a hard stone veil around its soft inner nature. (*Stone*) 21. Why he had selected that as an excuse, he had no idea. (*Caldwell*)

**Exercise 4. Comment upon the position and the order of the attributes and say where it can be changed.**

1. In the rich brown atmosphere peculiar to back rooms in the mansion of a Forsyte the Rembrandtesque effect... was spoiled by the moustache-. (*Galsworthy*) 2. In front of her on a low mosaic table was the tray of drinks and three glasses. (*Murdoch*) 3. We simply couldn't conduct our business, my dear young man, without scrupulous honesty in everybody. (*Galsworthy*) 4. When her cry was over Dulcie got up and took off her best dress, and put on her old blue kimono. (*O. Henry*) 5. On the third finger, set in a gold ring, was the great white sapphire. (*Murdoch*) 6. Henry Ogden wore finger-rings and a big gold watch and careful neckties. (*O. Henry*) 7. He looked in at a place on the way. "H'ml in perfect order of the eighties, with a sort of yellow oilskin paper on the walls." (*Galsworthy*) 8. Ting-a-ling gave it a slight lick with his curly blackish tongue. (*Galsworthy*) 9. Now and then Liz hummed bars of foolish little songs. (*O. Henry*) 10. Sensitive, imaginative, affectionate boys get a bad time at school... (*Galsworthy*) 11. A little unsteadily but with watchful and brilliant eyes Liz walked up the avenue. (*O. Henry*) 12. Her mother was speaking in her low, pleasing, slightly metallic voice —one word she caught: „Demain". (*Galsworthy*) 13. He put his packet of easy vegetables very deliberately on the new violet tablecloth, removed his hat carefully, and dabbled his brow, and wiped out his hat brim with an abundant crimson and yellow pocket handkerchief. (*Wells*) 14. Then there was a moment of absolute silence. (*Douglas*) 15. Antonia stood on the thick black rug by the fire. (*Murdoch*)

**Exercise 6. Arrange the attributes in their proper order.**

1. Alongside, in the... water, weeds, like yellow snakes were writhing and nosing with the \_\_ current, (green, deep) (*Galsworthy*) 2. The marqueterie cabinet was lined with \_\_ plush, full of family relics, (red, dim) (*Galsworthy*) 3. In \_\_ slippers and an — coat Keith

Darrant sits asleep, (red, Turkish; old, velvet, brown) (*Galsworthy*) 4. He, alone, perhaps, of painters would have done justice to Annette in her \_\_ dress, (lacy, black) (*Galsworthy*) 5. Ting-a-ling did not stir. "You take me for a \_\_ dog, sir!" his silence seemed to say. (English, common) (*Galsworthy*) 6. This letter, with a \_\_ border and seal, was accordingly dispatched by Sir Pitt Crawley to his brother the Colonel in London, (huge, black) (*Thackeray*) 7. Behrman in his \_\_ shirt, took his seat as the hermit miner on an upturned kettle for a rock, (blue, old) (*O. Henry*) 8. The next day came the \_\_ bull, drawing the cart to the office door, (red, little) (*O. Henry*) 9. He was naked and painted blue and yellow in stripes a \_\_ chap, (jolly, little) (*Galsworthy*) 10. "You and I," the little dog seemed saying with his \_\_ stare "object." (little, Chinese) (*Galsworthy*)

**Exercise 6, Comment upon the position of the adverbials. Say whether they can be placed differently.**

1. She turned away and pulled off her overcoat with a sudden gesture and went to the side table where the drinks and the glasses stood. (*Murdoch*) 2. She flattered me and lavishly displayed for my pleasure all her charms and accomplishments. (*Eliot*) 3. I want to get away from home for a time for a certain reason. (*Dreiser*) 4. How long do you remain in town? (*Wilde*) 5. Once inside the prison yard, Zanders turned to the left into a small office. (*Dreiser*) 6. In the driving-seat, with his head fallen sideways so that he was almost toppling out on to the road, was Calvin Blick, (*Murdoch*) 7. He looked at her more than once, not stealthily or humbly, but with a movement of hardy, open observation. (*Ch. Bronte*) 8. Aileen blazed at once to a furious heat. (*Dreiser*) 9. She [Savina] had just arrived home. (*Wilson*) 10. Wearily he dropped off his horse, made his way to his workshop, saddlebag over his shoulder. (*Stone*) 11. Stanley, not once did you pull any wool over this boy's eyes. (*Murdoch*) 12. His face for the moment was flushed and swollen with anger. (*Dreiser*) 13. Only sometimes in dreams did I experience certain horrors, glimpses of a punishment which would perhaps yet find its hour. (*Murdoch*) 14. Every afternoon he discovered afresh that life was beastly. (*Wells*) 15. Then the heart of Polly leapt, and the world blazed up to wonder and splendour. (*Wells*) 16. And for all his attempts at self-reproach and self-discipline he felt at bottom guiltless. (*Wells*) 17. Johnson was off duty that morning, and devoted the time very generously to the admonitory discussion of Mr. Polly's worldly outlook. (*Wells*) 18. Never had she experienced such a profound satisfaction of anger and hatred. (*Murdoch*) 19. To know a man we must know his guts and blood. Never have I seen the inside of a man, (*Stone*)

**Exercise 7. Put the verb in the proper place.**

1. I could not eat anything nor I rest because of a dreadful aching and tingling in the limbs, (could) (*Murdoch*) 2. Blanche! How very right you. (are) (*Tennessee Williams*) 3. Very wonderful she, as she bade farewell, her ugly wide mouth smiling with pride and recognition... (was) (*Lawrence*) 4. Three years later the startling news that he had married a young English girl of good family, (came) (*Lawrence*) 5. At last, however, no longer there anything about the suicide appearing in the newspapers, (was) (*Calkwell*) 6. Outside the window and curtained away the end of the cold raw misty London afternoon now turned to an evening which still contained in a kind of faintly luminous haze what had never even at midday, really been daylight, (was) (*Murdoch*) 7. In the hotel where the young men took lunch two girls, (were) (*Lawrence*) 8. He lit a cigarette and lingered at the carriage door. On his face a happy smile, (was) (*Maugham*) 9. Somewhere hidden and secret (yet near by) a bird three notes, (sang) (*Falkner*) 10. By the factory walls the grimy weeds, (grew) (*Priestley*) 11. He did not write letters to his family, nor he letters from home, (receive) (*Stone*)

**Exercise 8. Translate into English.**

1. Пушкин — основатель новой русской литературы, создатель русского литературного языка. 2. Еще в лицейские годы проявился поэтический талант Пушкина. 3. Быстро развивался поэтический гений Пушкина. 4. Сильно взволновало Пушкина греческое восстание 1821 г. С одним из главных руководителей его,

Александром Испиланти, он встречался в Кишиневе. 5. Пушкин глубоко сочувствовал идеям декабристов, б. В поэзии Пушкина 20-х годов объединились две линии русского романтизма — политическая (декабристы) и психологическая (Жуковский). 7. Неудача восстания декабристов вызвала чувство разочарования и сомнения у передовых людей того времени. Глубоко и остро пережил эти чувства и Пушкин. 8. Историческое место Пушкина в развитии освободительных идей после гибели декабристов верно определил Герцен, ближайший продолжатель дела декабристов. 9. Некоторых современных литераторов Пушкин осуждал за подражание иностранным писателям. 10. Борьбу Пушкина с реакционной журналистикой 30-х годов, в частности с Булгариным, продолжил Белинский. 11. Глубокий интерес проявлял Пушкин к жизни и культуре близких России славянских народов. 12. В «Кавказском пленнике» одну из своих задач Пушкин видел в изображении местных нравов и природы Кавказа. 13. Высшей целью своей поэзии Пушкин считал служение России и защиту передовых идей своего времени. 14 Как и «Евгений Онегин», «Горе от ума» было первым образцом поэтического изображения русской действительности. 15. После смерти Пушкина горе и негодование России выразил Лермонтов своим стихотворением «Смерть поэта». 16. Огромным было влияние Пушкина на творческую жизнь народов нашей страны. 17. Велико влияние Пушкина и на другие области русской культуры. 18. Всем известна огромная любовь к Пушкину А. М. Горького. 19. Высоко ценил Пушкина А. М. Горький.

### **Exercise 9. Translate into English.**

«Я желал бы всеми силами души, чтобы музыка моя распространялась, чтобы увеличилось число людей, любящих ее, находящих в ней утешение и подпору», — писал гениальный русский композитор Петр Ильич Чайковский.

Город Клин. Небольшой двухэтажный дом с мезонином под сенью цветущих лип. Здесь провел последние годы жизни Петр Ильич Чайковский. Здесь создал он свою неповторимую, прозвучавшую на весь мир Шестую симфонию.

И расчищенные аллеи небольшого парка, и возрожденное заботливыми руками советских людей здание, разрушенное во время войны фашистскими варварами, — все говорило о том, с каким большим уважением, с какой любовью относится наш народ к великому культурному наследию прошлого.

Тысячи восторженных записей рабочих, колхозников, ученых, военных, артистов, студентов, тысячи взволнованных и благодарных слов, воздающих дань замечательному композитору, автору великих симфоний и любимых народом опер, находим мы в книгах отзывов посетителей Дома-музея П. И. Чайковского.

Но не только в этом дань любви великому композитору. Память о нем увековечена живыми делами. Часто тишину музея нарушают звонкие детские голоса. Это приходят сюда маленькие музыканты — питомцы клинской музыкальной школы, носящей имя Чайковского.

В этой школе создалась трогательная, полная глубокого значения традиция: каждую весну, по окончании учебного года, маленькие музыканты собираются в Доме-музее П. И. Чайковского. В священных стенах небольшого дома они, юные наследники великого композитора, показывают свои успехи на трудном пути к музыкальному мастерству. И вот в строгой тишине музея раздаются глубокие, бархатные звуки виолончели, проникновенные звуки скрипки. Играет ученица по классу скрипки Нина Ковалева. Ей еще не удержать инструмента полного размера, ее скрипка — недомерок, но из-под смычка ее льются звуки неаполитанской песенки Чайковского.

## THE COMPOUND AND THE COMPLEX SENTENCE

**Exercise 1. Point out the coordinate clauses (mark the elliptical ones) and comment on the way they are joined.**

1. It was high summer, and the hay harvest was almost over. (*Lawrence*) 2. All the rooms were brightly lighted, but there seemed to be complete silence in the house. (*Murdoch*) 3. One small group was playing cards, another sat about a table and drank, or, tiring of that, adjourned to a large room to dance to the music of the victrola or player-piano, (*Dreiser*) 4. His eyes were bloodshot and heavy, his face a deadly white, and his body bent as if with age. (*Dickens*) 5. He only smiled, however, and there was comfort in his hearty rejoinder, for there seemed to be a whole sensible world behind it. (*Priestley*) 6. You'll either sail this boat correctly or you'll never go out with me again. (*Dreiser*) 7. Time passed, and she came to no conclusion, nor did any opportunities come her way for making a closer study of Mischa. (*Murdoch*) 8. She often enjoyed Annette's company, yet the child made her nervous. (*Murdoch*) 9. She ran through another set of rooms, breathless, her feet scarcely touching the surface of the soft carpets; then a final doorway suddenly and unexpectedly let her out into the street. (*Murdoch*) 10. It was early afternoon, but very dark outside, and the lamps had already been turned on. (*Murdoch*) 11. A large number of expensive Christmas cards were arrayed on the piano; while upon the walls dark evergreens, tied into various clever swags of red and silver ribbon, further proclaimed the season. (*Murdoch*) 12. Brangwen never smoked cigarettes, yet he took the one offered, fumbling painfully with thick fingers, blushing to the roots of his hair. (*Lawrence*)

**Exercise 2. Define the kinds of subordinate clauses (subject, object and predicative clauses). Translate into Russian.**

1. Miss Casement stopped what she was doing and stared at Rainsborough. (*Murdoch*) 2. What you saw tonight was an ending. (*Murdoch*) 3. About what was to come she reflected not at all. (*Murdoch*) 4. It's odd how it hurts at these times not to be part of your proper family. (*Murdoch*) 5. The trouble with you, Martin, is that you are always looking for a master. (*Murdoch*) 6. Suddenly realizing what had happened, she sprang to her feet. (*Caldwell*) 7. "It looks as though spring will never come," she remarked. (*Caldwell*) 8. I want you to sit here beside me and listen to what I have to say. (*Caldwell*) 9. Who and what he was, Martin never learned. (*London*) 10. That I am hungry and you are aware of it are only ordinary phenomena, and there's no disgrace. (*London*) 11. What he would do next he did not know. (*London*) 12. It was only then that I realized that she was travelling too. (*Murdoch*) 13. What I want is to be paid for what I do. (*London*) 14. I cannot help thinking there is something wrong about that closet. (*Dickens*) 15. And what is puzzling me is why they want me now. (*London*) 16. That was what I came to find out. (*London*) 17. What I want to know is When you're going to get married. (*London*) 18. Her fear was lest they should stay for tea. (*Ch. Bronte*) 19. That they were justified in this she could not but admit. (*London*) 20. What was certain was that I could not now sleep again. (*Murdoch*) 21. What vast wound that catastrophe had perhaps made in Georgie's proud and upright spirit I did not know. (*Murdoch*) 22. After several weeks what he had been waiting for happened. (*London*) 23. And let me say to you in the profoundest and most faithful seriousness that what you saw tonight will have no sequel. (*Murdoch*) 24. I understand all that, but what I want to know is whether or not you have lost faith in me? (*London*) 25. He could recall with startling clarity what previously had been dim and evasive recollections of childhood incidents, early schooling and young manhood. (*Caldwell*) 26. It's been my experience that as a rule the personality of a human being presents as much of a complexity as the medical history of a chronic invalid. (*Caldwell*) 27. He [Cowperwood] had taken no part in the war, and he felt sure that he could only rejoice in its conclusion — not as a patriot, but as a financier. (*Dreiser*) 28. He felt as if the ocean separated him from his past care, and welcomed the new era of life which was dawning for him. (*Thackeray*) 29. It was noticeable to all that even his usual sullen smile had disappeared. (*Caldwell*) 30. That I had no business with two women

on my hands already, to go falling in love with a third troubled me comparatively little. (*Murdoch*) 31. I only write down what seems to me to be the truth. (*Murdoch*) 32. Believe me, believe us, it is what is best for you. (*Murdoch*) 33. Pleasantly excited by what she was doing, she momentarily expected somebody to stop her and remind her that she had forgotten to buy the evening paper and had failed to take the bus home at the usual time. (*Caldwell*) 34. I dislike what you call his trade. (*Murdoch*)

**Exercise 3. Define the kinds of attributive clauses. Translate into Russian.**

1. "Everybody who makes the kind of blunder I did should apologize," he remarked with a pronounced nodding of his head. (*Caldwell*) 2. Rachel had become aware of the fact that she was talking loudly. (*Swinnerton*) 3. He took after his blond father, who had been a painter. Rosa took after her dark-haired mother, who had been a Fabian. (*Murdoch*) 4. What we are interested in, as author and reader, is the fact that publishing in England is now an integral part of big business. (*Fox*) 5. The first thing Martin did next morning was to go counter both to Brissenden's advice and command. (*London*) 6. The invalid, whose strength was now sufficiently restored, threw off his coat, and rushed towards the sea, with the intention of plunging in, and dragging the drowning man ashore. (*Dickens*) 7. He was suddenly reminded of the crumpled money he had snatched from the table and burned in the sink. (*Caldwell*) 8. Georgie, who is now twenty-six, had been an undergraduate at Cambridge, where she had taken a degree in economics. (*Murdoch*) 9. He would speak for hours about them to Harry Esmond; and, indeed, he could have chosen few subjects more likely to interest the unhappy young man, whose heart was now as always devoted to these ladies; and who was thankful to all who loved them, or praised them, or wished them well. (*Thackeray*) 10. I hardly know why I came to the conclusion that you don't consider it an altogether fortunate attachment. (*Pinero*) 11. He walked to the window and stood there looking at the winter night that had finally come upon them. (*Caldwell*) 12. What terrified her most was that she found deep in her heart a strong wish that Mischa might indeed want to reopen negotiations. (*Murdoch*) 13. Directly in front of her window was a wide terrace with a stone parapet which swept round to what she took to be the front of the house, which faced the sea more squarely. (*Murdoch*) 14. He spent half the week in Cambridge, where he lodged with his sister and lent his ear to neurotic undergraduates, and the other half in London, where he seemed to have a formidable number of well-known patients. (*Murdoch*) 15. I went upstairs to lie down and fell into the most profound and peaceful sleep that I had experienced for a long time. (*Murdoch*) 16. "Palmer Anderson," said Georgie, naming Antonia's psychoanalyst, who was also a close friend of Antonia and myself. (*Murdoch*) 17. She looked to him much the same child as he had met six years ago... (*Murdoch*) 18. Rosa had the feeling that she was both recognized and expected. (*Murdoch*) 19. Maybe the reason you don't want to go to a specialist is because you don't want to change—you want to stay as you are. (*Caldwell*) 20. Gretta regarded him with a look on her face that was unrevealing of her thoughts. (*Caldwell*) 21. Such light as there was from the little lamp fell now on his face, which looked horrible — for it was all covered with blood. (*Priestley*) 22. Three days after Gretta and Glenn Kenworthy's Saturday night party, which was still being talked about among those who had been present, Royd Fillmore presented a formal resignation to the governing board of Medical Square Clinic. (*Caldwell*)

**Exercise 4. Define the kinds of attributive clauses and punctuate accordingly.**

1. That is all I can tell you. (*London*) 2. He was under the impression that an attempt was going to be made to convict him. (*Dreiser*) 3. Whenever she came which was often she came quite noisily. (*Dreiser*) 4. The things her father said seemed meaningless and neutral. (*Lawrence*) 5. Then she came to New York where she remained two years. (*Lreiser*) 6. I opened Palmer's close-fitting hall door which is always unlocked and ushered Dr. Klein inside. (*Murdoch*) 7. What happened was the last thing that any of them expected to happen. (*Priestley*) 8. I shook out my scarf which was damp and soggy. (*Murdoch*) 9. She had no idea where she was going. (*Murdoch*) 10. There were times when I wanted to stop the car and tell

him to get out. (*Maltz*) 11. His hair which was short sleek and black was just visible beneath the capacious brim of a low-crowned brown hat. (*Dickens*) 12. But he could see now no reason why he should not smoke. (*London*) 13. The bar was crowded with men which she had expected it to be and at first she was not able to find a place to sit down. (*Caldwell*)

**Exercise 5. Insert who, whom, that, which, as.**

1. One oil lamp was lit in the bow, and the girl \_\_\_ Mr. Tench had spotted from the bank began to sing gently \_\_\_ a melancholy, sentimental and contended song about a rose — had been stained with true love's blood. (*Greene*) 2. None of us \_\_\_ were there will ever forget that day. (*Greene*) 3. I don't believe all \_\_\_ they write in these books. (*Greene*) 4. The great protective cover under \_\_\_ the Germans had operated was torn from them. (*Heym*) 5. I call her probably the very worst woman \_\_\_ ever lived in the world... (*Dickens*) 6. I saved such of the equipment \_\_\_ could not be replaced, and I saved the personnel... (*Heym*) 7. Pettinger was pleased that Prince Yasha, \_\_\_ was a cool observer and a military man... estimated the situation exactly as he, himself, did. (*Heym*) 8. There was a feeling in the air and a look on faces \_\_\_ he did not like. (*Galsworthy*) 9. All \_\_\_ I can remember is that you gave a beautiful performance. (*Thornton*)

**Exercise 6. Define the nature of adverbial clauses. Translate into Russian.**

1. He too had moved and was now standing where she had been a moment before. (*Priestley*) 2. Once they reached the open country the car leapt forward like a mad thing. (*Murdoch*) 3. Alban's eyes glittered as he looked at the buses and policemen trying to direct the confusion. (*Maugham*) 4. He watched until the final wisp of smoke had disappeared. (*Caldwell*) 5. Even after Glenn had nodded urgently to her, she continued to look as if she did not know whether to run away from him or to walk back down the corridor to where he stood. (*Caldwell*) 6. And he followed her out of the door, whatever his feelings might be. (*Lawrence*) 7. I came away the first moment I could. (*Galsworthy*) 8. If anything particular occurs, you can write to me at the post-office, Ipswich. (*Dickens*) 9. A cat with a mouse between her paws who feigns boredom is ready to jump the second the mouse makes a dash for freedom. (*Caldwell*) 10. Gladys leaned forward and then turned her head so that she could look Penderel almost squarely in the face. (*Priestley*) 11. I could work faster if your irons were only hotter. (*London*) 12. The aftermath of the cub reporter's deed was even wider than Martin had anticipated. (*London*) 13. But these two people, insufferable though they might be in other circumstances, were not unwelcomed. (*Priestley*) 14. Brissenden lay sick in his hotel, too feeble to stir out, and though Martin was with him often, he did not worry him with his troubles., (*London*) 15. Had the great man said but a word of kindness to the small one, no doubt Esmond would have fought for him with pen and sword to the utmost of his might. (*Thackeray*) 16. When Rainsborough received this news he was made so miserable by it that he was not sure that he could survive. (*Murdoch*) 17. However friendly she might seem one day, the next she would have lapsed to her original disregard of him, cold, detached, at her distance. (*Lawrence*) 18. Howard puffed his cigarette thoughtfully before speaking, as if he was still uncertain about what he should say. (*Caldwell*) 19. How she would reach the villa, and what she would find there when she arrived, she had not even dared to imagine. (*Lawrence*) 20. I paused while she took off her coat... (*Murdoch*) 21. I don't know what would have concluded the scene, had there not been one person at hand rather more rational than myself, and more benevolent than my entertainer. (*Lawrence*) 22. And you will find that it is scarcely less of a shock for you because you saw what you expected to see. (*Murdoch*) 23. When he left the car, he strode along the sidewalk as a wrathful man will stride, and he rang the Morse bell with such viciousness that it roused him to consciousness of his condition, so that he entered in good nature, smiling with amusement at himself. (*London*) 24. Wherever they were together or separate, he appeared to be travelling in one intellectual direction or along one mental groove, and she another. (*Dreiser*) 25. As I had no taste for this particular discussion, and also wanted to get off the subject of my dear brother, I said, "What will you be doing on Christmas Day?" (*Murdoch*)



26. "In that case," said Palmer, "since we are going away for good, I doubt if we shall meet again." (*Murdoch*) 27. Dazed as he was, he realized that there was just a chance of escape. (*Priestley*) 28. No matter how brilliant a physician is, a thing like that will ruin his career. (*Caldwell*) 29. She could hardly hear his voice, so deafening and continuous was the clatter of the waves upon the stones. (*Murdoch*) 30. At least *it* was good to be on one's legs again, and though the night was hideous, the situation seemed less precarious than it did when one was sitting in there, playing fantastic tricks with mechanisms. (*Priestley*) 31. It means to make the plane a part of you, just as if it were strapped behind you the minute it became airborne. (*Moyt*)

**Exercise 7. Define the kinds of clauses introduced by that. Translate into Russian.**

1. His smile was so easy, so friendly, that Laura recovered. (*Mansfield*) 2. It was just luck that he didn't catch the boat. (*Greene*) 3. It infuriated him to think that there were still people in the state who believed in a loving and merciful God. (*Greene*) 4. The impression he gathered was that he would be able to make his own terms. (*Galsworthy*) 5. In the front hall, under a large picture of fat, cheery old monks fishing by the riverside, there was a thick, dark horse-whip, that had belonged to Mr. Spears' father. (*Mansfield*) 6. At first she used to read to me, but it was such a dismal performance that I could not bear to hear her. (*Harraden*) 7. I remember the landscape was buried deep in snow, and that we had very little fuel. (*Aldington*) 8. In fact, Mrs. Spears' callers made the remark that you never would have known that there was a child in the house. (*Mansfield*) 9. I believe that all we claim is that we try to say what appears to be the truth, and that we are not afraid either to contradict ourselves or to retract an error. (*Aldington*) 10. The box that the fur came out of was on the bed. (*Mansfield*) 11. "I sit alone that I may eat more," said the Baron, peering into the dusk... (*Mansfield*)

**Exercise 8. Define the kinds of clauses introduced by as. Translate into Russian.**

1. Harmless as this speech appeared to be, it acted on the travellers' distrust, like oil on fire. (*Dickens*) 2. Even as she talked she was here and there about the room, commenting on this, that, and other episodes with which both she and Miss Redmond seemed familiar. (*Dreiser*) 3. I was in real distress, as I can tell you. (*Dreiser*) 4. He kissed her quickly and ran towards the wicket as fast as he could. (*Maugham*) 5. Then she looked very carefully around, nodding her head as she did so, seeming to count the objects. (*Murdoch*) 6. He was, as I saw him now, too fanciful and too erratic. (*Dreiser*) 7. His wife, as I have said, was small, talkative, cricketlike, and bounced here and there in a jumpy way. (*Dreiser*) 8. Such trees as there were stood out ragged and lorn against a-wealth of sky, (*Dreiser*) 9. She and a certain Wally, the surgeon above mentioned, as she breathlessly explained, were out for a drive to some inn up the Hudson shore. (*Dreiser*) 10. As you may imagine, I am suffering from shock. (*Murdoch*) 11. As I didn't reply, she sighed and turned away to pull the curtains across the darkened windows. (*Murdoch*) 12. As you must know perfectly well, you could get your wife back if you wanted her even now. (*Murdoch*) 13. Sally gave him a smile. It was as sweet and innocent as it had ever been. (*Maugham*) 14. Another day, at tea-time, as he sat alone at table, there came a knock at the front door. (*Lawrence*) 15. "Do as I tell you," I said. (*Murdoch*) 16. In front of a big book-case, in a big chair, behind a big table, and before a big volume, sat Mr. Nupkins, looking a full size larger than any one of them, big as they were. (*Dickens*) 17. "This is grave news," she added, as we pushed our way to the exit. (*Murdoch*) 18. "How are you and Alexander?" "We're as well as can be expected," said Rosemary. (*Murdoch*) 19. And, young as you were — yes, and weak and alone — there was evil, I knew there was evil in keeping you. (*Thackeray*) 20. As I turned to look at her she seemed transfigured. (*Murdoch*) 21. He stretched himself on his bed as a dog stretches himself. (*Maugham*) 22. Yet could I, as things were, rely on Georgie to be cheerful and lucid? (*Murdoch*) 23. How trivial as this contact may seem to some, it was of the utmost significance to Clyde. (*Dreiser*) 24. I shall only try now to describe him as I saw him at the start, before I knew certain crucial facts about him. (*Murdoch*)

**Exercise 9. Define the kinds of clauses introduced by since and while. Translate into Russian.**

1. Ever since you appeared on the scene, you have, for reasons which remain obscure to me, behaved towards me with hostility, and in two instances you have deliberately done me harm. (*Murdoch*) 2. I wanted to see you, since you wanted to see me. (*Murdoch*) 3. The master had remarked that even if he got it (the piano] into the cart he should not know what to do with it on his arrival at Christminster, the city he was bound for, since he was only going into temporary lodgings just at first. (*Hardy*) 4. I wondered if Palmer and Antonia were indeed here, since we were much earlier than the time I had predicted. (*Murdoch*) 5. They complained that he was conceited; and, since he excelled only in matters which to them were unimportant, they asked satirically what he had to be conceited about. (*Maugham*) 6. Zillah is constantly gadding off to Gimmerton since papa went. (*E. Bronte*) 7. They went into the grill-room for dinner, since none of them were dressed. (*Cronin*) 8. Then she lifted her hair on to the top of her head and balanced it there like a bundle while she tied it securely about with a handkerchief. (*Murdoch*) 9. I felt in no mood for confronting Rosemary. She had never quite got on with Antonia and would on the one hand be delighted at what had happened, while on the other she would maintain a conventional air of distress. (*Murdoch*) 10. Women with perambulators were parading in the green walks, and down long vistas of trees children bowled hoops while dogs ran barking behind them. (*Murdoch*) 11. While he was speaking, Joseph returned bearing a basin of milk-porridge, and placed it before Linton. (*E. Bronte*) 12. There was no zest in the thought of departure, while the act of departure appalled him as a weariness of the flesh. (*London*) 13. While he elbowed his way on, his eyes which he usually kept fixed on the ground before his feet, were attached upwards by the dome of St. Paul's. (*Galsworthy*) 14. He had a glass eye, which remained stationary while the other eye looked at Reinhardt. (*Heym*) 15. I had not communicated with Georgie since the day of the revelation, and since the thing was not yet common knowledge, she was still presumably ignorant of the change in my situation. (*Murdoch*) 16. While he was standing there, a telegram was brought him. (*Galsworthy*) 17. There was a moment's pause while he introduced her, and then they were off. (*Dreiser*) 18. While they were happy for the first year or so... afterwards there had begun to appear difficulties in connection with her work... (*Dreiser*)

**Exercise 10. Point out parenthetical clauses. Translate into Russian.**

1. You never liked her, she says, and you have made him feel that she isn't worthy of him. (*Dreiser*) 2. Already he was doing big things, so he thought, in surgery, and the older men in his line were regarding him with a rather uneasy eye. (*Dreiser*). 3. On one of these occasions, so Marie Redmond said, she came to her and announced that she was living in a basement room in one of the poorer sections of the city. (*Dreiser*) 4. As I say, I was fortunate to get her. (*Murdoch*) 5. Your story, you know, showed such breadth, and vigor, such maturity and depth of thought. (*London*) 6. Her conduct, it was clear, was little satisfactory to her mother, who scarcely mentioned her, or else the kind lady thought it was best to say nothing, and leave time to work out its cure. (*Thackeray*) 7. Thomas Esmond — captain Thomas, as he was called — became engaged in a gaming-house brawl, of which the consequence was a duel, and a wound so severe that he never — his surgeon said — could outlive it. (*Thackeray*) 8. Truly, I thought, here is one who is startlingly beautiful. (*Dreiser*) 9. The effect produced by both Lady Castlewood's children when they appeared in public was extraordinary, and the whole town speedily rang with their fame: such a beautiful couple, it was declared, never had been seen... (*Thackeray*) 10. She suggested that she would come over and pack up my Minton dinner service and one or two other things which she said must on no account be trusted to the removal men. (*Murdoch*) 11. My breathing, even my heartbeat must, I felt already, be audible through the house like the panting of an engine. (*Murdoch*) 12. Two electric fires were burning in the room, but Antonia had insisted on lighting a coal fire, to cheer me up, as she put it. (*Murdoch*)

### Exercise 11. Analyse the following sentences. Translate into Russian.

1. All I say is that only lies and evil come from letting people off. (*Murdoch*) 2. The only thing which could be said against Miss Casement's report was that, if carried into effect, it would damage a great many existing interests. (*Murdoch*) 3. Directly I began to cross the common I realized I had the wrong umbrella, for it sprang a leak and the rain ran down under my macintosh collar, and then it was I saw Henry. (*Greene*) 4. Bigiardini, who had been allotted the window and door frames, summoned Michelangelo to his side, flicking his fingers for him to sprinkle some water, then stepped back in admiration from the tiny window he had just painted above Elisabeth's head. (*Stone*) 5. I had left them early, declining a pressing invitation to dinner, and then had stayed up half the night drinking whisky, and I still felt, as I prepared to leave the office, rather sick and giddy. (*Murdoch*) 6. All three incidents had resulted from the fact, of which he himself was well aware but which he was unable to overcome, that he was unstable and unreliable and a misfit in his profession. (*Caldwell*) 7. But July arriving and his plan still indefinite, the first thing that occurred to him was that they might go off to some inexpensive resort somewhere. (*Dreiser*) 8. When they met in the corridors and wards there had not been any semblance of the easy banter they had become accustomed to engaging in whenever they met. (*Caldwell*) 9. And now Mason regretted that he had not telephoned before leaving Bridgeburg, for he could see that the news of his daughter's death would shock such a man as this most terribly. (*Dreiser*) 10. She was in awe of Peter Saward, both because of those rather austere features of his character which inspired awe in most of the people who knew him and also for an extra reason of her own, because he was a sick man. (*Murdoch*) 11. One day, however, very shortly after he had connected himself with the Green — Davidson, he had come in rather earlier than usual in the afternoon and found his mother bending over a letter which evidently had just arrived and which appeared to interest her greatly. (*Dreiser*) 12. And then, without turning or seeing Clyde across the street, she proceeded to another house a few doors away, which also carried a furnished rooms card and, after surveying the exterior interestedly, mounted the steps and rang the bell. (*Dreiser*) 13. Val was impressed; and happening to look at his mother's face, he got what was perhaps his first real insight that his feelings were not always what mattered most. (*Galsworthy*) 14. So often throughout his youth in different cities in which his parents had conducted a mission or spoken on the streets it had been obvious that people looked down upon him and his brother and sister for being the children of such parents. (*Dreiser*) 15. He was so irritated and depressed by the poverty and social angularity and crudeness of it — all spelling but one thing social misery, to him — that he at once retraced his steps and recrossing the Mohawk by a bridge farther west soon found himself in an area which was very different indeed. (*Dreiser*) 16. This visit had been planned to produce in Annette and her mother a due sense of his possessions, so that they should be ready to receive with respect any overture he might later be disposed to make. (*Galsworthy*) 17. On hearing from the hall porter at the Iseum that Mr. Dartie had not been in today, he looked at the trusty fellow and decided only to ask if Mr. George Forsyte was in the club. (*Galsworthy*) 18. When he was born, Winifred, in the heyday of spirits, and the craving for distinction, had determined that her children should have names such as no others had ever had. (*Galsworthy*) 19. Having acquired so high a position locally, he was able to marry the daughter of a local druggist of some means, and two children had been born to them. (*Dreiser*) 20. On the night in question, at about nine o'clock, as they were nearing the south shore of Big Bittern, they encountered a young man, whom they took to be a stranger making his way from the inn at Big Bittern. (*Dreiser*) 21. I attached little importance to Palmer's statement that what I had seen would be without a sequel. (*Murdoch*) 22. The only person who appears to have seen the young man is the captain of that little steam boat that runs from Three Mile Bay to Sharon. (*Dreiser*) 23. On seeing him, she stopped reading at once, and, flustered and apparently nervous, arose and put the letter away without commenting in any way upon what she had been reading.

(*Dreiser*) 24. Just as he neared the corner and was about to turn at high speed, a little girl of about nine, who was running toward the crossing, jumped directly in front of the moving machine. (*Dreiser*) 25. Hunter was twenty-seven and was what some people would have called a "pretty boy". (*Murdoch*) 26. So convinced was he that he had seen her that he went straight home, and, encountering his mother in the mission, announced that he had seen Esta. (*Dreiser*) 27. All she had to do after seeing him was to buy her ticket to Utica and get in one coach, and he would buy his separately and get in another. (*Dreiser*) 28. I could not conceive what was the matter with me and it was not until halfway through the third day that I found out. (*Murdoch*) 29. The chauffeur returning, she asked Clyde where he wished to go — an address which he gave reluctantly enough, since it was so different from the street in which she resided. (*Dreiser*) 30. That I could love such a person was a revelation and education to me and something of a triumph: it involved a rediscovery of myself. (*Murdoch*) 31. The day before he had heard Whiggam tell Liggett there was *to* be a meeting of department heads after closing hours in Smillie's office to day, and that he was to be there. (*Dreiser*) 32. After swallowing a cup of coffee at one of the small restaurants near the post-office and walking the length of Central Avenue toward the mill, and pausing at a cigar store to see if Roberta should by any chance come along alone, he was rewarded by the sight of her with Grace Marr again. (*Dreiser*) 33. Being very lonely, and Dillard not being present because he had to work, Clyde decided upon a trolley ride to Gloversville, which was a city of some twenty thousand inhabitants and reported to be as active, if not as beautiful, as Lycurgus. (*Dreiser*)

**Exercise 12. Analyse the following sentences. Translate into Russian.**

1. Already when, at the age of thirteen, fourteen and fifteen, he began looking in the papers, which, being too worldly, had never been admitted to his home, he found that mostly skilled help was wanted. (*Dreiser*) 2. He had a feeling in his heart that he was not as guilty as they all seemed to think. (*Dreiser*) 3. He thought at first that having seen him at the moment he had struck Roberta, they had now come to take him. (*Dreiser*) 4. Her voice sounded to her as if she had shouted, but the man to whom she had been speaking, evidently not hearing a word she had said, continued staring thoughtfully into his beer. (*Caldwell*) 5. He decided later that if she did not want him to know what she was doing, perhaps it was best that he should not. (*Dreiser*) 6. In view of this, Mrs. Griffiths, who was more practical than her husband at all times, and who was intensely interested in Clyde's economic welfare, as well as that of her other children, was actually wondering why Clyde should of a sudden become so enthusiastic about changing to this new situation, which, according to his own story, involved longer hours and not so very much more pay, if any. (*Dreiser*) 7. She had no idea how long she stood there in the gradually failing light, and the next thing she remembered doing was running to the telephone. (*Caldwell*) 8. However, as he began to see afterwards, time passed and he was left to work until, depressed by the routine and meager pay, he began to think of giving up this venture here and returning to Chicago or going to New York, where he was sure that he could connect himself with some hotel if need be. (*Dreiser*) 9. The table was in no way different from any other, and it was not more advantageously placed, but because the oldest residents sat there it was looked upon as the most desirable place to sit, and several elderly women were bitterly resentful because Miss Otkin, who went away for four or five months every summer, should be given a place there while they who spent the whole year in the sanatorium sat at other tables. (*Maugham*) 10. As soon as he finds a foe near, no matter what he is doing, a well-trained Cottontail keeps just as he is and stops all movement, for the creatures of the woods are of the same colour as the things in the woods and catch the eye only while moving. (*Seton Thompson*) 11. Then by some accident of association there occurred to him that scene when Emma had told him of his mother's death, and, though he could not speak for crying, he had insisted on going in to say good-bye to the Misses Watkin so that they might see his grief and pity him. (*Maugham*) 12. He was developing a sense of humour, and

found that he had a knack of saying bitter things, which caught people on the raw; he said them because they amused him, hardly realising how much they hurt, and was much offended when he found that his victims regarded him with active dislike. (*Maugham*) 13. When Winifred came down, and realised that he was not in the house, her first feeling was one of dull anger that he should thus elude the reproaches she had carefully prepared in those long wakeful hours. (*Galsworthy*) 14. Behind him the nurse did he knew not what, for his father made a tiny movement of repulsion as if resenting that interference; and almost at once his breathing eased away, became quiet; he lay very still. (*Galsworthy*) 15. The endless rhythmical noise covered Annette and held her for a while motionless and appalled. (*Murdoch*) 16. When they had passed through the Red Sea and found a sharp wind in the Canal, Anne had been surprised to see how much the men who had looked presentable enough in the white ducks in which she had been accustomed to see them, were changed when they left them off for warmer clothes. (*Maugham*) 17. It was not raining, but it had been and a street lamp some way off streaked the roadway with reflections. (*Murdoch*) 18. He knew her so well that she assumed he always knew when she was lying and so that made it all right. (*Murdoch*) 19. The brothers, in whom there was apparent, as soon as they had overcome their initial animal terror enough to display ordinary human characteristics, an exceptional degree of parsimony, were pleased with their junkfilled room, which they were able to rent for eight shillings a week, and whose bric-a-brack, once a senseless jumble, they soon set in order, giving to each decrepit object a proper use and significance. (*Murdoch*) 20. Soon, however, although the old woman never ceased to inspire in her a kind of awe which nearly amounted to terror, she fell into paying her no more attention, for practical purposes, than if she had been another quaint piece of furniture. (*Murdoch*) 21. But such criticisms as she found herself obscurely tending to make of Annette's deportment had never yet been formulated, and she had not troubled to ask herself whether they were just and reasonable or not perhaps the expression of a sort of envy of a younger and in some ways luckier woman such as Rosa knew herself to be well capable of feeling. (*Murdoch*) 22. If I lived here I should have to get to know what you do in a big forest, if you should be lost. (*Shute*) 23. Rainsborough was not aware that he had at any time suggested to Miss Casement that he was likely to make such proposals, though he might possibly have dropped some remark which could be so interpreted in the early days of his appointment. (*Murdoch*) 24. Although it happened to him so many times, Rainsborough could never resign himself to the idea that people should visit him simply in order to find out all that he knew about Mischa Fox. (*Murdoch*) 25. Mischa approached, and it seemed to the two who were watching a long time before he reached her. (*Murdoch*)

**Exercise 13. Insert it or there in the following sentences.**

1. \_\_\_ was too cold to sit down, but I paused every now and then to lean on the parapet... (*Murdoch*) 2. \_\_\_ was no mist here and a great vault of clear stars hung over the city with an intent luxurious brilliance. (*Murdoch*) 3. In what I could discern of the Square \_\_\_ seemed to be no one about. (*Murdoch*) 4. \_\_\_ took me several minutes to collect myself. (*Murdoch*) 5. \_\_\_ did not occur to me to reflect that there was anything illogical in this and indeed \_\_\_ was nothing illogical. (*Murdoch*) 6. He stood and watched her, sorry. But \_\_\_ could be no altering it. 7. I kept my face stern, but \_\_\_ was so much light within, \_\_\_ must have showed a little. (*Murdoch*) 8. \_\_\_ was still nearly an hour to wait before their plane was due to leave... (*Murdoch*) 9. \_\_\_ was a little Hurry as Georgie dropped her handbag and Honor picked it up for her. (*Murdoch*) 10. \_\_\_ then occurred to me that just this was precisely what I might be able to manage. (*Murdoch*) 11. Between Brangwen and Skrebensky \_\_\_ was an unbridgeable silence. Sometimes the two men made a slight conversation, but \_\_\_ was no interchange. (*Lawrence*) 12. A terrible energy pervaded Antonia at this time and \_\_\_ tired me extremely to be with her. (*Murdoch*) 13. I say this in case you should after last night's exhibition, feel any apprehension of possible violence to your brother. I assure you sincerely that \_\_\_ : is no such possibility. \_\_\_, only remains for me to apologize to you very

humbly... (*Murdoch*)

**Exercise 14. Translate the following sentences into English and point out the difference in the way subordinate clauses are introduced in Russian and in English.**

1. Князь Багратион... сказал «хорошо» с таким выражением, как будто все то, что происходило и что ему сообщали, было именно то, что он уже предвидел. (Л. Толстой) 2. В начале действий он знал только то, что по всему его полку стали летать ядра и гранаты... (Л. Толстой) 3. Но одна мысль о том, что он боится, снова подняла его. (Л. Толстой) 4. На слова Жерков некоторые улыбнулись, как и всегда ожидая от него шутки; но, заметив, что то, что он говорил, клонилось тоже к славе нашего оружия и нынешнего дня, приняли серьезное выражение, хотя многие очень хорошо знали, что то, что говорил Жерков, была ложь, ни на чем не основанная. (Л. Толстой) 5. «И что за глупость все то, что я рассказываю, как будто это меня интересует, — думал дипломат, взглядывая на счастливые лица любовников, — вот это счастье!» (Л. Толстой) 6. «Не для тебя это счастье, — говорил ему какой-то внутренний голос. — Это счастье для тех, у кого нет того, что есть у тебя». (Л. Толстой) 7. «Ах, Наташа!» — сказала Соня восторженно и серьезно, не глядя на свою подругу, как будто она считала ее недостойною слышать то, что она намерена была сказать... (Л. Толстой) 8. Она чувствовала, что то, что говорила Соня, была правда... (Л. Толстой) 9. «Но что забавнее всего, — сказал он, вдруг добродушно засмеявшись, — это то, что никак не могли придумать, как ему адресовать ответ?» (Л. Толстой) 10. Несколько минут после того, как проехал государь, дивизион павлоградцев потребовали вперед. (Л. Толстой) 11. Возвращаясь домой, князь Андрей не мог удержаться, чтобы не спросить молчаливо сидевшего подле него Кутузова о том, что он думает о завтрашнем сражении? (Л. Толстой) 12. «На горе пикет, ваше сиятельство, все там же, где был с вечера», — доложил Ростов... (Л. Толстой)

## SEQUENCE OF TENSES

**Exercise I. Use the appropriate form of the verb.**

1. Cowperwood realized... that he \_\_\_ making a very remarkable confession, (is, was) (*Dreiser*) 2. She scarcely realized what \_\_\_ happening, (is, was) (*Dreiser*) 3. Then all at once he remembered what the program \_\_\_ be. (will, would) (*Warren*) 4. Little Hans was very much distressed at times, as he was afraid his flowers \_\_\_ think he — forgotten them, (will, would; has, had) (*Wilde*) 5. Rosa told herself that this \_\_\_ the day that \_\_\_ decide her fate, (is, was, will, would) (*Murdoch*) 6. She realised that he \_\_\_ trying to convey to her that he \_\_\_ lonely, (is, was; is, was) (*Dreiser*) 7. Mrs. Sohlberg felt that this \_\_\_ going to be a wonderful evening, (is, was) (*Dreiser*) 8. He felt sure he \_\_\_ sleep now. (shall, should) (*Eliot*) 9. He thought how beautiful and serene their life \_\_\_ be. (will, would) (*Warren*) 10. I was thinking that it \_\_\_ be interesting to start a little gas company in one of these outlying villages that \_\_\_ growing so fast, and see if we \_\_\_ not make some money out of it. (may, might; are, were; can, could) (*Dreiser*) 11. Each fresh noise crept through her senses like an enemy who \_\_\_ found a gap in the walls of a beleaguered city, (has, had) (*Bennett*) 12. Lunch came just as they were off Sheerness. He didn't feel so hungry as he thought he \_\_\_ be. (shall, should) (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 13. He knew that in a week or two, at most a month, the actual campaign \_\_\_ begin, (will, would) (*Mailer*) 14. When I found Mr. Bennett \_\_\_ left his house, I thought I \_\_\_ find him here. Of course, he had told me that he \_\_\_ consult you. (has, had; shall, should; will, would) (*Qonan Doyle*) 15. Brother Sumpter asked Jack Harrick how he \_\_\_ to day. (is, was) (*Warren*) 16. We got to Waterloo at eleven and asked where the elevenfive \_\_\_ from. The porter who took our things thought it \_\_\_ go from number two platform, while another porter \_\_\_ heard a rumour that it \_\_\_ go from number one. The station-master, on the other hand, was convinced that it \_\_\_ start from the local. We went upstairs and asked the traffic superintendent, and he told us that he \_\_\_ just seen it at number three platform, (starts, started; will, would; has, had; will, would; will, would; has, had) (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 17. I was thinking that if any stranger \_\_\_ in here now, he \_\_\_ take us for man and wife,

(come, came; will, would) (*Shaw*) 18. He knew that he \_\_\_ been to college, (has, had) (*Warren*)

### Exercise 2. Use the appropriate form of the verb.

1. I am just passing through Chicago... and I thought you \_\_\_ tell me a little about the city from an investment point of view. (may) (*Dreiser*) 2. He said he \_\_\_ be obliged to run on to Pittsburg for thirty six hours but he \_\_\_ back on the third day. (may, to be) (*Dreiser*) 3. It had not yet occurred to her that she \_\_\_ get money for the locket and ear-rings which she \_\_\_ with her. (may, to carry) (*Eliot*) 4. I thought you \_\_\_ better sense, (to have) (*Dreiser*) 5. Sir Wilfrid knew, from the frequency with which she used her handkerchief, that the tears \_\_\_ down her cheeks, (to run) (*Marryat*) 6. She [Dinah] hesitated no longer, but opening her own door gently, went out and tapped at Hetty's. "I knew you \_\_\_ not in bed, my dear," she said, (to be) (*Eliot*) 7. We came to this part of the country in the hope that the bracing air... \_\_\_ a good effect upon him. (to have) (*Conan Doyle*) 8. The door opened suddenly, and a young fellow came in, with the air of one who \_\_\_ the master, (to be) (*Conan Doyle*) 9. She clung to the belief that he \_\_\_ so fond of her that he \_\_\_ never \_\_\_ happy without her; and she still hugged her secret that a great gentleman \_\_\_ her. (to be, to be, to love) (*Eliot*) 10. At ten o'clock he telephoned again, saying that he \_\_\_ his mind, (to change) (*Dreiser*) 11. Mr. Jackson departed upstairs on his errand, and immediately returned with a message that Mr. Fogg \_\_\_ Mr. Pickwick in five minutes, (to see) (*Dickens*) 12. It chanced... that Mr. Bennett received a letter from a fellow-student in Prague, who said he. \_\_\_ glad to have seen Professor Pusbury then, (to be) (*Conan Doyle*) 13. I thought I \_\_\_ well, being tired, (to sleep) (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 14. We asked if there \_\_\_ anything further that we \_\_\_ do for him. (to be, can) (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 15. I hailed them and asked if they \_\_\_ tell me the way to WQllingford Lock; and I explained that I \_\_\_ for it for the last two hours, (can, to look) (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 16. I invited them all to come and spend a week with me, and my cousin said her' mother \_\_\_ pleased to see them, (to be) (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 17. His correspondent announced that he \_\_\_ unexpectedly \_\_\_ to London, (to summon — passive) (*Collins*) 18. He says he \_\_\_ free tomorrow (to be).

### Exercise 3. Comment on the Sequence of Tenses and translate into Russian.

1. He was informed that both his father and mother were out, but that Miss Dinny had come up that morning from Condaford. (*Galsworthy*) 2. "I see what I see," Matilda said. "I see that this is how a leading citizen elects to spend his afternoons, sitting on a rock and—." (*VParren*) 3. And for an instant, Isaak didn't know whether he was really asking her, the mother that last question over and over or whether he was just asking it over and over inside his head. (*Warren*) 4. If only I could sleep, thought Hunter. Then in the morning I might know what to do. (*Murdoch*) 5. He spoke as one who does not propose to say any more. (*Snow*) 6. Celia Hornby asserted that it was a good thing they had got out of the house. (*Warren*) 7. Then she knew what she must do. (*Murdoch*) 8. Penelope stretched herself luxuriously, with the poised expression of one who has said her last word for the evening. (*Snow*)

### Exercise 4. Translate into English.

1. Он был уверен, что они работают вместе. 2. Он думал, что его товарищи работают с утра. 3. Он думал, что его товарищи работают, и не хотел им мешать. 4. Он знал, что они никогда не работали прежде. 5. Он полагал, что они будут работать вместе. 6. Она знала, что они обычно встают в 8 часов. 7. Она не знала, что они ее ждут. 8. Она не знала, что он уже купил словарь. 9. Она знала, что мальчик интересуется историей. 10. Она сказала, что этот профессор читает лекции по истории. 11. Он сказал, что профессор читает лекцию. 12. Мне сказали, что лекция начнется в 5 часов. 13. Я не знала, что вы тоже любите музыку. 14. Я думала, что они знают друг ^руга с детства. 15. Она сказала, что идет дождь и что нам лучше сидеть дома. 16. Она сказала, что думает, что завтра будет хорошая погода. 17. Вчера я написала статью, которую буду читать в конце месяца на заседании кафедр. 18. Школьникам сказали, что вода состоит из двух газов. 19. Я думала, что

моя сестра их хорошо знает. 20. Я думала, что она их давно знает. 2]. Мне сказали, что вы читаете эту книгу уже больше месяца; пора вам вернуть ее в библиотеку. 22. На днях Елена получила письмо, которое ее очень расстроило, но о котором, я уверена, она никому не сказала.

## INDIRECT SPEECH

### Exercise 1. Use the verb to say or to tell.

1. "You ought to be grateful," he \_\_\_ her in his light cocksure conceited manner. (*Greene*) 2. He \_\_\_ I must talk with your friend. (*Marryat*) 3. "Look at me, Gretta," he \_\_\_ her, patting her cheek with his hand. (*CcUdxuell*) 4. I \_\_\_ I would write to him to-morrow. (*Marryat*) 5. They met some people soon after they had got inside, who \_\_\_ they had been there [in the maze] for three quarters of an hour, and had had about enough of it. Harris \_\_\_ them they could follow him, if they liked... They \_\_\_ it was very kind of him, and fell behind, and followed. (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 6. Harris kept on turning to the right, but it seemed a long way, and his cousin \_\_\_ he supposed it was a very big maze. "Oh, one of the largest in Europe," \_\_\_ Harris. (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 7. Harris \_\_\_ he thought it was a very fine maze. (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 8. The man \_\_\_ he would go and consult his master. (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 9. Fox \_\_\_ me that you were here! (*Wilson*) 10. She \_\_\_ she would — us all about it the next time we met.

### Exercise 2. Translate into English.

1. Она часто говорила, что хотела бы увидеть Черное море. 2. Она сказала, что очень занята и давно не была в театре. 3. Она мне не сказала, что говорила с вами. 4. Она всегда говорила, что хорошо их знает. 5. Она никому не сказала, что уезжает. 6. Она часто говорила, что знакома с ними. 7. Он сказал, что ему надо позвать товарища. 8. Профессор сказал, что в лаборатории было сделано много опытов. 9. Он говорил, что каждый день ходит в Публичную библиотеку. 10. Он мне говорил, что интересуется геологией. 11. Сказала вам Ольга, что она приняла ваше предложение? 12. Она говорила, что не может понять, почему они переменили решение. 13. Она говорила, что книга ей нравится. 14. Она сказала, что любит исторические романы. 15. Она говорила, что примет участие в работе. 16. Мы сказали, что хотим пойти в оперу. 17. Она говорила, что Нина хорошо пишет стихи. 18. Мы сказали, что вернемся через час. 19. Мы им сказали, что не будем их ждать. 20. Она говорила, что любит балет.

### Exercise 3. Convert into indirect speech.

1...the General said: "I want to consult you, Lionel. It's about my boy, Hubert." (*Galsworthy*) 2. The old man said, "I had to go in the cave, son." (*Warren*) 3. "My father is a preacher," Isaak said, "so I have read my Bible, I remember about the miracle of the loaves and fishes." (*Warren*) 4. "Hans," said the Miller, "I will give you my wheel-barrow." (*Wilde*) 5. "Well!" cried Pinch, "you are the strangest young man, Martin, I ever knew in my life." (*Dickens*) 6. "Very well, then," said my friend's wife, rising, "all I have to say is, that I shall take the children and go to a hotel until these cheeses are eaten. I decline to live any longer in the same house with them." (*Jerome K. Jerome*) 7. "Maurice," she said, "I've just telephoned to the doctor." (*Bennett*) 8. "I can go to England at the beginning of June, doctor, but not before," I said. "You must go before. It is absolutely necessary," said the doctor. "You must go at once." (*Marryat*) 9. "I will ring when I want you," she said to the maid. (*Bennett*) 10. "Boy," the lieutenant said, "if you aren't careful you'll be ordered off this mountain." (*Warren*)

### Exercise 4. Translate into English.

1. Она заявила, что не хочет идти с нами. 2. Она нас уверяла, что не говорила с Ниной. 3. Она отрицала, что говорила с Ниной. 4. Она напомнила мне, что я обещала позвонить Елене. 5. Она признала, что ошиблась. 6. Он нам сообщил, что достал билеты.



### Exercise 5. Convert into indirect speech.

1. "Davis, Davis," he called, "what's the time? My watch has stopped." (*Greene*) 2. "Jebb," he said, "have you been in many caves? Are you a caver?" (*Warren*) 3. "When will Mr. Dodson be back, Sir?" inquired Mr. Pickwick. (*Dickens*) 4. "And have you anything else you want to explain to me, Denry?" said Mr. Maybold. "Nothing, Sir." (*Hardy*) 5. "What," said Dinny, when they were seated before an omelette Bulgarienne, "do you know about Professor Hallorsen, Uncle Adrian?" (*Galsworthy*) 6. At last she said: "Well, Uncle Adrian, will you try and think of any way of strafing that man for the scurvy way he's treated Hubert?" (*Galsworthy*) 7. The first question on Marianne's side was, "How long has this been known to you, Elinor? Has he written to you?" "I have known it these four months." (*Austen*) 8. "Who is there?" he [Arthur] whispered. "It's me, Sir," answered a venerable voice. "Mrs. Newitt, the housekeeper. Is Mrs. Forrest ill?" "Mrs. Newitt," he said, "where is your master?" (*Bennett*) 9. "Who's that fellow?" said Lord Saxended... (*Galsworthy*) 10. "What are you doing humped that way on the ground? Do you think that is ladylike?" Mrs. Bingham said to her daughter. (*Warren*) 11. "Is there anything else on your mind, Erik?" Haviland asked. (*Wilson*) 12. "Tom," she [Maggie] said timidly when they were out of doors, "how much money did you give for your rabbits?" (*Eliot*) 13. Arrived at Shropshire House Sir Lawrence said: "Can we see the Marquess Pommert?" "I rather think he's having his lesson, Sir Lawrence." (*Galsworthy*)

### Exercise 6. Translate into English.

1. Мы его спросили, где он купил словарь. 2. Он меня спросил, читала ли я Теккерея в оригинале или в переводе. 3. Она меня спросила, где я живу. 4. Я спросила сестру, почему она не хочет идти со мной в театр. 5. Я спросила, часто ли она ходит в филармонию. 6. Он спросил меня, видела ли я когда-нибудь его сестру. 7. Он спросил, где я работаю. 8. Она спросила, почему я отклонила это предложение. 9. Она спросила, когда приходила Нина. 10. Он спросил, люблю ли я драму.

### Exercise 7. Convert into indirect speech.

1. "Get up, Jo-Lea," Mrs. Bingham said. (*Warren*) 2. "Daddy — oh, Daddy," the girl said, "oh, let me stay." (*Warren*) 3. "Martha!" he called in a loud, commanding voice that echoed up and down the corridor. "Martha, come back here!" (*Caldwell*) 4. "Gretta, please say something," he begged. "I've got to know if you are all right." (*Caldwell*) 5. "Both of you come with me," Conder said, "and have a drink at the Fitzroy." 6. "Now, Miss Dunbar," said Holmes, "I beg you to tell us exactly what occurred that evening." (*Conan Doyle*) 7. "Now you go and get me my hammer. Will," he would shout. "And don't you go, Maria." (*Jerome K., - Jeromey*) 8. "Come here, Martha!" he called, at the same time beckoning urgently. "What is it, Dr. Kenworthy?" she. asked in her shy, breathless manner. "Let's have some coffee, Martha." (*Caldwell*) 9. She. went to the window and looked out. "Do come and look, Arthur," she said. (*Bennett*) 10. "And now, mamma," said Sylviane, "let us' hear this wonderful news." (*Bennett*) 11. "Come back," said the warning voice of Mrs. Hewitt, "don't let him see you." Arthur withdrew his head. (*Bennett*) 12. "The lake is lovely," said Arthur. "Suppose we go for a sail," she [Sylviane] replied, taking his hand. (*Bennett*) 13. "What can I do?" he said, gruffly. "They wouldn't listen to me." "Try," said Jean. "Some men are always listened to." (*Galsworthy*) 14. He turned to her with a rough gesture. "Don't worry, Savina!" (*Wilson*) 15. "Lilly, Lilly," he said. "Don't go away!" (*Wilson*) 16. "Play one," he said to Monty softly, "play one of your brother's songs." (*Warren*) 17. "Then, dearest, look at me," said Stephen (to Maggie] in deepest, tenderest tones of entreaty. "Don't go away from me yet. Give me a moment's happiness — make me feel you've forgiven me." (*Eliot*) 18. "Do me a last favour, Betteredge," says Mr. Franklin, "get me away to the train as soon as you can!" (*Collins*) 19. "Now, Mr. Betteredge," he went on, "suppose we drop speculation, and get to business." (*Collins*)

### Exercise 8. Translate into English.

1. Он ей сказал, чтобы она не запирала дверь. 2. Мы ей сказали, чтобы она не звонила Ольге, 3. Мы ему сказали, чтобы он нас не ждал. 4. Доктор сказал им, чтобы они не будили больного. 5. Секретарь сказал, чтобы они не отправляли письма. 6. Мой приятель предложил, чтобы мы пошли в Русский музей. 7. Она предложила нам провести день за городом. 8. Доктор посоветовал мне поехать на юг. 9. Она предложила перевести для нас статью. 10. Она предложила, чтобы мы перевели статью. 11. Мы ему сказали, чтобы он пришел к пяти часам.

### Exercise 9. Convert into indirect speech.

1. "O Dick!" she exclaimed, "I am so glad you are came!" (*Hardy*) 2. "Sylviane! forgive me!" Arthur exclaimed. (*Bennett*) 3. "It's lovely here," Kay Rimmer said. "What a lot of books you have." (*Greene*) 4. "Oh, how can you be cruel like that!" she cried. (*Warren*) 5. "O, please forgive me, Tom; my heart will break," said Maggie. (*Eliot*) 6. "How nice to see a new face," the woman in black velvet said. (*Greene*) 7. "O, there is Tom!" exclaimed Lucy, clapping her hands. (*Eliot*) 8. "Oh," she said again at sight of the only picture on the walls, "how lovely. Who's that?" (*Greene*)

### Exercise 10. Translate into English.

1. Он сказал с горечью, что они забыли свои обещания. 2. Она с возмущением сказала, что никак (*never*) не ожидала такого ответа. 3. Она с грустью сказала, что не может принять участия в экскурсии, так как у нее больна сестра. 4. Она радостно вскричала, что нашла книгу, которую искала несколько месяцев. 5. Она с удивлением спросила, почему ей не сообщили эту новость раньше.

### Exercise П. Convert into indirect speech.

1. Swindon: Who arrested this man? Sergeant: I did, sir. I found him in the minister's house, sitting at tea, with the lady with his coat off, quite at home. If he isn't married to her, he ought to be. (*Shaw*) 2. "I beg your pardon, Sir," said Mr. Pickwick [to the young man], "and I am very sorry to disturb the other gentlemen, too, but I come on very particular business." (*Dickens*) 3. "Good-bye, Lilian," he said to his wife, pleasantly, kindly. "I'll be coming out to attend some of these court proceedings." To his sister he said: "Good-bye, Anna. Don't let the others get too down-hearted." (*Dreiser*) 4. "You wouldn't," he said, "like to leave a message, Miss, or write a note?" "Thank you, no." He stood a moment, looking at her as if debating whether she was armed. "Miss Tasburgh?" he said. "Tasborough," answered Jean. "Lord Saxenden knows me," and raised her eyes. (*Galsworthy*) 5. "Monsieur," she asked, "do you speak French?" "Perfectly." "Then can you tell me where they take the tickets?" The young man shook his head. "No," said he, "I am a foreigner." The girl sighed. "But what is the matter, ma'moiselle?" (*Galsworthy*) 6. "There is no good in my going to see little Hans as long as the snow lasts," the Miller used to say to his wife, "for when people are in trouble they should be left alone, and not be bothered by visitors. That at least is my idea about friendship, and I am sure I am right. So I shall wait till the spring comes, and then I shall pay him a visit, and he will be able to give me a large basket of primroses, and that will make him so happy." "You are certainly very thoughtful about others," answered the wife. (*Wilde*) 7. "Have you mended the hole in the roof yet, little Hans?" cried the Miller in a cheery voice. "It is quite mended," answered little Hans. "Oh!" said the Miller, "there is no work so delightful as the work one does for others." "It is certainly a great privilege to hear you talk," answered little Hans, "... But I am afraid I shall never have such beautiful ideas as you have." (*Wilde*) 8. "Dear little Hans," said the Miller, "would you mind carrying this sack of flour for me to market?" "Oh, I am so sorry", said Hans, "but I am really very busy to-day. I have got all my creepers to nail up, and all my flowers to water, and all my grass to roll." (*Wilde*) 9. "Who is there?" cries the Doctor. "Little Hans, Doctor." "What do you want, little Hans?" "The Miller's son has fallen from a ladder, and has hurt himself, and the Miller wants you to come at once." (*Wilde*) 10. She [Caro] said, her eyes wild, but with no tears in them. "I don't know how I shall bear being

alone. I don't know how I am to bear it." (*Snow*) 11. "I'm coming to Drover all in good time," Bennett said. "There'll be petition to sign. Do you expect us to attack the prison?" (*Greene*) 12. Drouet was on the corner waiting, in good spirits. "Hello, Carrie," he said... "Got here safe, did you? Well, we'll take a car." (*Dreiser*) 13. "Minnie! What's the matter? Here, wake up," said Hanson, disturbed, and shaking her by the shoulder. "Wha-what's the matter?" said Minnie drowsily. "Wake up," he said, "and turn over. You're talking in your sleep." (*Dreiser*) 14. Mrs. Volterra shook hands with Erik. "Hello," she said, "I'm very glad to know you at last." (*Wilson*) 15. Dinny took a cigarette, and, with a long puff, said: "You saw great — Uncle Cuffs, didn't you, Uncle Adrian?" (*Galsworthy*) 16. She said quickly, trying to divert him: "I saw the Queen just now. Going into the cinema. Why does she wear hats like that?" (*Greene*)

## Table of contents

### Part I. ACCIDENCE ... 2

**THE NOUN 4**

**THE USE OF ARTICLES 6**

**THE ADJECTIVE 23**

**THE PRONOUN 25**

**WORDS DENOTING STATE 27**

**THE VERB 27**

TENSES IN THE ACTIVE VOICE 28

THE PASSIVE VOICE 46

MODAL VERBS 50

THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD 60

**THE NON-FINITE FORMS OF THE VERBS (VERBALS) 74**

THE PARTICIPLE 74

THE GERUND 82

THE INFINITIVE 91

**THE ADVERB 106**

**MODAL WORDS 107**

**THE INTERJECTION 107**

**THE PREPOSITION 107**

**THE CONJUNCTION 108**

**THE PARTICLE 109**

**GRAMMATICAL HOMONYMS 109**

### Part II. SYNTAX 111

**THE SIMPLE SENTENCE 111**

**WORD ORDER 122**

**THE COMPOUND AND THE COMPLEX SENTENCE 126**

**SEQUENCE OF TENSES 134**

**INDIRECT SPEECH 136**